

GOVERNMENT OF INDIA  
DEPARTMENT OF ARCHAEOLOGY  
CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY

---

Acc.No.

~~CLASS~~

19775

CALL No. 439-315

Val



بسم

METHOD GASPEY-OTTO-SAUER.

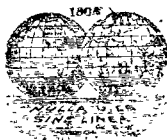
# DUTCH CONVERSATION-GRAMMAR

*Alphabet  
(With a Key).*  
BY

T. G. G. VALETTE,

TEACHER AT THE GYMNASIUM "WILLEM III.", BATAVIA (JAVA).

THIRD EDITION.



1117  
23.6.49  
839-3105 / Val

LONDON.

DAVID NUTT (A. G. Berry), 212 Shaftesbury Avenue, W. C.

DULAU & CO., 37 Soho Square, W.

SAMPSON LOW, MARSTON & CO., 100 Southwark Street, S. E.

NEW YORK: BRENTANO'S, Fifth Avenue and 27th Street.

DYRSSEN & PFEIFFER (CHRISTERN'S), 16 West 33rd Street.

THE INTERNATIONAL NEWS COMPANY, 83 and 85 Duane Street

G. E. STECHERT & CO., 151-155 West 25th Street.

E. STEIGER & CO., 25 Park Place.

BOSTON: RITTER & FLEBBE, formerly C. A. KOEHLER & CO.,  
149a Tremont Street.

THE SCHOENHOF BOOK CO., 128 Tremont Street.

HEIDELBERG.

JULIUS GROOS.

1913.



The Gaspey-Otto-Sauer Method has become my sole property by right of purchase. These books are continually revised. All rights, especially those of adaptation and translation into any language, are reserved. Imitations and fraudulent impressions are forbidden by law. Suitable communications always thankfully received.

Heidelberg.

Julius Groos.

CENTRAL AMERICAN LIBRARY

LIB. OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA

Acc No. 191775.....

Date 29.5.53.....

Call No. 439.315/Vol.....

## Preface.

When the publisher of the well-known Grammars Gaspey - Otto - Sauer requested me to write a Dutch Grammar for Englishmen, I rejoiced at this request. It is evidently a proof that the English are beginning to perceive that the Dutch language is indispensable to the study of the Teutonic languages, that it is a link in the chain which unites Germany with England, a language that we ought to discover, if it happened to have been lost, as a German philologist once put it. I therefore think the demand for a Dutch Grammar a proof that the truth is acknowledged that Dutch literature contains many beautiful products which many a one would only be too glad to read and to appreciate, though we grant that they do not come up to the immortal works of Shakespeare or Goethe.

The book has been arranged with this end in view. And anyone who masters the essentials of it will be able to read and understand Dutch authors.<sup>1</sup>

But also those who study Dutch for commercial purposes, either in speaking or writing, will use this book with success. The spoken language which is neglected in most grammars has had its proper importance assigned to it, by examples and dialogues.

The whole work is divided into four books. In connection with what is said above I have treated of the pronunciation more fully than is done in similar

<sup>1</sup> A Collection of Dutch Prose and Poetry will soon be published.

works. The second book treats of the Parts of Speech. The student must first learn the rules, then do the exercises, and finally try to translate the Reading-lesson at the head of each lesson into English.

Exercises to be translated into English are purposely omitted, my only object being to teach Dutch; whoever should want to translate into English, should translate all the Reading-lessons.

The third book treats of the Use of the Parts of Speech. Especially in this part the student must master the examples well before translating the exercises.

The fourth book deals with derivation; this part will prove to be useful to every body, and is indispensable to the student.

In the Key, any one, learning without a master, will be able to see whether his translations are right. In order to be able to do this a dictionary will prove an excellent assistant, in spite of the Vocabulary at the end of the work. Though I do not know of any dictionary especially written for Englishmen, yet I can recommend the student an excellent and at the same time cheap dictionary, viz.: **Picard's Pocket Dictionary of the English-Dutch and Dutch-English languages** (Gouda, G. B. van Goor Zonen), the seventh edition of which, edited by J. H. van der Voort, will render inestimable assistance. This seventh edition may justly bear the name of a Conversational Dictionary, as it contains many expressions which I looked for in vain in much larger dictionaries.

In preparing this Grammar I have made use of the following works:

English Grammar for Dutch Schools by C. van Tiel,  
*Handleiding bij het Onderwijs in het Engelsch, door  
Stoffel (III),*

Sweet, Handbook of Phonetics.

*Roorda, De Klankleer en hare practische toepassing, Ossijn — J. Te Winkel, Nederlandsche Spraakkunst, van Helten, Kleine Nederlandsche Spraakkunst.*

*Kern, Handleiding bij het Onderwijs der Nederlandsche Taal.*

The commercial letters are taken from:

***Servaas de Bruin, Engelsch Koopmans-brievenboek and Nederlandsch Koopmans-brievenboek*** (*Gouda, G. B. van Goor Zonen*),

two books, that are indispensable to every merchant who wants to get a thorough knowledge of commercial correspondence.

The Author wishes to express his obligations to Professor J. WRIGHT, M. A., Oxford, and to his friend J. H. VAN DER VOORT Esq., Teacher at the R. H. B. School and the Gymnasium Gouda, for their co-operation in the revision of the whole work.

May this book prove a trustworthy guide and so answer its purpose, and may it make my native tongue known to a wide circle of students in England!

Gouda.

T. G. G. Valette.

## Preface to the 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition.

The principal difference between the present edition and its predecessors is that a phonetic transcription has been added after the Dutch words of the first and second books and after those of the vocabulary.<sup>1</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> For an ampler use of a dictionary I highly recommend besides the one mentioned above: K. Ten Bruggencate — L. Van Der Wal, I. Engelsch-Nederlandsch. II. Nederlandsch-Engelsch (Groningen. Wolters).

symbols adopted in this book are in accordance with those used by the «Association phonétique internationale» in its «Exposé des Principes». With the help of these symbols I have tried to facilitate the study to acquire a good pronunciation of the Dutch language. Necessary additions and corrections have been made. while in the Appendix some hints are given on the writing of letters. In conclusion my kindest thanks to Miss Mounier, teacher of modern languages at The Hague, who has assisted me in correcting this new edition.

The Hague.

**T. G. G. Valette.**

# Contents.

## First Part.

### First Book. — Pronunciation and Orthography.

	Page
A. List of phonetic symbols . . . . .	3
B. Dutch Sounds, and how they are represented in writing . . . . .	4
I. Vowels . . . . .	4
II. Mixed vowels . . . . .	6
III. Diphthongs . . . . .	7
IV. Lengthened diphthongs . . . . .	8
V. Consonants . . . . .	8
C. The letters of the alphabet and their phonetic values in Dutch . . . . .	13
D. Dutch accentuation . . . . .	21
E. Capital Initials . . . . .	25
F. Marks . . . . .	25
G. Punctuation . . . . .	28
H. Syllabification . . . . .	29

### Second Book. — Parts of Speech.

Lesson 1. <i>Hooge ouderdom</i> . . . . .	31
The Article . . . . .	32
Prepositions . . . . .	33
2. <i>De slimme herbergier</i> . . . . .	34
The Verb. Conjugation . . . . .	35
3. <i>De krekel en de mier</i> . . . . .	37
The Verb. Conjugation . . . . .	38
4. <i>De gierigaard (vrek)</i> . . . . .	39
The Verb. Conjugation . . . . .	40
5. <i>Vriendelijk aanbod</i> . . . . .	41
Auxiliary Verbs. <b>Zijn</b> or <b>wezen</b> . . . . .	42
Remarks on the Dutch construction . . . . .	44
6. <i>Onverschilligheid van een geleerde</i> . . . . .	45
Auxiliary Verbs. <b>Hebben</b> . . . . .	46
7. <i>Gestrafte gulzigheid</i> . . . . .	47
Auxiliary Verbs. <b>Zullen, worden</b> . . . . .	48
8. <i>De bedrogen bedrieger</i> . . . . .	51
The Verb. Conjugation of weak verbs . . . . .	52
9. <i>In een medicijnkist verdronken</i> . . . . .	55
The Noun. On the Gender . . . . .	56

		Page.
Lesson 10.	<i>Tantalus</i> . . . . .	60
	The Noun. Declension . . . . .	61
„ 11.	<i>De twist</i> . . . . .	65
	The Noun. Additional Remarks on the Plural	67
	Declension of Proper Nouns and foreign words	70
„ 12.	<i>De bediende en zijn meester</i> . . . . .	72
	The Adjective. Declension . . . . .	73
„ 13.	<i>Lodewijk de Veertiende en Puget</i> . . . . .	76
	The Adjective. Degrees of Comparison . . . . .	77
„ 14.	<i>De twaalf maanden van het jaar</i> . . . . .	80
	The Verb. Impersonal verbs . . . . .	81
„ 15.	<i>De eik</i> . . . . .	84
	The Verb. Passive Voice . . . . .	86
	Reflexive Verbs . . . . .	87
„ 16.	<i>Genève</i> . . . . .	88
	Numerals. I. Cardinal Numbers . . . . .	90
	II. Ordinal Numbers . . . . .	92
	III. Multiplicatives . . . . .	93
	IV. Variative Numerals . . . . .	93
	V. Numbers of repetition . . . . .	93
	VI. Fractional Numbers . . . . .	93
	VII. Indefinite Numbers . . . . .	94
„ 17.	<i>Gestrafte onbeschaamdheid</i> . . . . .	95
	Pronouns. I. Personal Pronouns . . . . .	97
	II. Possessive Pronouns . . . . .	98
	III. Interrogative Pronouns . . . . .	99
„ 18.	<i>Proza of poëzie</i> . . . . .	101
	Pronouns. IV. Demonstrative Pronouns . . . . .	102
	V. Correlative Pronouns . . . . .	104
	VI. Relative Pronouns . . . . .	104
	VII. Indefinite Pronouns . . . . .	105
„ 19.	<i>Een Brief</i> . . . . .	108
	Verbs. Irregular Verbs . . . . .	109
	Observations on the Use of Auxiliaries . . . . .	112
„ 20.	<i>Trek van zelfverloochening</i> . . . . .	116
	Verbs. Strong Verbs . . . . .	117
„ 21.	<i>De leeuw en de muis</i> . . . . .	123
	Verbs. Alphabetical list of the strong and the irregular Verbs . . . . .	125
„ 22.	<i>Fabritius en Pyrrhus</i> . . . . .	131
	Verbs. Separable and Insep. Compound Verbs	132
„ 23.	<i>Fabritius en Pyrrhus.</i> (Continued) . . . . .	138
	Adverbs . . . . .	139
„ 24.	<i>Fabritius en Pyrrhus.</i> (Continued) . . . . .	143
	Prepositions . . . . .	144
„ 25.	<i>Fabritius en Pyrrhus.</i> (End) . . . . .	148
	The Conjunctions . . . . .	149
	The Interjections . . . . .	152

## Second Part.

Page

## Third Book. — Use of the Parts of Speech.

Lesson 26.	<i>De veroveraar en de zeeroover</i> . . . . .	157
	The Article. I. Use of the Article . . . . .	157
	II. Repetition and Place of the Article . . . . .	163
27.	<i>Gode raad van Esopus</i> . . . . .	166
	Cases. I. The Genitive and the use of the preposition <i>van</i> . . . . .	167
	II. The Dative and the Accusative and the use of the Prepositions <i>aan</i> and <i>voor</i> . . . . .	170
28.	<i>Kosbloudigheid</i> . . . . .	173
	The Adjective. I. Use of the Adjective . . . . .	174
	II. Place of the Adjective . . . . .	176
	III. The Government of Adjectives . . . . .	177
29.	<i>Peter de Groote op de werf der Oost-Indische Compagnie</i> . . . . .	180
	Pronouns. I. Use of the Personal and Reflexive Pronouns . . . . .	181
	II. Use of the Possessive Pronouns . . . . .	184
30.	<i>Peter de Groote enz. (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	186
	Pronouns. III. The Demonstrative Pronouns . . . . .	187
	IV. Relative Pronouns . . . . .	187
	V. Interrogative Pronouns . . . . .	188
	VI. Indefinite Pronouns . . . . .	189
31.	<i>Peter de Groote enz. (Slot)</i> . . . . .	194
	Verbs. I. Concord . . . . .	195
	II. Transitive and Intransitive Verbs . . . . .	195
	III. Impersonal Verbs . . . . .	196
	IV. Reflexive Verbs . . . . .	196
	Use of the Passive Voice . . . . .	198
32.	<i>Van Amsterdam naar Batavia</i> . . . . .	202
	I. Use of the Auxiliaries. <i>Hebben, zijn</i> . . . . .	203
	II. The Defective Verbs . . . . .	205
33.	<i>Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	212
	Use of the Infinitive Mood . . . . .	213
	I. The Inf. used as a Subst. or an Adj. . . . .	213
	II. Use of the Inf. without <i>te</i> . . . . .	214
	III. Use of the Inf. with <i>te</i> . . . . .	215
	IV. Use of the Inf. with <i>om te</i> . . . . .	217
	V. The Infinitive in English . . . . .	218
	Participles . . . . .	219
34.	<i>Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	225
	Use of the Tenses . . . . .	226
	Use of the Subjunctive Mood . . . . .	227
	The Government of Verbs . . . . .	229
	I. Verbs followed by a Nominative . . . . .	229
	II. Verbs which in Dutch govern the Genitive . . . . .	230
	III. Verbs which in Dutch govern the Dative . . . . .	230
	IV. Verbs with the Accusative . . . . .	233



		Page.
Lesson 35.	<i>Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Vervolg)</i> . . .	236
	Use of some Adverbs . . . . .	237
	Use of some Conjunctions . . . . .	243
» 36.	<i>Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Slot)</i> . . . . .	248
	Use of Prepositions . . . . .	249
	I. On the Use of some Dutch Prepositions	249
» 37.	<i>Waarom wordt men klerk?</i> . . . . .	258
	Use of Prepositions. (Continued) . . . . .	259
	I. On the Use of some Dutch Prepositions.	
	(End) . . . . .	259
	II. On the Use of some English Prepositions	264
» 38.	<i>Waarom wordt men klerk? (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	269
	Use of Prepositions. (Continued) . . . . .	270
	III. List of Verbs and Adjectives used with	
	Prepositions . . . . .	270
	IV. List of English Words with Prepositions	276
» 39.	<i>Waarom wordt men klerk? (Slot)</i> . . . . .	280
	Construction. I. The Principal or Simple Sen-	
	tence . . . . .	281
	II. The Compound Sentence . . . . .	283

#### Fourth Book. — Word-Formation.

» 40.	<i>De Poppenkast</i> . . . . .	289
	Formation of Nouns . . . . .	289
	I. By means of vowel-change . . . . .	289
	II. Formation of Nouns by means of Suffixes	291
» 41.	<i>De Poppenkast. (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	297
	Formation of Nouns. (End) . . . . .	297
	III. Composition . . . . .	297
	IV. Other parts of speech used substantively	302
» 42.	<i>De Poppenkast. (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	305
	Formation of Adjectives . . . . .	305
	I. By means of vowel-change . . . . .	305
	II. Derivation by means of suffixes . . . . .	306
	III. Composition . . . . .	307
	IV. Substantives and Part. used adjectively	311
	V. Derivations from geographical names . . . . .	311
» 43.	<i>De Poppenkast. (Vervolg)</i> . . . . .	315
	Formation of Verbs . . . . .	316
	I. By means of Prefixes . . . . .	318
	II. By means of Suffixes . . . . .	319
	III. Composition . . . . .	320
» 44.	<i>De Poppenkast. (Slot)</i> . . . . .	323
	Formation of Numerals . . . . .	323
	Formation of Adverbs . . . . .	324
	Formation of Prepositions . . . . .	326
	Formation of Conjunctions . . . . .	327
» 45.	<i>Bilderdijsk</i> . . . . .	332
	Grammatical Figures . . . . .	332

## Appendix.

	Page.
I. Homonyms . . . . .	340
II. Idiomatical Expressions . . . . .	344
III. Proverbs and Proverbial Sayings . . . . .	346
IV. Titles in Dutch letters . . . . .	349
<b>Vocabulary:</b> 1. Dutch-English . . . . .	351
2. English-Dutch . . . . .	370
<b>General Index</b> . . . . .	393

-----

## Abbreviations used in this Grammar.

* (1)	before a verb	{ = strong = irregular	Inf. = Infinitive m. = masculine n. = neuter p. = person P. or Pl. = Plural Part. = Participle pron. = pronounce s. = see S. = Singular.
Adj.	= Adjective(s)		
Conj.	= Conjunction		
cf.	= compare		
D.	= Dutch		
Dat.	= Dative		
enz.	= <i>en zoo voort</i> = &c.		
f.	= feminine		
G.	= German		



## Errata.

Page 22,	line 13	from bottom:	[an'viziut], read: [an'viziut]
23.	9	top:	dooreizen, read: dooreizen.
24.	12	bottom:	[bri'tanjə or bri'ten ], read. [bri- 'tanjə or bri'taniə].
92.	5 and 6	from bottom:	What day of the month is it to-day?, read: What day of the month is to-day?
106.	11	from bottom:	Of whom have you heard it? read: From whom etc.
179.	15	top:	Of the old ruin . . . read: Of the old ruins . . .
192.	18	bottom:	. . . to his benefactor, read: to its benefactor.
251,	17	top:	to be turned forty, read: to be turned of forty.
253,	2	bottom:	the nearest relation, read: the nearest relations.
262,	11	bottom:	from fear of punishment, read: for fear of punishment.
311,	3	bottom:	Arabiër, read: Arabier.
336,	11	top:	Informations, read: Information.



# First Part.



# First Book.

## Pronunciation and Orthography.

---

### A. List of phonetic symbols.

<i>a</i>	(French) art.
<i>ɑ</i>	resembling <b>u</b> in <b>but</b> .
<i>b</i>	<b>been</b> , <b>baby</b> .
<i>d</i>	<b>dull</b> , <b>earldom</b> .
<i>e</i>	(French) <b>fermé</b> .
<i>ɛ</i>	first element of the sound in <b>chair</b> .
<i>ɔ</i>	<b>better</b> , <b>conspire</b> , <b>bacon</b> .
<i>f</i>	<b>false</b> , <b>coffee</b> .
<i>g</i>	(German) <b>Wagen</b> (as it is pronounced in North Germany).
<i>h</i>	<b>home</b> , <b>unhappy</b> .
<i>i</i>	<b>been</b>
<i>ɪ</i>	<b>prince</b> , <b>pretty</b> .
<i>j</i>	<b>yes</b> , <b>young</b> .
<i>k</i>	<b>kill</b> , <b>bacon</b> (never aspirated)
<i>l</i>	<b>lonely</b> .
<i>m</i>	<b>me</b> , <b>swimming</b> .
<i>n</i>	<b>no</b> , <b>honey</b> .
<i>y</i>	<b>sing</b> .
<i>o</i>	<b>open</b> , <b>over</b> .
<i>ɔ</i>	<b>not</b> , <b>body</b> .
<i>ʁ</i>	(French) <b>homme</b> .
<i>r</i>	vowel-sound in <b>air</b> rounded.
<i>p</i>	<b>pain</b> , <b>happy</b> (never aspirated).
<i>ʀ</i>	<b>rose</b> , <b>hurry</b> (always trilled).
<i>s</i>	<b>soon</b> , <b>grass</b>
<i>ʃ</i>	<b>shiver</b> , <b>bush</b>
<i>ʒ</i>	(French) <b>je</b> , <b>Jean</b> .
<i>t</i>	<b>tower</b> , <b>witty</b> (never aspirated).
<i>u</i>	<b>hood</b> , <b>blue</b> .
<i>v</i>	<b>veal</b> .

<i>v</i>	win (with unrounded lips).
<i>x</i>	(Scotch) lo <b>ch</b> .
<i>y</i>	(French) pur.
<i>z</i>	zest, zink.
<i>œ</i>	but, mother.
<i>ø</i>	(French) feu.

## B. Dutch Sounds, and how they are represented in writing.

### I. Vowels. *Klinkers* [*kliŋkərs*].

#### Long and short vowels.

§ 1. In the Dutch language there are no long vowels. Dutch Grammars distinguish: *volkomen* [*vɔl-komən*] *klinkers* (complete vowels), *onvolkomen* [*ʊn-vɔl-komən*] *klinkers* (incomplete vowels), and *gerekte* [*gɛrɛktə*] *klinkers* (lengthened vowels), but even the latter are shorter than the English long vowels.

To facilitate the study of the sounds, we adopt the general terms «long» and «short», although «long» is less correct.

#### The *a*-vowels.

§ 2. Long *a* [*a*], a very open sound is very much like the sound in the French word **art** (not pronounced like the **a** in **father**) and is spelled:

*a*: *ja* [*ja*] yes, *vragen* [*vra'gən*] to ask;

*aa*: *daad* [*dat*] deed, *daar* [*dar*] there.

§ 3. Short *a* [*ʌ*] is pronounced like the **a** in **father**, but is much shorter than this sound. It is always spelled:

*a*: *dag* [*dar*] day, *hart* [*hart*] heart.

#### The *o*-vowels.

§ 4. Long *o* [*o*] like the **o** in German **Bote**. It is written:

*o*: *open* [*opən*] open, *over* [*ovər*] over;

*oo*: *loopen* [*lopən*] to run, *vrolijk* [*vrolɛk*] merry;

**oa** and **ow** in English loan-words: *toast* [tost],  
*bowl* [bol].

§ 5. Short open **o** [ɔ] as in **not** (see Sweet, Handbook of Phonetics, page 140) is spelled:

**o**: *kop* [kɔp] head, *pot* [pɔt] pot.

§ 6. Short closed **o** [ʊ] does not occur in English; it is almost like French **o** in **homme**. It is likewise spelled:

**o**: *om* [ʊm] round, *Londen* [ʊndən] London.

**Note.** It is very difficult for a foreigner to distinguish these two *o*-sounds, especially as the pronunciation is not connected with the spelling of the words in which they are found. According to the „*Woordenboek der Nederlandsche taal*“ of *De Vries* and *Te Winkel* (see O) [ɔ] is pronounced in more than  $\frac{2}{3}$  of all words with *o*; [ʊ] especially before guttural sounds (*g*, *ch*, *k*) and before *l*, *p*, *s*, *t*; [ʊ] is found in general before **f**, always before *m*, *n*; before *r* both sounds occur.

### The *u*-vowels.

§ 7. Long **u** [u:] like German **u** in **du**, only before **r**. It is written:

**oe**: *boer* [bur] farmer, *loeren* [luren] to spy;

**ou** in French loan-words: *retour* [rə'tur].

§ 8. Short **u** [u] like **oo** in **book**. It is spelled:

**oe**: *boek* [buk] book, *zoeken* [zukan] to seek;

**ou** in French loan-words: *ouverture* [urə'tyʁə].

### The *i*-vowels.

§ 9. Long **i** [i:] like the **e** in **he**, i. e. like the first part of that sound, the second element being dropped. It is spelled in the following ways:

**i**: *ivoor* [ivɔr] ivory, *Mina* [mina] Wilhelmina;

**ie** before **r**: *mier* [mɪr] ant. *dier* [dɪr] animal;  
shortened before other consonants and finally:  
*dief* [dɪf] thief, *die* [di] those.

**y** in Greek loan-words: *lyrisch* [lɪrɪs] lyrical.

§ 10. Short **i** [ɪ] like the **i** in **thin**, but a little lower and with retraction of the tongue. It is written:

**i**: *in* [ɪn] in, *kind* [kɪnt] child;

**y** in loan-words: *Egypte* [ɛɪptə] Egypt.



### The *û*-vowels.<sup>1</sup>

§ 11. Long *û* [*y:*] like the *ü* in German *für* is spelled:

*u*: *duren* [*dyrən*] to last, *uren* [*yrən*] hours;

*uu*: *uur* [*yr*] hour, *vuur* [*ryr*] fire.

§ 12. Short *û* [*y*] like German *ü* in *Hütte* is written:

*u*: *ruzie* [*ryzi*] row;

*uu* in French loan-words: *recrut* [*rɛkrɥt*] recruit,  
*minuut* [*minyɥt*] minute.

§ 13. Short *û* [*ɪ*] has nearly the same sound as *u* in *but*, when it is not emphasized. We get this sound by rounding our lips in pronouncing the vowel-sound in *air* (lucht) It is always written:

*u*: *put* [*pɪt*] well, *hullen* [*hɪlən*] to wrap.

### The *e*-vowels.

§ 14. Long *e* [*e*] sounds nearly like the *a* in *pale* and exactly like the French *e fermé* in *parler* or *parlé*. It is spelled in the following ways:

*e*: *geren* [*gerən*] to give, *leven* [*lɛrən*] to live or life;

*ee*: *beet* [*bɛt*] bite, *schreef* [*ʃrɛf*] wrote;

*é* in French loan words: *carré* [*kare*];

*ai* in English loan-words: *pair* [*pɛr*], *fair* [*fɛr*].

§ 15. Short *e* [*ɛ*] like the first element of the sound in *chair* is always written:

*e*: *met* [*mɛt*] with, *weg* [*vɛr*] way.

### The *ö*-vowel.

§ 16. This sound does not occur in English. It has the sound of German *ö* in *schön* or that of French *eu* in *feu*. The *ö*-sound [*o*] is always long, and lengthened before *r*; it is spelled:

*eu*: *deugd* [*dɔ:t*] virtue, *deur* [*dɔ:r*] door.

## II. Mixed vowels.

§ 17. To the mixed vowels, generally called in Dutch *onduidelijke* [*ɒndœydələkə*] *klínkers* (in-distinct vowels), belong *e*, *u* and *i*, *ij*. The sound of these vowels approaches that of the *a* in *drama*, or in

<sup>1</sup> These vowels do not occur in English.

**butte**(*o*), **o** in **abbot**, although these vowels are less articulated than the Dutch.

§ 18. The indistinct *e*-sound [ɐ] is spelled:  
a) *e* in the prefixes *be-*, *ge-*, *ver-*, and in the unaccented suffixes *-e*, *-el*, *-em*, *-en*, *-er*, *-es*: *bemind* [bəmɪnt] loved, *gedaan* [ɡɔda'n] done, *verloren* [vərloːrən] lost; *einde* [ɛɪndə] end, *handel* [hændəl] commerce, *adem* [ˈɑdɐm] breath, *geven* [ɡerən] to give, *vader* [ˈvɑdər] father, *dreumes* [ˈdrʉmɐs] mite; b) *u* in the unaccented final syllable *-um* (in geographical names only): *Dokkum* [dɔkəm], *Gorkum* [ɡɔrkəm].

§ 19. The indistinct *i*-sound [ɐ] approaches somewhat that of the *a*-sound in **an** when unstressed. It is spelled:

*i* before **g**, **k**: *honig* [hɔnɪx] honey, *perzik* [pɛrɛzɪk] peach;

*ij* in the unaccented possessive pronouns *mijn* [mɪn] my, *zijn* [zɪn] his, and in the suffix *-lijk* (*-lijks*, *-lijksch*): *vrolijk* [vrɔlək] merry, *dagelijks* [ˈdɑɡələks] daily.

### III. Diphthongs. *Tweeklanken* [tveklɒŋkən].

§ 20. There are in Dutch three diphthongs: **ou**, **ei** and **ui**.

§ 21. The first diphthong [ɔu] consists of an accented short **o** with an unaccented **u**; it sounds nearly like **ou** in **house** and is written:

**ou**: *rouw* [rɔu] mourning, *vrouw* [vrɔu] woman;

**au**: *rauw* [rɔu] raw, *gauw* [ɡɔu] quick.

§ 22. The second diphthong [ɛi] consists of *ē* and an unaccented *ī*; it has nearly the sound of French **ay** in **payer**, but does not represent exactly the sound of **i** in **mine**, neither that of the German **ei** in **mein** (= **main**), the first element of the Dutch sound being an *ē*. The spellings used for this diphthong are:

**ei**: *leiden* [ləɪdɛn] to lead, *keizer* [kɛɪzər] emperor;

**ij**: *lijden* [ləɪdɛn] to suffer, *schijf* [sɛɪf] slice or disk.

«Since the 17th century **ij** and **ei** represent the same diphthong in refined conversation». (Cosijn — Te Winkel, I, p. 15.)

§ 23. The first element of the third diphthong [ɔy] is like French **eu** before **i**, f. i. in **deuil** mourning, the

second element is a short *ü*-sound. It occurs neither in English nor in German, and is spelled:

*ui*: *lui* [lœy] lazy, *duif* [dœyf] pigeon;

*uy* obsolete, in proper names only: *de Ruyter* [də rœyter], *Huydecoper* [hœydekoper].

#### IV. Lengthened diphthongs. *Gerekte* [gɔrɛktə] *tweeklanken*.

§ 24. Besides the above described vowel-combinations, there are also used in Dutch: *aai*, *ooi*, *oei*, *eeu*, *ieu*, which are generally called «lengthened diphthongs» and might be described as: *āi*, *ōi*, *ūi*, *ēu*, *īu*.

Prof. *van Helten*, however, does not admit this explanation, and asserts that the so-called «lengthened diphthongs» are simply long vowels, combined with a *j*-sound (*j* = *y* in year) or a *w*-sound (Dutch *w*, see § 29).

We should accordingly represent:

*aai* by [ai]: *draai* [drai] turn, *frasier* [fraiɛr] nicer;

*ooi* by [oi]: *mooi* [moi] beautiful, *dooien* [doien] to thaw;

*oei* by [ui]: *boei* [bu'i] buoy, *boeien* [bu-iən] buoys;

*eeu* by [eu]: *leeuw* [le'u] lion, *sneeuwen* [sne-uən] to snow;

*ieu* by [iu]: *nieuw* [ni'u] new, *kieuwen* [ki-uən] gills.

#### V. Consonants. *Medeklinkers* [medɛklyŋkɛrs].

##### 1. Lip-consonants.

§ 25. *p* [p] is the same sound as *p* in *pea*, *lip*, but, being pronounced with less energy than in English, no glide after *p* is heard. It is spelled:

*p*: *paard* [part] horse, *raap* [rap] turnip;

*pp* after short vowels: *scheppen* [sɛppən] to create, *kloppen* [klɔppən] to knock;

*b* finally: *web* [rɛp] web, *heb* [hɛp] have.

§ 26. *b* [b] = *b* in *be*, *rib* has only two spellings:

*b*: *brood* [brɔt] bread, *buiten* [bœyɛtən] outside;

*bb* after short vowels: *ebbe* [ɛbɔ] ebb, *hebben* [hɛbən] to have.

§ 27. *f* [*f*] = **f** in **fee**, **if**. It is spelled:

*f*: *fraai* [*frai*] nice, *feest* [*fest*] feast;

*ff* after short vowels: *stoffen* [*stʌfən*] to dust, *koffer* [*kʌfər*] trunk;

*v* only in *veertig* [*fertɪx*] forty and *vijftig* [*fɛiftɪx*] fifty, when not preceded by another numeral;

*ph* in proper names and Greek words: *Joseph* [*josef*], *philosophie* [*filosofi*] philosophy.

§ 28. *v* [*r*] the same sound as **f** but **flat** (see

§ 29, Note). It is spelled:

*v*: *van* [*van*] of, *vader* [*radər*] father.

§ 29. *w* [*c*] is not the English **w**-sound, as it is formed with lips unrounded. Leave the tongue in its neutral position. It is spelled:

*w*: *wel* [*vel*] well, *water* [*vatər*] water;

*u* in the combination *qu* (= *kw*), in foreign words only: *quadraat* [*kva'drat*], *quartet* [*krər'tet*].

**Note.** In uttering Dutch *w* the lower lip is pressed less strongly against the upper-teeth as in uttering Dutch *v*. The slight difference between these two sounds, produced by a stronger stress of the voice with the *v*-sound, occasions a change of these sounds, especially before *r*; instead of *wreed* [*vret*] cruel, *wreken* [*vrekən*] to revenge, often *vreed* [*vret*], *vreken* [*vrekən*] is heard.

§ 30. *m* [*m*] = English **m** in **me**, **am**. It is written:

*m*: *maar* [*ma:r*] but, *moeder* [*mu'dər*] mother;

*mm* after short vowels: *zwemmen* [*zɛmən*] to swim, *stemmen* [*stɛmən*] voices.

## 2. Teeth-consonants.

§ 31. *t* [*t*] like English **t** in **table** (without the glide after it), **flat**. It is represented by:

*t*: *tot* [*tɒt*] till, *ton* [*tʌn*] tun;

*tt* after short vowels: *zitten* [*zɪtən*] to sit, *wetten* [*vɛtən*] laws;

*d* finally: *land* [*lant*] country, *ik wed* [*ɪk vɛt*] I bet.

§ 32. *d* [*d*] like English **d** in **door**. It is written:

*d*: *door* [*dɔr*] by, *deur* [*dɔr*] door;

*dd* after short vowels: *wedden* [*vɛdɛn*] to bet, *redder* [*radər*] rescuer.

§ 33. **s** [*s*] always sharp sound like **s** in **sister**. It is spelled in the following ways:

**s**: *soort* [*sort*] sort, *laars* [*lars*] boot;

**ss** after short vowels: *wassen* [*vasən*] to grow, *dassen* [*dasən*] badgers;

**sch**: a) finally: *menssch* [*mɛns*] man, b) before inflectional endings: *menschēn* [*mɛnsən*] men, *wenschēn* [*vɛnsən*] to wish, *gewenscht* [*gɛrɛnst*] wished;

**ssch** after short vowels: *visschen* [*vɪsən*] (Pl. of *visch*) fishes, *flesschen* [*flesən*] (Pl. of *flesch*) bottles;

**z** in: *te zamen* [*tə samən*], but *samen* together; *zestig* [*zɛstɪk*] sixty and *zeventig* [*zɛvɛntɪk*] seventy, also if preceded by other numerals, e. g. *een en zestig* [*ɛnɛnzɛstɪk*] sixty-one, *twee en zeventig* [*tɛwɛnzɛvɛntɪk*] seventy-two &c.

**c** in Latin loan-words before **e**, **i**, **ij**, **y**: *cent* [*sɛnt*] cent, *cipier* [*sɪpɪr*] jailer, *cijfer* [*sɛɪfɪr*] cipher, *cylinder* [*sɪlɪndɪr*] cylinder;

**t** in Latin loan-words before **i(e)**: *natie* [*nasi*] nation, *politie* [*pɒlɪsi*] police; in these words **ts** is often pronounced instead of **s**.

In the combination **sch** [*ʃ*] at the beginning of a Dutch word **s** represents the same sound and **ch** that of the Dutch **g** (see below *g*); **sch** has in Dutch words never the German sound, but is generally heard in the Westphalian dialect: *school* [*ʃrɔl*] school, *schoon* [*ʃrɔn*] beautiful.

For **ks** as in *heks* [*hɛks*] witch, we have also the spelling **x** in foreign words: *index* [*ɪndɛks*], *Alexander* [*alɛksandɪr*].

§ 34. **z** [*z*] like English **z** in **zeal**, or **s** in **lose**. It is spelled **z** initial and after long vowels only:

*zo* [*zɔ*] so, *zee* [*zɛ*] sea, *lezen* [*lezən*] to read, *reizen* [*reɪzən*] to travel. For Exceptions s. § 33.

§ 35. **sch** [*ʃ*] like German **sch** in **schön** or French **ch** in **charmant**, **ch**ose occurs in foreign words only. It is spelled:

**sch**: *schako* [*ʃako*] shako, *schacheren* [*ʃaɪərən*] to barter;

**sj**: *sjaal* [*ʃal*] shawl, *sjerp* [*ʃɛrp*] sash;

**ch**: *chef* [*ʃɛf*] chief, *charmant* [*ʃarmant*] charming.

§ 36. **j, g** [ɟ] like French **j** in **jour** is not a Dutch sound. it occurs only in words originally French or English:

**j**: *journaal* [ɟurnal] journal, *jockey* [ɟoki];

**g**: *sergeant* [serɟant], *gentleman* [ɟentelmən];

**ge** in the ending **age**: *verijage* [veriaɟə] courtship.

§ 37. **l** [l] like English **l** in **late**. The English **l** however has a dull sound owing to the shape of the tongue, which is raised at the back. Dutch **l** is pronounced more in front of the mouth. It is spelled:

**l**: *laat* [lat] late, *val* [val] fall;

**ll** after short vowels: *vallen* [valən] to fall, *vallei* [valɛi] valley.

§ 38. **n** [n] is identical with English **n**. It is spelled:

**n**: *nooit* [noit] never, *man* [man] man;

**nn** after short vowels: *pennen* [penən] pens, *spannen* [spanən] to stretch.

§ 39. **r** [r] is always trilled, it is formed by putting the point of the tongue loosely against the upper gums and causing it to vibrate by means of the outgoing breath. It is represented by:

**r**: *rad* [rat] wheel, *kar* [kar] cart;

**rr** after short vowels: *karren* [karrən] carts, *sarren* [sarən] to irritate;

**rh, rrrh** in Greek loan-words: *rhythmus* [ritmos] rhythm, *catarrhe* [katar] catarrh.

**Note.** Avoid lengthening an accented short vowel preceding final **r** as in *hard* [hart] hard, not [hart].

### 3. Palatal consonants.

§ 40. **k** [k] is formed as in English without the glide and has the following spellings:

**k**: *kaal* [kal] bald, *dik* [dik] thick;

**kk** after short vowels: *dekken* [dekən] to cover, *zakken* [zakən] pockets. In foreign words:

**c** before **a, o, u, au, ou**: *casino* [kasino] casino, *code* [kodɛks] code, *curiositeit* [kyriositeit] curiosity, *cautie* [kəusi] bail, *coupon* [kʊprən] coupon;

**cc** after short vowels: *accusatief* [ʌkysatɪf] accusative, *accoord* [akort] agreement;

**ch**: *christen* [kristən] christian, *Christiaan* [kristian] Christian;

**q(u)** (see **w**): *quadraat* [kʌdrat], *quartet* [kʌrtet].

§ 41. **g** [g] (back-stop-voice) is the same sound but flat and voiced, nearly like English **g** in **go**, **beg**. This sound occurs but very seldom in Dutch and is always spelled:

**k** before **b**, **d**: *bakboord* [baɣbo:rt] larboard, *likdoorn* [lɪɣdo:rn] corn, *ik ben* [ɪɣ-ben] I am, *ik doe* [ɪɣ-du] I do.

§ 42. **ng** [ŋ] like English **ng** in **singer**. As in English it does not occur at the beginning of a word. It is represented by:

**ng**: *lang* [laŋ] long, *zingen* [zɪŋən] to sing.

§ 43. **nk** [ŋk] like English **nk**. is written:

**nk**: *dank* [daŋk] thanks, *koninkje* [konɪŋkjə] little king, diminutive form of *koning* [konɪŋ] king.

§ 44. **j** [j] like English **y** in **year**. It has the following spellings:

**j** in Dutch words initially only: *ja* [ja] yes, *jas* [jas] coat; in foreign words also medially: *majoor* [major] major;

**i** medially and finally: *kraaien* [kra-iən] crows, *kraai* [kra'i] crow;

**y** in foreign words: *loyaal* [lojal] loyal, *royaal* [rojal] royal;

in combinations, **lj** *biljet* [bɪljɛt] ticket, **gn** *lorgnet* [lɔ:ŋjɛt] eyeglass, **ll** *quadrilleeren* [kʌdri:ljerən] to play a game of quadrille.

§ 45. **g** [ɣ] is articulated between the back of the tongue and the end of the soft palate. Nearly the same sound is heard in the Scotch word **loch** and the German **ach**. There are two spellings for this sound:

**g** a) finally: *dag* [daɣ] day, *zag* [zaɣ] saw;

b) before **t**, **s** and final **d** (= **t**): *hij zegt* [ɦɛi zɛɣt] he says, *des wegs* [dɛs vɛɣs] of the way, *deugd* [dɛuɣt] virtue;

c) in compound words before **f**, **h**, **k**, **p**, **s**, **t** and before **g** (= **ch**), **v** (= **f**), **s** (= **z**):

*daggeld* [daɣɛld] daily pay, *dagvaarden* [daɣvaɾdɔn] to summon, *voegzaam* [vuɣzɑm] decent;  
**ch**: *lach* [lar] laugh, *lachen* [laxɛn] to laugh, *slecht* [slɛxt] bad; also initially in foreign words, when **ch** does not represent a **k**-sound (see § 40): *chlor* [xlɔr] chlorine.

§ 46. **g** [g] same sound, flat and voiced, like German **g** in **Tag**. It is spelled:

**g** initially and before medial **d**: *gehoor* [gəhor] hearing, *gaan* [gan] to go, *deugden* [dɔgdɛn] virtues;

**gg** after short vowels: *leggen* [lɛgɛn] to lay, *liggen* [lɪgɛn] to lie.

For **sch** = *sg*, see § 33.

#### 4. Throat-consonant.

§ 47. This sound, the «glottal stop», is produced by closing and suddenly reopening the glottis on a passage of breath. The glottal stop, which is not used in English, unless it replaces a «dropped *h*», in Dutch regularly precedes every initial vowel, but generally is lost before the second and following parts of compounds. It may be represented by [ʔ]: *'alle* all, *'orer* on: but *overal* everywhere, *vereenigend* club, without glottal stop.

#### 5. The aspirate.

§ 48. This sound might be called a «voiceless vowel», but it resembles a consonant in its acoustic effect, and is generally considered as such. Dutch **h** is pronounced forcibly and immediately connected with the following vowel. The Dutch **h**-sound is never dropped. It is always written:

**h**: *hebben* [hɛbɛn] to have, *gehoor* [gəho:r] hearing.

--- ---

### C. The letters of the alphabet and their phonetic values in Dutch.

§ 49. The Dutch Alphabet consists of 26 letters:

<b>a</b> pronounced ā (italian a)	<b>c</b> pronounced say
<b>b</b> »       bay	<b>d</b> »       day



<b>e</b>	pronounced	ay	<b>p</b>	pronounced	pay
<b>f</b>		f	<b>q</b>		kū
<b>g</b>		chay (chinloch)	<b>r</b>		r (trilling sound)
<b>h</b>		hā (italian a)	<b>s</b>		s
<b>i</b>		ee	<b>t</b>		tay
<b>j</b>		vay	<b>u</b>		ū
<b>k</b>		kā (italian a)	<b>v</b>		vay
<b>l</b>		l	<b>w</b>		way
<b>m</b>		m	<b>x</b>		ex
<b>n</b>		n	<b>y</b>		ip-silon
<b>o</b>		ō	<b>z</b>		zet.

§ 50. The letters **q**, **x**, **y** (different from **ij** = **ii**) occur in foreign words only.

§ 51. In an open syllable<sup>1</sup>, if not unaccented, the vowel is pronounced long: in a closed syllable<sup>1</sup>, it is pronounced short: *lezen* [*le:zən*] to read, *les* [*lɛs*] lesson.

§ 52. Long vowels in closed syllables are always represented by two letters: *door* [*dōr*] by, *raam* [*ra:m*] window; compare: *dor* [*dɔr*] barren, *ram* [*ra:m*] ram.

§ 53. After short vowels the consonants are doubled, if the next syllable begins with a vowel: *stop* [*stɒp*] stopple, Pl. *stoppen* [*stɒpən*], *les* [*lɛs*], Pl. *lessen* [*lɛsən*].

§ 54. Consonants are not doubled:

in compounds: *kattul* [*kata:yl*] screech-owl, *bakoven* [*bagəvən*] oven;

before the endings *-waard*, *-achtig*: *lafwaard* [*lafə:rt*] coward, *schrakachtig* [*ʃrɪk'ɑ:təx*] timorous.

§ 55. **ch** is never doubled, the preceding vowel is nearly always a short one.

§ 56. **sch** is never doubled if a consonant precedes: *wenschen* [*wɛnsən*] to wish; preceded and followed by a vowel **s** only is doubled: *visch* [*vɪs*] fish, Pl. *visschen* [*vɪsən*]; *flesch* [*flɛs*] bottle, Pl. *flusschen* [*flɛsən*]; *lesschen* [*lɛsən*] to quench.

§ 57. Loan-words generally retain their original spelling; however some which are considered as Dutch words have the Dutch spelling.

<sup>1</sup> A syllable is 'open', when it terminates in a vowel; it is 'closed', when the last sound is a consonant. In Dutch syllabification, simple consonants between vowels are added to the second syllable, the former syllable thus remaining 'open'.

§ 58. **a**. — 1. Long **a** in open syllables: *ja* [ja] yes, *waren* [varən] were. 2. Short **a** in closed syllables: *wat* [rat] what.

§ 59. **aa**. — Long **a** in closed syllables only: *daad* [dat] deed. Exception: **aa** in open syllables in the diminutives of words ending in **a**: *s'la* [sla] salad — *slaatje* [slatʃə].

§ 60. **aii**. — Long **a** + **j** (= y in year): *draaien* [draiən] to turn.

§ 61. **au**. — 1. Diphthong **ou** in native Dutch words, in which **auw** is always written: also in naturalized loan-words: *ganx* [gəu] quick, *saus* [saus] sauce. 2. French pronunciation [o]: *saveeren* [sorərən] to save.

§ 62. **b**. — 1. = *b*, initially: *bier* [bir] beer. 2. = *p*, finally: *web* [cep] web.

§ 63. **bb**. — Always = *b*: *tobbe* [toba] tub.

§ 64. **c** (in foreign words only). — 1. = **s** (in sister) before **e**, **i**, **ij**, **y**: *cent* [sent] (fifth part of a penny), *cijfer* [sɪfər] cipher. 2. = **k** before the other vowels, before consonants and finally: *securiteit* [sɛkyri-teit] security, *tractaat* [traktat] treaty.

§ 65. **cc** (in foreign words only). — 1. = **ks** before **e**, **i**, **ij**, **y**: *accent* [aksent], *accijn* [akseins] excise. 2. = **k** before the other vowels and before consonants: *accoord* [akort] accordance, *acclamatie* [aklamasi] acclamation.

§ 66. **ch**. — 1. = **ch** in Scotch **loch**, in all Dutch words: *wachten* [ra:ten] to wait, *licht* [lut] light. 2. = **sch** in German **schön** or French **ch** in **charmant**; it occurs in foreign words only: *China* [ʃina], *chirurg* [ʃirru:] surgeon. 3. = **k** initial in some foreign words: *christen* [kristən], *chronologie* [kronologi]. 4. = **g** (Dutch *g*) in the combinations **sch** initially: *schrijven* [sɛrɪvən] to write. 5. Mute in the medial or final combination **sch**: *visch* [vis], *menschen* [mensən].

§ 67. **d**. — 1. = **d**, initially and medially: *daar* [dar] there, *raden* [radən] to advise. 2. = **t**, finally and before **s**: *paard* [part] horse, *gids* [gits] guide, *veel* [vel] much, *raadsel* [ratsəl] riddle.

§ 68. **dd**. — Invariably = **d**: *redden* [redən] to save.

§ 69. **e**. — 1. Long **e**-sound in accented open syllables. a) in strong verbs and their derivatives (except

in **heeten** [*hetən*] to be called): *geven* [*gevən*] to give, *zetel* [*zetəl*] (from *zitten*) seat; b) in all words in which *ē* corresponds to *ě*, **a**, **i**, **ie**, in Dutch or German: *mede* [*medə*] (*met*) with, *edel* [*edəl*] (*adel*) noble, *weder* [*vedər*] (G. Wetter) weather, *bete* [*betə*] (G. Biss) bit; c) in most loan-words belonging to the Romance languages: *leveren* [*lɛvərən*] (Fr. livrer) to deliver; d) in the plural of the ending **-heid**: *draasheid* [*drasheit*] folly, *draasheden* [*drasheadən*]. 2. Short **e**-sound in closed syllables: *met* [*met*], *Mechelen* [*mexələn*] Mechlin. 3. Mixed vowel [*ɔ*] in the unaccented articles, pronouns, prefixes and suffixes: *de*, *den*, *hem*, *ze*, *be-*, *ge-*, *-e*, *-el*, *-em*, *-en*, *-er*, *-es*.

§ 70. **ee**. — Always long **e**-sound: 1. in closed syllables: *deel* [*dɛl*] part; 2. in open syllables, a) finally in monosyllables: *zee* [*zɛ*] sea, *thee* [*tɛ*] tea; b) in words corresponding to English **o**, **oa**, or German **ei**, **ai**: *steen* [*stɛnən*] stones, *wezen* [*vɛzən*] (G. Waisen) orphans; c) in words with dropped **d**: *veeren* [*verən*] (= *vederen*) feathers; d) in the suffixes: *-eelen*, *-eeren*, *eesche*, *-eeze*: *kasteelen* [*kastelən*] castles, *Chineezen* [*ʃine-zən*] Chinese.

§ 71. **ei** Diphthong [*ɛi*]. — a) In Dutch words having other forms with *ē*, **ag** or **eg**: *klein* [*klein*] (*kleen*) small, *meid* [*meit*] (*maagd*) maid, *peil* [*peil*] (*pegel*) water-mark; b) in French loan-words: *palais* [*paleis*] (Fr. palais), *feit* [*feit*] (Fr. fait); except all words having **i** in French, see *ij*.

§ 72. **eu**. — Long closed *ö*-sound in open syllables: *deugen* [*doɣən*] to be fit for; also in French loan-words: *redacteur* [*rɛdaktør*] editor.

§ 73. **eeu**. — Long **e**-sound + (Dutch) **w**, which is always written: *leeuw* [*le'u*] lion.

§ 74. **f**, **ff**. — English *f*, *ff*: *fraai* [*trai*] nice, *blaffen* [*blafən*] to bark.

§ 75. **g**. — 1. Voiced back-palatal **g**, a) initially: *gaan* [*gan*] to go; b) before *d* + vowel: *jeugdig* [*jɔgdɪx*] youthful; c) in the initial combination **sch**, see **ch**. 2. Voiceless back-palatal **g** = **ch**, a) finally: *dag* [*dax*] day; b) before **s**, **t** and final **d** (= *t*): *des oogs* [*dɛs ɔxs*] of the eye, *hij zegt* [*hɛi zɛxt*] he says, *deugd* [*dɔxt*] virtue; c) in compounds before **f**, **h**, **k**, **p**, **s**, **t**, **g** (= **ch**), **v** (= *f*), **z** (= *s*): *wegkapen* [*vɛxkɛpən*] to purloin, *dag-*

*vaarden* [darfardən] to summon; d) before the ending *-lijk*: *heuglijk* [hœclək] joyful.

§ 76. **g(e)**. — French *j*-sound in *jour*: in words with the foreign ending *-age*, and French or English loan-words: *vrijage* [vrɛiaʒə] courtship, *horloge* [hərloʒə] watch, *gentleman* [ʒəntelmən].

§ 77. **gg**. — Flat and voiced *g*-sound: *liggen* [lɪɡən] to lie.

§ 78. **h**. — 1. = *h*, except in the combination *ch*, initial only: *hooren* [horən] to hear. 2. Mute, a) in the Dutch words: *thans* [tans] (= *te hande*) now, *althans* [altans] (= *al te hande*) at least, *thuis* [tœys] (= *te huis*) at home; b) in Greek loan-words: *rhythmus* [ritmʏs], *rhetorisch* [rɛtorɪʃ].

§ 79. **i**. — 1. Long *i*-sound, a) in accented open syllables, in loan-words and names only: *ivoor* [ivɔr] ivory, *Mina* [mina] Wilhelmina; b) in the ending *-isch*: *Russisch* [rʏsis] Russian; c) finally: *Juni* [jyni] June. 2. Short *i*-sound in closed syllables, also before *ch*: *zitten* [zɪtən] to sit, *lichaam* [lɪʃam] body. 3. Mixed vowel [ɪ] before *k*, *g*: *perzik* [pɛrʒək] peach, *levendig* [lɛvəndɪʃ] lively.

§ 80. **ie**. — 1. Long *i* before *r* only: *vier* [vɪr] four; shortened before other consonants and finally: *lief* [lif] dear, *die* [di] that. 2. Short *i* in loan-words: *fabriek* [fabrik] manufactory.

§ 81. **ië**. — Long *i* + *ə* with separate value, a) in some geographical names: *Italië* [italiə], *Azië* [aziə]; b) in the plural forms of all words ending in an unaccented vowel: *traliën* [tralim] (S. *tralie*) grates, *natiën* [nasim] (S. *natie*) nations.

§ 82. **ieë**. — Long *i* + *ə* in the plural forms of words ending in an accented vowel: *knieën* [knim] (S. *knie*) knees, *diaconieën* [diakonim] (S. *diaconie*) deaconries.

§ 83. **ieu** = *ī* + *u*, which is always written: *nieuw* [ni'u] new.

§ 84. **ij** (= *ii*). 1. = *ei*, a) in strong verbs and their derivatives (except *scheiden* [sxɛidən] to separate): *grijpen* [grɛipən] to catch; b) in all words having in English or French an *i*-sound: *rozijn* [roziin] — raisin, *magazijn* [magazein] — Fr. *magasin*; c) in the suffix *-ij*: *voogdij* [vogdei] guardianship. 2. Long *i*-sound in *bij*-

*zonder* [bzʌndər] (particular) only. 3. Mixed vowel [ə] in the unaccented pronouns *mijn* [mɪn], *zijn* [zɪn] and in the suffix *-lijk* (*-lijks*, *-lijksch*), *leelijk* [leɪk] ugly, *dagelijks* [dagɪləks] (Adverb), *dagelijksch* [dagɪləks] (Adj.).

§ 85. **j**. — 1. = **y** in **year** in Dutch words and naturalized loan-words: *jaar* [jar] year, *biljet* [biljet] ticket. 2. = French **j** in **jour** in French loan-words; *dejeuner* [deʒonərən] to breakfast

§ 86. **k**. — 1. = **k**: *raken* [rakən] to hit. 2. = **g** in **good** before **b**, **d**: *balkoord* [baghoort] larboard, *bikdoorn* [ligdoorn] corn.

§ 87. **kk**. — Invariably **k**: *wakken* [vəkən] to awake.

§ 88. **kw**. — Always **k** + Dutch **w**: *kwaad* [kvat] evil, *kwartaal* [kɛrtal] quarter.

§ 89. **l**. — Pronounced **l**: *laten* [latən] to let. If **l** is followed by another consonant in the same syllable, very often a scarcely audible *ə* is produced between **l** and the next consonant: *melk* [mɛl'k] milk.

§ 90. **ll**. — 1. Pronounced **l** in Dutch words: *spellen* [spɛlən] to spell. 2. Pronounced **lj** (**j** = **y** in **year**) in French loan-words: *brillant* [briljant] brilliant.

§ 91. **m** and **mm**. — Always = **m**: *man* [man] man, *lammeren* [lamərən] lambs.

§ 92. **n**. — 1. Always = **n**, initially and medially: *nooit* [noit] never, *gene* [genə] those. 2. Mute finally if preceded by an unaccented **e**: *ze verkopen zeven houten huizen* [zə vɛrkɔpə zɛvə hoʊtə hʊzɪz] they sell seven wooden houses. Such is the regular pronunciation of refined people in the greater part of the Netherlands. In the northern provinces (Groningue and Friesland) the Infinitive-ending **-en** is often pronounced with final **m**-sound whilst *ə* is dropped: *loopen* [lɔpm].

§ 93. **ng** and **nk**. — Like Engl. **ng** and **nk**: *zingen* [zɪŋən] to sing, *dank* [dɛŋk] thanks. In diminutives and derivatives **nk** proceeds from **ng**: *koning* [konɪŋ]: *koninkje* [konɪŋkjə], *koninklijk* [konɪŋklɪk].

§ 94. **nn**. — Always = **n**: *gewennen* [gɛvənən] to accustom.

§ 95. **o**. — 1. Long **o**-sound in open syllables, a) in all strong verbs (except in *loopen* [lopən] to run and *stooten* [stotən] to hurt): *komen* [komən] to come; b) in words having in English **ō**, **oa** or in German **u**,

**ü, ö:** *oven* [orən] — oven, *kolen* [kolən] — coals, *boter* [botər] — G. Butter, *oer* [orər] — G. über, *hopen* [hopən] — G. hoffen; c) in nearly all Romance loan-words: *kantoren* [kantorən] (S. *kantoor*) office. 2. Short **o**-sound [ɔ or ʊ] in closed syllables: *kop* [kɔp] head, *om* [ʊm] around.

§ 96. **oe.** — Short **u**-sound, except before **r** where it is a lengthened **u**-sound: *vroege* [vrue:] early, *boer* [bur] peasant.

§ 97. **oei.** — Long **u**-sound + **j**: *groeien* [gruēn] to grow.

§ 98. **oo.** — Always long **o**-sound, (1) in closed syllables: *groot* [grɔt] great; (2) in open syllables, a) in words having in English **ea** or in German **au**: *coren* [orən] (S. *oor*) ears, *koopen* [kopən] (G. *kaufen*) to buy; b) in words in which **d** is dropped: *oolijk* [olɔk] (= *odelijk*) sly; c) always finally: *stroo* [stro] straw; d) in the ending *-loos* (*-loose*): *verloos* [ferlɔs] infamous, *de eerlooze* [de erlɔ:z].

§ 99. **ooi.** — Long **o**-sound + **j**: *doeien* [doēn] to thaw.

§ 100. **ou.** — 1. Diphthong **ou** in real Dutch words: *vrouw* [vrɔu] woman. 2. French pronunciation (= **ü**) in loan-words: *douche* [duʃ] shower-bath.

§ 101. **p** and **pp.** — Always = **p**: *paard* [part] horse, *stappen* [st. pən] to step.

§ 102. **ph** (in loan-words only). — Invariably = **f**, it never occurs finally: *filosof* [filɔzɔf], *philosophie* [filɔzɔfi].

§ 103. **r** and **rr.** — Always trilled **r**: *deur* [dor] door, *sarren* [sarən] to tease.

§ 104. **s.** — Like **s** in **sister**: *soort* [so:rt] kind, *vos* [vɔs] fox. In real Dutch words **s** never occurs before **w** (see **z**) and very seldom before vowels.

§ 105. **sch.** — 1. = **sg.** initially: *scheef* [s.ʃef] wry. 2. = **s** in **sister**, medially, finally and before inflectional endings: *visch* [vɪs] fish, *eischen* [eɪsən] to claim, *geëischt* [gɛɪst]. 3. = German **sch** in **schön** or French **ch** in **chose**, in loan-words only: *schako* [ʃako], *schackeren* [ʃakərən] to barter.

**Note.** **sch** (= **s**) finally is always written, a) in words which have in German **sch**: *mensh* — Mensch, *cisch* — Fisch;

b) in all Adjectives with the **s**-sound: *trotsch* [trɔts] haughty, *schuinsch* [sxɔyns] oblique or slanting &c., excepted in:

<i>bits</i> [bits]	harsh	<i>flets</i> [flets]	faded	<i>paars</i> [pars]	purple
<i>dras</i> [dras]	marshy	<i>(ge)wis</i> [gæws]	certain	<i>ros</i> [rɔs]	red
<i>dicars</i> [dicars]	cross	<i>kras</i> [kras]	brisk	<i>spits</i> [sprɪts]	sharp.
		<i>los</i> [ləs]	loose		

§ 106. **ss.** — Always = **s** in **sister**: *wassen* [vasən] to grow.

§ 107. **ssch.** — Same sound (**ch** mute): *flesschen* [flesən] (S. *flesch*) bottles.

§ 108. **t.** — 1. = **t**: *tot* [tɔt] till. 2. = **s** (also = **ts**) in loan-words: *politie* [polisi] police.

§ 109. **tt.** — Invariably **t**: *wetten* [vɛtən] laws.

§ 110. (**u** never Engl. **u** in use). — 1. = **ū** (German **ü** in **für**) in open syllables: *uren* [yɾən] hours. 2. Mixed vowel [ə] in the ending **-um** in geographical names only: *Gorkum* [gɔrkəm].

§ 111. **ui.** — Diphthong (French **eu** in **deuil**): *huis* [hweys] house.

§ 112. **un.** — Long **ū**-sound in closed syllables only: *vuur* [vyɾ] fire.

§ 113. **v.** — 1. = voiced **f**, initially and medially only: *varen* [varən] to sail, *geven* [gerən] to give. 2. = **f** in *veertig* [fɛrtɔɾ] forty and *vijftig* [fɛiftɔɾ] fifty, but *een en veertig* [enənveɪtɔɾ], *twee en vijftig* [tweənveiftɔɾ] &c. are pronounced with voiced **f**.

§ 114. **w.** — Engl. **w** with unrounded lips: *waar* [var] true, *trouw* [trɔw] trust.

§ 115. **x** (in loan-words and proper names only). — Always **ks**: *index* [indeks] contents, *Alexander* [aleksandɔɾ].

§ 116. **y** (in loan-words and proper names only). — 1. = **i** in open syllables: *lyrisch* [liris], *Cyrus* [sirɪs]. 2. = **ɪ** in closed syllables: *syntaris* [sɪntaksɪs], *Egypte* [egɪptɔ].

§ 117. **z.** — 1. = **z** in **zeal**, before a vowel and before **w** in real Dutch words: *zo* [zɔ] so, *lezen* [lezən] to read, *zwijn* [zveɪn] swine. 2. = **s** in **sister**, in *zestig* [sɛstɔɾ] sixty and *zeventig* [serəntɔɾ] seventy, also when preceded by another numeral: *een en zestig* [enənsestɔɾ], *twee en zevenzig* [tweənseventɔɾ] &c. But *zes* [zɛs] six, *zeven* [zɛvən] seven, *zestien* [zɛstɪn], *zeventien*

[*zɛvəntin*], *zestal* [*zɛstal*] &c. are pronounced with *z* (= *z* in *zeal*).

## D. Dutch accentuation.

### I. Dutch words.

#### 1. General rule.

§ 118. In Dutch words, the radical syllable has the principal **accent** or **stress**, the remaining syllables have weaker stress, prefixes and suffixes with [*ə*] are altogether unaccented: *spel* [*ˈspɛl*] game, *spelen* [*ˈspɛlən*] to play, *speler* [*ˈspɛlər*], *speling* [*ˈspɛliŋ*], *bespeling* [*bəˈspɛliŋ*] &c.

Exceptions: 1. All feminine words on **-in**: *vriendin* [*vrindˈɪn*] friend, *leeuwin* [*leuˈvɪn*] lioness. 2. All Dutch words with foreign endings: *tooneel* [*toˈneɪ*] scene, *waardeeren* [*varˈdeərən*] to value, *zangeres* [*zəŋəˈrɛs*] singer, *tuinier* [*tœyˈniɪr*] gardener, *bakkerij* [*bakəˈrɛi*] bakehouse, *klokkenist* [*klɔkəˈnist*] chimer.

#### 2. Substantives.

§ 119. Particles in compound words take the principal stress: *ingang* [*ˈmɔŋ*] entrance, *onderwijs* [*ˈʊndərˌvɛis*] instruction.

§ 120. If such compound substantives take a suffix, the stress is generally thrown back, compare: *onrijp* [*ˈʊnrɪp*] unripe, *onrijpheid* [*ˈʊnrɪˌpɦeɪt*] unripeness, *roekeloos* [*ˈrøkɛləs*] rash, *roekeloosheid* [*rukəˈloʃɦeɪt*] rashness.

§ 121. The prefixes *be-*, *er-*, *ge-*, *her-*, *ont-*, *ver-* are always unaccented: *beloop* [*bəˈloɔp*] course, *verlies* [*vərˈlɪs*] loss.

§ 122. In compound words, the first part of which is a noun, an adjective or a verb, the radical syllable of the first component as a rule has the principal stress: *schoolboek* [*ˈsxɔlbuk*] schoolbook, *raadhuis* [*ˈrathœys*]; but *stadhuis* [*statˈhœys*] town-hall.

Exceptions. The **second** component has the stress in: a) Many geographical names: *Amsterdam* [*amstərˈdam*], *Rotterdam* [*rɔtərˈdam*], *'s-Gravenhage* [*sɣrəvənˈhagə*] The Hague. b) Names of holy-days: *Allerheiligen* [*alərˈ*



*heiligen*] All Saints' Day. *Paaschvandaag* [*pas'mandar*] Easter-Monday. c) Some titles and professional names: *burgemeester* [*birgə'mestar*] mayor, *groothertog* [*grøt'hertø*] grand duke, *scheepstimmerman* [*šæps'timərman*] ship-carpenter. d) False compounds like: *hogeschool* [*høgə'skool*] university, *hoogleraar* [*høg'lerar*] professor, *hoogepriester* [*høgə'pristər*] highpriest.

### 3. Adjectives.

§ 123. The prefix **on-** has the stress in adjectives without suffixes: *onrijp* [*'vrijp*], *onvuer* [*'vuer*]; but *ongelukkig* [*ʊngə'lykər*] unhappy, *onoverkomelijk* [*ʊnɔvər'koməlɪk*] insurmountable.

§ 124. Adjectives with the prefix **oor-** have the stress on the second syllable: *oorspronkelijk* [*ɔr'sprɔŋk-lyk*] originally.

§ 125. Suffixes as a rule cause the stress to be thrown backward: *vreesachtig* [*'vres'ɑchtɪg*] fearful, *naïef* [*na'latər*] negligent, *afgodisch* [*af'godis*] idolatrous, *opmerkelijk* [*ɔp'merkəlɪk*] remarkable, *opmerkzaam* [*ɔp'merkzɑm*] attentive.

**Note.** If a resemblance is expressed *-achtig* never has the stress: *diefachtig* [*'dɪfɑchtɪk*] thievish, *geelachtig* [*'gɛlɑchtɪk*] yellowish, *steunachtig* [*'stɛnɑchtɪk*] stony.

§ 126. The participles of separable compounds have the stress on the prefix, but if used as adjectives they have the stress on the root or the verb, cf. the following:

Participles.	Adjectives.
<i>aanhoudend</i> [ <i>'a:nhʊd.ənt</i> ] persevering	<i>aanhoudend</i> [ <i>ə:'hʊd.ənt</i> ] continual
<i>aanduidend</i> [ <i>'a:ndʊd.ənt</i> ] indicating	<i>aanduidend</i> [ <i>an'vʊd.ənt</i> ] demonstrative
<i>ingenomen</i> [ <i>'ɪŋ.ɡə.'nɔm.ən</i> ] taken	<i>ingenomen</i> [ <i>ɪŋ.ɡə.'nɔm.ən</i> ] taken
<i>innemend</i> [ <i>'ɪn.nɛm.ənt</i> ] taking	<i>innemend</i> [ <i>ɪn.'nɛm.ənt</i> ] charming
<i>oplopend</i> [ <i>'ɔp.lɔp.ənt</i> ] exulting	<i>oplopend</i> [ <i>ɔp.'lɔp.ənt</i> ] passionate
<i>oppassend</i> [ <i>'ɔp.ə'sɛnt</i> ] nursing	<i>oppassend</i> [ <i>ɔp'əs.ənt</i> ] well-behaved
<i>uitmuntend</i> [ <i>'uɪt.mʊnt.ənt</i> ] excelling	<i>uitmuntend</i> [ <i>uɪt'mʊnt.ənt</i> ] excellent
<i>uitnemend</i> [ <i>'uɪt.nɛm.ənt</i> ] taking out	<i>uitnemend</i> [ <i>uɪt'nɛm.ənt</i> ] exceeding.

#### 4. Verbs.

§ 127. The verbs with the prefixes *be-*, *ge-*, *ont-*, *ver-*, *er-*, *her-* have the stress on the verb: *bewegen* [bə'vegən] to move, *herinneren* [her'mərm] to remember.

§ 128. Verbs composed with adverbs or prepositions have the stress on the **verb**, if they are **inseparable** compounds; but on the **prefix**, if they are **separable** compounds (see Lesson 22): *doorreizen* [ˈdoreizən] to navel on, *doorreizen* [do'reizən] to travel all over.

#### 5. Particles.

§ 129. Compound particles as a rule have the stress on the second part: *bergop* [berz'ɔp] uphill, *hoewel* [hu'vel] though, *opdat* [ɔp'dat] that, *ringsom* [rɪps'ʊm] all round, *voortaan* [vor'tan] henceforth.

### II. Loan-words and Proper Names.

#### 1. Loan-words.

§ 130. Loan-words (except those which have become entirely naturalized) as a rule, retain their original accent.

§ 131. The suffixes *-abel*, *-age*, *-eel*, *-es*, *-is*, *-ist*, *-eur*, *-iek*, *-ier*, *-iet*, *-ent* are always accented: *formidabel* [fɔrmi'dabel], *bagage* [ba'gɑzɔ] luggage, *officier* [ɔfi'sir], *benedict* [ban'dit].

§ 132. Words with *-ie* have the stress on this ending or on the preceding syllable: *artillerie* [ɑrtilj'ri], *genie* [ʒə'ni], *harmonie* [harmo'ni], *phantasie* [fanta'si], *theorie* [teo'ri]; but: *academie* [ak'demo], *familie* [fami'li], *kolonie* [ko'loni], *telie* [te'li], *religie* [rɛ'ligi], *unie* [yni].

§ 133. Words in *-tie* have the stress on the syllable which precedes this ending: *notie* ['nɑsi], *revolutie* [re-ro'lysi], *politie* [po'lisi].

§ 134. Words in *-ief* as a rule have the primary accent: *nominatief* ['nominatɪf], *infinitief* ['ɪnfinitɪf], *adjectief* ['atjɛktɪf], *substantief* ['sɪpstantɪf].

§ 135. Words in *-or* have the primary accent in the singular, but not in the plural: *doktor* ['dɔktɔr] — *doktoren* [dɔk'tɔrən], *rektor* ['rɛktɔr] — *rectoren* [rɛk'tɔrən].

§ 136. Besides the above mentioned words the following differ from English accentuation:

abstract [ap'strakt]  
 accent [ak'sent]  
 adverb [ad'verp]  
 arabisch [a'rabis]  
 architect [arfi'tekt]  
 artikel [ar'tikəl]  
 avontuur [avɒn'tyr]  
 baluns [ba'lans]  
 banier [ba'nir]  
 buffet [bɜ'fɛt]  
 carnaval [karna'val]  
 catalogus [ka'talogys]  
 cognac [kɒn'jak]  
 collega [kɔ'lega]  
 college [kɔ'leʒə]  
 concert [kɒn'sɜrt]  
 concreet [kɒn'kret]  
 crediet [krə'dit]  
 debiet [də'bit]  
 dozijn [do'zeɪn]

essai [ɛ'se]  
 figuur [fi'gyr]  
 individu [ɪndi'vɪdʒ]  
 insect [ɪn'sekt]  
 instinct [ɪn'stɪŋkt]  
 klimaat [kli'mat]  
 kompas [kɒm'pas]  
 methode [me'tode]  
 notitie [no'tisi]  
 oceaan [ose'an]  
 poëet [po'et]  
 present [prə'zent]  
 project [pro'jekt]  
 protest [pro'test]  
 rebel [rə'bel]  
 siroop [si'rop]  
 traject [tra'jekt]  
 transport [trans'pɔrt]  
 triomf [tri'ʌmf] or  
 triumf [tri'ʌmf].

## 2. Proper names.

§ 137. Proper names generally follow the same rules regarding the accent: *Jakob* [ˈjakɒp], *Darwin* [ˈdɑːvɪn], *Darwinist* [ˈdɑːvɪnɪst], *Luther* [ˈlytər], *Lutheraan* [ˈlytəˈran].

§ 138. Some proper names deviate from English accentuation, viz.

*Athene* [a'tenə]  
*Benedictus* [benə'dɪktɪs]  
*Britanje* or *Britanië* [bri'tʌnjə  
 or bri'taniə]  
*Carolina* [karo'liːnə]  
*Celebes* [sə'leɪbəs]  
*Dorothea* [doro'teə]  
*Egypte* [e'ɪptə]  
*Emilia* [e'mɪliə]  
*Franciscus* [frən'sɪskɪs]  
*Gregorius* [gre'ɡoriʊs]  
*Hannover* [hə'novər]  
*Italië* [i'taliə]  
*Leuven* [ˈləvən]

*Margaretha* [marga'reta] or  
*Margriet* [mar'grit]  
*Maria* [ma'riə] or  
*Marie* [ma'ri]  
*Mohammed* [mo'hamet]  
*Niagara* [niə'ɡərə]  
*Normandië* [nɔr'mandiə]  
*Oranje* [o'rɑŋʒə]  
*Palestina* [paləs'tiːnə]  
*Parijs* [pa'reɪs]  
*Romein* [ro'meɪn]  
*Romeinsch* [ro'meɪns] (Adj.)  
*Turkije* [tʏr'keɪə]  
*Waterloo* [ˈcætləʊ].

## E. Capital Initials.

§ 139. The Dutch language uses capital initials in almost all cases in which they are used in English. The following observations however should be noticed.

§ 140. When the first word of a new sentence is represented by one letter only, the second has the initial.

's *Aronds is het koud* [*savnts is het kout*] in the evening it is cold.

'k *Weet niet wat hij zegt* [*ket nit vat hei zæ:xt*] I do not know what he says.

§ 141. When the article or a preposition is put between a christian- and the family-name, it is not written with a capital letter.

*Jan ten Brink* [*jan tənbrɪŋk*]. *Mathias de Vries* [*matias dəvris*].

§ 142. High titles as a rule are not written with capital initials, except on addresses:

*Onder de regering van Koning Willem* [*ʊndər də rəʒərɪŋ van kɒnɪŋ ɛldəm*] during the reign of King W. *Hij is bij den minister geweest* [*hei is bei dən minɪstər ɡərɪst*] he has waited upon the minister, but: *Aan den Minister van Koloniën te 's-Gravenhage* [*an dən minɪstər van kɔ'loniən tə ʒrəvənɦaʒə*] on letters addressed to the Colonial Secretary.

§ 143. The personal and possessive pronouns referring to the name of God have capital initials.

§ 144. The pronoun *ik* follows the same rules as all other words.

§ 145. In letters the pronouns of the second person are generally written with capital letters.

*Gisteren heb ik Uw brief ontvangen* [*gɪstərən heb-ik yu brɪf ʊtvɑŋən*]. *Ik heb U vroeger reeds geschreven, dat Gij mij steeds welkom zult zijn* [*ik heb-y vrʉgər rɛts ɡɔschrɛvən, dat xei mei stɛts vɛlkʊm zʉlt zɛɪn*]. I received your letter yesterday. I have written you already that you will always be welcome.

## F. Marks.

§ 146. The **Marks** which are used in Dutch are the following:

The hyphen = *het koppelteken* [*kɔpɔltɛkən*] (-).

The circumflex = *het samentrekkingssteeken* [*samən-trekɪŋstɛkən*] (').

The trema = *het deeltteeken* [*delttɛkən*] (").

The accent = *het klemtoonteeken* [*klemtontɛkən*] (' or ` or '').

The apostrophe = *het afkappingsteeken* [*afkapɪŋstɛkən*] (').

§ 147. **The hyphen** is used:

When the principal part of some compounds is written once only.

*Taal-, lees- en schrijfboeken* [*tal-, lɛs- en sɾɛɪfbukən*] grammars, reading- and copy-books.

*Stoom- en zeilboten* [*stom- en zɛilbotən*] steamers and sailing vessels.

For the sake of clearness.

*De verbindings-s* [*də vɛrbɪndɪŋs-s*] the connecting-s.

*Het achtervoegsel-ster* [*hɛt axtər vuɛsəl-stər*] the suffix-ster.

Between geographical names; both between two adjectives belonging together, and between an adjective and a noun.

*De Engelsch-Russische vloot* [*də ɛŋɡlɪs-rʌsɪʃə vlot*] the Anglo-Russian fleet.

*Zuid-Holland, Noord-Holland* [*zʏdɦolənt, nɔrɦolənt*] South-Holland, North-Holland.

*De Beneden-Rijn* [*də bəndənɾɛɪn*] the lower Rhine.

**Note.** The adjectives derived from such compound nouns are written without a hyphen:

*Noordhollandsch, Zuidhollandsch, Benederrijpsch.*

When geographical names precede the names of products to denote a special kind.

*Manilla-sigaren* manilla-cigars.

*Pruisisch-zuur* Prussic acid.

*Russisch-zilver* Russian silver.

To connect two parts of a title.

*Staten-Generaal* states-general.

*Kapitein-commandant* commanding captain.

In compounds, in which the adjective, the article or the numeral determines a part only of the compound word.

*Oude-mannenhuys* Aims house (for old men).

*IJzeren-spoorweg* railway.

's-*Gravenhage* The Hague.

's-*Hertogenbosch* Bois-le-duc.

§ 148. The **circumflex** is used when two syllables are contracted into one; except in such words as are usually contracted into one syllable.

*Dān* = *daan* deeds.

*Leer* = *ladder* ladder.

*Gōm* = *golen* gods.

*Leer* = *leder* leather.

*Lēn* = *leden* people

*Teer* = *teeder* tender.

*Vernēren* = *veruederen* to humble. *Wier* = *ueder* weather.

§ 149. The **trema** is placed over vowels to denote that they are pronounced separately. If two vowels cannot represent a regular sound, the trema is not used.

*Zee'n* seas, *met drie'n* with three, *oliën* to oil; but *Israeliet*, *modeartikelen* &c..

because **ae** or **ea** never belong together.

§ 150. The **accent** is used for laying a strong stress upon a vowel.

cf.: *ēn gulden* one florin — *en gulden* a florin; *dāár* is *het* there it is — *daar is hij eindelijk* there he is at last; *in de een in de ander* the one as well as the other; *of dit of dat* either this or that.

§ 151. The **apostrophe** is used:

Before the plural or the genitive of loan-words ending in an accented vowel, except **ie**.

*Bureau's* offices, *cadeau's* presents, *campé's* or *sofa's*, *mott's*, *papi's*, *Maria's* (Gen. or Pl. of Mary).

In Dutch words and in those ending in **ie** or in an unaccented vowel the apostrophe is never used:

*Bougies* [*buzis*] candles, *tralles* [*tralis*] grates, *raas* [*ras*] yards, *eeuws* [*egas*] husbands, *Willens* [*eilens*] (Gen. or Pl. of William), *Maris* [*maris*], *horloges* [*horlozəs*] watches, *diligences* [*diliŋsəs*] stage-coaches.

When the genitive-ending is omitted.

*Floris' zoon* [*floris zən*] the son of Floris, *Beatrik' moeder* [*beatriks mudər*] the mother of B.

When one letter only of a word is written: e. g.:

*'t huis* [*tugs*] = *het huis* the house, *t'huis* = *t. huis* at home,

*'s avonds* [*avnts*] = *des avonds* in the evening, *'k heb* = *ik heb* I have,

*'n paard* [*part*] = *een paard* a horse.

## G. Punctuation.

§ 152. The principal stops (*de scheiteekens* [*sæi-tekəns*]) used in Dutch are:

The comma *de komma* [*kɔma*] (,).

The full stop *de* or *het punt* [*pʏnt*] (.).

The semi-colon *de, het kommapunt* [*kɔmapʏnt*] (;).

The colon *de, het dubbele punt* [*dʏbəls pʏnt*] (:).

The note of interrogation *het vraagteeken* [*vraː-tekən*] (?).

The note of exclamation *het uitroepingsteeken* [*uɪt-rupɪŋstekən*] (!).

The dash | *de gedachtestreep* [*ɡɔdɑːtɔstrep*] (—).

| *het beletselteeken* [*bələtsələtekən*] (. . .).

The inverted comma *het aanhalingsteeken* [*an-halɪŋstekən*] („ “).

The parenthesis *het haakje* [*hakjə*] ( ) or [ ].

§ 153. Dutch and English punctuation differ in the use of the **comma** only. Attention should be paid to the following cases:

A comma is placed between **demonstrative** (personal) and **relative** pronouns.

*Hij, die dat zegt* [*hei, di dat zɛxt*] . . . he who says so . . .

*Zij, die dat doen* [*zei, di dat du:n*] . . . those who do so . . .

*Dat, wat gij zegt* [*dat, wat zɛi zɛxt*] . . . that which you say . . .

A relative clause is always put between commas.

*De man, die mij dit vertelde, staat daar* [*də man, di mi dit vɛrteldə, stat daːr*] the man who told me this stands there.

*Het huis, dat verkocht wordt, is goed* [*het hœys, dat vɛrkɔxt vɔrt, ɪs ɡut*] the house that will be sold is good.

If the subject is preceded by an adverb or an adverbial phrase, no comma is used.

*Ten slotte moet ik u zeggen* [*tɛn slɔts mʊt ik ʏ zɛɡən*] finally, I must tell you.

*Waarlijk ik weet het niet* [*vɑrlək ik vɛt het nit*] in truth, I do not know.

If short adverbial clauses come after the verb which they modify, a comma is used in Dutch.

*Ik zal wachten, totdat hij komt* [*ik zal vaxtən, tɔtdat hɛi kʊmt*] I will wait till he comes.

*Ik zag hem niet, toen hij riep* [*ik zax hɛm nit, tʊn hɛi rip*] I did not see him when he called.

If an adverb stands between subject and verb, no comma is used.

*De dief evenwel ontsnapte* [*də dif evənvel ɔntsnaɪptə*] the thief, however, escaped.

No comma is used after a nominative in elliptical sentences.

*Vergissen is menschelijk, vergeven goddelijk* [*vərgɪsən ɪs mɛnsələk, vɛrgɛvən ɡɔdələk*] to err is human; to forgive, divine.

## H. Syllabification.

§ 154. The division of syllables, especially of short words, should be avoided as much as possible. Where it becomes necessary, the following rules should be observed.

§ 155. In compound words each letter remains with the word to which it belongs:

*Eer-ambt* = *eram̩bt* [*ɛrampt*] post of honour.

*Door-een* = *dooreen* [*dorɛn*] together.

*Elk-ander* = *elkander* [*ɛlkandər*] each other.

§ 156. Words with the prefixes *be-*, *ge-*, *her-* &c., or with the suffixes *-aard*, *-achtig* must be treated as compounds as regards division.

§ 157. In derivatives the suffixes beginning with a consonant are separated: *lief-de* [*livdə*] love, *hoog-ste* [*hoʊstə*] highest, *meer-ste* [*mɛstə*] most, *bak-ster* [*bakstər*] (f.) baker, *vleesche-lijk* [*vɛlələk*] carnal; but according to pronunciation: *naas-te* [*nastə*] next, *bes-te* [*bɛstə*] best.

The letters *t*, *p*, *s* before the diminutive ending belong to this ending: *stoel-tje* [*stultjə*] little chair, *boom-pje* [*bompjə*] little tree, *jong-ske* [*ʝʊyskə*] little boy, *penning-ske* [*pɛnɪnskə*] farthing.

§ 158. A single medial consonant goes over to the next syllable: *dee-len* [*dɛlən*] to divide, *ne-men* [*nɛmən*] to take, *la-chen* [*laɛn*] to laugh, *li-chaam* [*lɪxam*] body.



When there are two medial letters, the second belongs to the next syllable: *ber-gen* [*bergən*] mountains, *lan-dən* [*landən*] countries, *gan-zen* [*ganzən*] geese, *breu-gen* [*brɛpən*] to bring. Of three or more medial letters one or two go over to the next syllable according to pronunciation: *vor-sten* [*vɔrstən*] monarchs, *kor-stig* [*korstɪg*] crusty, *ven-ster* [*vɛnstər*] window; but: *amb-ten* [*amptən*] offices, *erw-ten* [*ɛrtən*] pease, *art-sen* [*urtsən*] physicians, *koort-sen* [*kortsen*] fevers.

§ 159. Words of foreign origin are separated according to pronunciation: *le-proos* [*lepros*] leprous, *A-driaan* [*adrian*].

## Second Book.

### Parts of Speech.

### First Lesson. Eerste Les.

[*eerste les.*]

#### Hooge ouderdom.

Eene vrouw van negentig jaar zeide tot Fontenelle, die vijf en negentig oud was: „De dood heeft ons zeker vergeten“.

„Stil!“ antwoordde haar Fontenelle, terwijl hij zijn vinger op haar mond legde, „men moet geene slapende honden wakker maken.“

*hoog ouderdom.*

*en vrouw van negentig jaar zeide tot fontenelle, die vijfennegentig uit ras: „de doet heft ons zeker vergeten“.*

*„stil!“ antwoordde haar fontenelle, terwijl hij zijn vinger op haar mond legde, „men niet-ten slapende honden wakker maken.“*

Ouderdom (m.) age, hooge — old	negentig ninety
age	vijf en negentig ninety-five
eene vrouw a lady, woman	zeker surely
het jaar the year	stil! hush
dood (m.) death	die who
zijn vinger his finger	haar her
haren mond (A.) her mouth	ons us
hond (m.) dog, honden dogs	men one, we
hoog high, (old)	geene no
slapende sleeping	terwijl while, — hij legde laying
wakker awake, — maken to	van of
wake up	tot to; op on, upon

zeggen to say. ik zeg I say, ik zegde or zeide I said, ik heb gezegd I have said

(!) zijn to be: ik ben, ik was, ik ben geweest

(!) hebben to have: ik heb, ik had, ik heb gehad

\* vergeten to forget: ik vergeet, ik vergat, ik (heb) ben vergeten  
antwoorden to answer: ik antwoord, ik antwoordde, ik heb geantwoord

leggen to lay: ik leg, ik legde, ik heb gelegd

(!) moeten to be obliged: ik moet, ik moest, ik heb (ge)moeten

maken to make: ik maak, ik maakte, ik heb gemaakt.

**Hebben** [*hebən*] to have.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

<i>Ik heb</i> I have	<i>Heb ik?</i> have I?
<i>hij heeft</i> he has	<i>heeft hij?</i> has he?
<i>zij heeft</i> she has	<i>heeft zij?</i> has she?
<i>het heeft</i> it has	<i>heeft het?</i> has it?
<i>men heeft</i> one has	<i>heeft men?</i> has one?
<i>wij hebben</i> we have	<i>hebben wij?</i> have we?
<i>gij hebt</i> you have	<i>hebt gij?</i> have you?
<i>zij hebben</i> they have	<i>hebben zij?</i> have they?

**Note 1.** The pronoun of the Second Person singular (*du*) being lost, *gij* (*jij*) is also used for the singular, especially in familiar speech. In polite language *u* (with the form of the second or third person singular of the verb) is always used for the singular as well as for the plural.

**Note 2.** The names of persons are either **masculine** (*mannelijk*) or **feminine** (*vrouwelijk*) as in English. The names of animals and things being **masculine**, **feminine** or **neuter** (*onzijdig*), the gender of these names is indicated by **m.**, **f.**, **n.**, if the preceding word does not indicate it.

**The Article. Het Lidwoord** [*het lidvort*].

§ 160. There are in Dutch as in English two articles: the **definite** (*het bepalend lidwoord*) and the **indefinite article** (*het niet bepalend lidwoord*).

§ 161. The **definite article** has for the singular two forms, viz.: **masc.** and **fem. *de***, **neut. *het***; the plural for all three genders is ***de***. Examples: *de vader* the father, *de moeder* the mother, *het kind* the child, Pl. *de vaders*, *moeders*, *kinderen*.

§ 162. Declension (*Verbuiging*) of the **definite article**:

Singular <i>Enkelvoud</i> .			Plural <i>Meervoud</i> .	
masc.	fem.	neut.	for all genders.	
N. <sup>1</sup> <i>de</i>	<i>de</i>	<i>het, 't</i>	<i>de</i>	the
G. <sup>2</sup> <i>des</i>	<i>der</i>	<i>des</i>	<i>der</i>	of the
D. <sup>3</sup> <i>den</i>	<i>der</i> or <i>de</i>	<i>het</i>	<i>den</i>	to the
A. <sup>4</sup> <i>den</i>	<i>de</i>	<i>het, 't</i>	<i>de</i>	the.

<sup>1</sup> *Nominatief* or *eerste naamval*. <sup>2</sup> *Genetief* or *tweede naamval*.  
<sup>3</sup> *Datief* or *derde naamval*. <sup>4</sup> *Accusatief* or *vierde naamval*.

§ 163. The original form of the D. Singular Neuter *den* being obsolete *aan het* is used. *Den* however is still found in some old expressions, viz.: *in den beginne* at the beginning, *vóór den eten* before dinner.

§ 164. In the D. Singular *te den*, *te der* has often been contracted to *ten*, *ter*: *ter bezichtiging* for (your) perusal, *ten dienste* for the use of, *ten deele* partly, *ter harte* to heart, *ten huize van* at the house of.

§ 165. The indefinite article has also two forms, viz.: **masc.** and **neut.** *een*, fem. *eene*: *een* (a) *vader*, *eene* (a) *moeder*, *een* (a) *kind*.

§ 166. Declension of the indefinite article:

	masc.	fem.	neut.	
N.	<i>een</i>	<i>eene</i>	<i>een</i>	a (an)
G.	<i>eens</i>	<i>eener</i>	<i>eens</i>	of a (an)
D.	<i>eenen</i> or <i>een</i>	<i>eener</i> or <i>eene</i>	<i>eenen</i> or <i>een</i>	to a (an)
A.	<i>eenen</i> or <i>een</i>	<i>eene</i>	<i>een</i>	a (an).

Note. The Possessive Pronouns *mijn* my, *zijn* his, *haar* her, *zijn* (neuter) its, *ons* our, *wc* (or for the polite form *Uw*) your, *hun* their, are declined like the **Indef. Art.** in the Singular and like the **Def. Art.** in the Plural.

### Prepositions. *Voorzetsels* [vɔrˌzɛtsɐls].

§ 167. In modern Dutch all **Prepositions** govern the **Accusative**: *van het jaar*, *tot den dood*, *op haren mond*, *met* (with) *zijn* *vinger*.

#### Conversation.

Question: *Hoe oud* (How old) *was de vrouw*?

Answer: *De vrouw was negentig jaar oud*.

*Hoe oud was Fontenelle?*

*Wat zeide* (What did . . . say) *de vrouw tot Fontenelle?*

*Wat antwoorde* *Fontenelle?*

*Wat deed* (did . . . do) *Fontenelle toen* (as) *hij antwoorde?*

*Welke* (What) *honden moet men niet wakker maken?*

#### Exercise.

##### 1.

Translate: The woman has a dog. The days (*dagen*) of the year. What have you answered? The house of the father. What have you made? We have a heart. Have they answered? Come (*Kom*) before dinner. The dinner of the woman. His mother has a house. A book (*boek*) for your perusal. Has she a dog? The book of the child. She was old. You must answer. She was at the house of her

mother. For the use of schools (*scholen*). He laid his finger on her mouth.

## Second Lesson. Tweede Les.

[*tredə les.*]

### De slimme herbergier.

George II, koning van Engeland, trok eens door Nederland naar Hannover, vernachtte in eene dorpsherberg en wenschte een enkel ei voor zijn ontbijt te gebruiken.

De herbergier bezorgde hem het ei en zette eene guinje op de rekening. De koning zeide glimlachend tot hem: „Het schijnt wel dat de eieren zeldzaam zijn in uw land“. — „Dat niet, Sire“, antwoordde de herbergier; „de eieren zijn zoo schaarsch niet, wel de koningen“.

*de slimme herbergier.*

*George de tredə koning van englant, trok ens dor nederland nar hanover, vernachte in en dorpsherberg en wenschte en eykel ei vor sein ontbeit te gebruyken.*

*de herbergier bezorgde hem het ei en zette en ginje op de rekening. de koning zeide glimlachend tot hem: „het schein wel, dat de eieren zeltsam sein in y(u) land“. — „dat nit, sire“, antworde de herbergier; „de eieren sein zo srars nit, wel de koningen“.*

Herbergier host, inn-keeper	<i>de Tweede the Second</i>
koning king, Pl. koningen	<i>slim sly</i>
Engeland (n.) England	<i>enkel single</i>
Nederland or de Nederlanden the Netherlands	<i>glimlachende smiling</i>
eene dorpsherberg a country-inn	<i>zeldzaam rare</i>
ei (n.) egg, P. eieren	<i>schaarsch scarce</i>
zijn ontbijt (n.) his breakfast	<i>eens once. one day</i>
eene guinje a guinea	<i>wel but; zoo so. as [don,</i>
rekening (f.) bill	<i>dat niet not so (I beg your par-</i>
uw land (n.) your country	<i>door through; roor for</i>
	<i>te to; naar to</i>

- \* *trekken to travel: ik trek, ik trok, ik heb getrokken*
- vernachten to pass the night: ik vernachtte, ik heb vernacht*
- wenschen to wish: ik wensch, ik wenschte, ik heb gewenscht*
- gebruiken to eat, to have: ik gebruik, ik gebruikte, ik heb gebruikt*
- bezorgen to procure: ik bezorg, ik bezorgde, ik heb bezorgd*
- zetten to put, to set: ik zet, ik zette, ik heb gezet*
- \* *schijnen to seem: het schijnt, het scheen, het heeft geschenen.*

### Zijn [*sein*] to be.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

*Ik ben I am*  
*hij is he is*

*Ben ik? am I?*  
*is hij? is he?*

<i>zij</i> is she is	<i>is zij?</i> is she?
<i>het</i> is it is	<i>is het?</i> is it?
<i>men</i> is one is	<i>is men?</i> is one?
<i>wij zijn</i> we are	<i>zijn wij?</i> are we?
<i>gij zijt</i> you are	<i>zijt gij?</i> are you?
<i>zij zijn</i> they are	<i>zijn zij?</i> are they?

## The Verb. *Het Werkwoord* [*het verkwort*].

### Conjugation. *Vervoeging* [*verruging*].

§ 168. With regard to conjugation Dutch verbs are divided into **weak** (*zwakke, klankhoudende* or *gelijkvloeiende werkwoorden*) and **strong** verbs (*sterke, klankwisselende* or *ongelijkvloeiende ww.*).

Such verbs as deviate from the rules for the conjugation of weak and strong verbs are irregular (*onregelmatig*).

§ 169. **Weak** verbs have no vowel change; their Past Participle is formed by adding *d* or *t* to the root.

§ 170. **Strong** verbs have vowel change; their Past Part. is formed by adding *en* to the root.

§ 171. The Infinitive of all Dutch verbs is formed by adding *en* to the root.

§ 172. If the root ends in a double consonant, both consonants are written before *e* only; in all other cases one consonant is dropped:

*leggen*: ik *leg*, hij *legt*, gij *legt*, wij *leggen*, zij *leggen*;  
*zetten*: ik *zet*, hij *zet*, gij *zet*, wij *zetten*, zij *zetten*.

§ 173. In the Indicative Present the first person S. has the same form as the root<sup>1</sup>:

*legg-en*, ik *leg*; *zett-en*, ik *zet*.

The third person S. is formed by adding *t* to the root, if it does not already end in *t*:

*legg-en*, hij *legt*; *trekk-en*, hij *trekt*; *zett-en*, hij *zet*.

The second person Pl.<sup>2</sup> has the same form as the third p. S.; the first and the third p. Pl. have the same form as the Infinitive:

<sup>1</sup> The original ending *e* still remains in a few archaic expressions: ik *herzegge* I repeat, *verblijee* (at the end of a letter) I remain, *zegge* (on receipts).

<sup>2</sup> *Du* being lost, the verb has no special form for the second person S., except in the Imperative mood.

*leggen, gij legt, wij leggen, zij leggen,  
trekken, gij trekt, wij trekken, zij trekken,  
zetten, gij zet, wij zetten, zij zetten.*

**Examples.**

Infinitive.

**Leggen.****Zetten.**

Indicative.

Present Tense.

*Ik leg I lay**Ik zet I set**hij legt he lays**hij zet he sets**wij leggen we lay**wij zetten we set**gij legt you lay**gij zet you set**zij leggen they lay**zij zetten they set.*

In polite speech: *u legt* you lay; *u zet* you set.

**Conversation.***Waarheen (Whither) trok George II?**Door welk land trok George II?**Waar (Where) vernachtte de koning?**Wat wenschte hij voor zijn ontbijt te gebruiken?**Hooveel (How much) sette de herbergier hem op de rekening?**Wat zeide de koning glimlachende tot den herbergier?**Wat antwoordde de herbergier?***Exercises.****2.**

Put the following words in the D. and A..

de herbergier, een herbergier, de koning, de dorps-herberg, eene dorpsherberg, het ei, mijn ei, de guinje, eene guinje, de rekening, hunne rekening, het land, ons land, de honden, mijne honden, de koningen, onze koningen, de eieren, hunne eieren, de Nederlanden.

**3.**

Give the Present Indicative of the following verbs:

zeggen, vergeten, antwoorden, maken, trekken, vernachten, wenschen, gebruiken, bezorgen, zetten, schijnen.

**4.**

Translate: The woman is old. The king has forgotten. How old are you? We have a dog. He has an egg. The host is sly. The king is old. The eggs are scarce. Have the Netherlands a king? Is the woman old? Has the host a dog? We have a receipt. We procure him a dog. Kings

are scarce. The woman smiles. Here (*Hier*) is an inn. He wishes an egg for his breakfast. His country has a king. Was the host old?

## Third Lesson. Derde Les.

[*derde les.*]

### De krekel en de mier.

De krekel had den geheelen zomer doorgebracht met zingen. Toen het winter geworden was, kreeg hij honger en wendde zich tot de mier, en verzocht haar hem wat te eten te geven.

Maar de mier zeide: „Wat hebt gij den geheelen zomer gedaan?“ — „Nacht en dag heb ik gezongen.“ — „Zoo, zoo, hebt ge gezongen? Heel goed, dans dan nu.“

*de krekel en de mier.*

*de krekel hat den gheelen zomer doorgebracht met zingen. toen het winter geworden was, kreeg hei honger en vande sie tot de mier, en verzocht har hem wat te eten te geven.*

*mar de mier zeide: „wat hept-gij den gheelen zomer gedaan?“ — „nacht en dag heb-ik gezongen.“ — „zo, zo, hept-ge gezongen? heel gut, dans dan nu.“*

Krekel (m.) cricket

heel goed very well

mier (f.) ant

ge = *gij* you

zomer (m.) summer

met with

winter (m.) winter

toen as, when

honger (m.) hunger

maar but

dag (m.) day

dan then

nacht (m.) night

nu now, at present

heel, geheel(en) whole

zoo, zoo indeed!

*Het was . . . geworden* it had become . . .

*hij wendde zich tot* he applied to

(!) *doorbrengen* to pass, to spend: *ik breng door, ik bracht door, ik heb doorgebracht*

\* *zingen* to sing: *ik zing, ik zong, ik heb gezongen*

\* *krijgen* to get: *ik krijg, ik kreeg, ik heb gekregen*; — *honger krijgen* to become hungry

(!) *verzoeken* to beg: *ik verzoek, ik verzocht, ik heb verzocht*

(!) *eten* to eat: *ik eet, ik at, ik heb gegeten*

\* *geven* to give: *ik geef, ik gaf, ik heb gegeven*

(!) *doen* to do: *ik doe, ik deed, ik heb gedaan*

*dansen* to dance: *ik dans, ik danste, ik heb gedanst.*

### Hebben [*heben*] to have.

Indicative.

Past Tense.

*Ik had* I had

*Had ik?* had I?

*hij (zij, het, men) had* he (she,

*had hij?* had he?

it, one) had



*wij hadden* we had  
*gij hadt* you had  
*zij hadden* they had

*hadden wij?* had we?  
*hadt gij?* had you?  
*hadden zij?* had they?

## The Verb.

### Conjugation. (Continued.)

§ 174. All **weak** verbs form the Past Tense by adding **de** to the root, and the Past Part. by adding **d**. This **d** changes however into **t**, if the root ends in **f**, **k**, **p**, **t**, **s**, **sch**. *Ik legde, zegde, wenschte, vernachtte; gelegd, gezegd, gewenscht.*

If the root ends in **t** no second **t** is added in the Past Part.:

*gezet, vernacht.*

§ 175. A simple **v** or **z** at the end of the root changes into **f** or **s**:

before **de**, **d**: *leven* to live, *leefde, geleefd; verhuizen* to remove, *verhuisde, verhuisd*;

in all the other forms of conjugation, if no **e** follows immediately:

*leven: ik leef, gij leeft, hij leeft; — wij leven, zij leven; verhuizen: ik verhuis, gij (hij) verhuist; — wij (zij) verhuizen.*

§ 176. The third person S. of the Past Tense has the same form as the first. The first and the third p. Pl. are formed by adding **den** (**ten**) to the root:

*wij, zij legden; wij, zij wenschten.*

If the root ends in **dd** or **tt** these forms are the same as those of the Present Ind.: *wij (zij) redden* = we (they) save or saved; *zetten wij (zij)?* do or did we (they) set?

### Examples.

#### Leggen

*Ik legde* I laid  
*hij legde* he laid  
*wij legden* we laid  
*gij legdet* you laid  
*zij legden* they laid.

#### Redden

*Ik redde* I saved  
*hij redde* he saved  
*wij redden* we saved  
*gij reddet* you saved  
*zij redden* they saved.

#### Zetten

*Ik zette* I set  
*hij zette* he set  
*wij zetten* we set  
*gij zettet* you set  
*zij zetten* they set.

### Conversation.

*Hoe had de krekel den gheelen zomer doorgebracht?*  
*Wanneer (When) kreeg hij honger?*

Tot wie wendde hij zich?  
 Wat verzocht hij haar?  
 Wat zeide de mier toen (then)?  
 Wat had de krekel nacht en dag gedaan?  
 Welken raad (advice) kreeg hij?

## Exercises.

## 5.

Give the Present and Past of the following verbs:

Zeggen, antwoorden, leggen, maken, vernachten, wenschen, gebruiken, bezorgen, zetten, dansen, leven, verhuizen, redden?

## 6.

Translate: The host had a dog. Had the woman eggs? Had George II. a kingdom? We had a receipt. Had you a guinea? The cricket had sung. The woman had danced and sung. Had he done anything (*iets*)? They had an inn. We wished some (*eenige*) eggs for [the] breakfast. They applied to the king. Have they danced? We saved a child. The king had some dogs. What had the child? The child had a guinea.

## Fourth Lesson. Vierde Les.

[*virdo les.*]

## De gierigaard (vrek).

„Ik ongelukkige!“ zoo klaagde een vrek aan zijn buurman. „Men heeft mij den schat ontstolen, dien ik in mijn tuin begraven had en een ellendigen steen in de plaats gelegd.“ — De buurman antwoordde: „Gij zoudt uw schat toch niet hebben. Geloof daarom, dat de steen uw schat is en gij zijt niets armer dan te voren.“ — „Ben ik ook niet armer“, zeide de vrek, „zoo is een ander veel rijker. Ik zou woedend kunnen worden!“

*de girigart (vrek).*

„Ik ongelukkige!“ zo klaagde en vrek an sin byrman. „men heft mei den srat ontstolen, din ik in mein toyn begraven hat en en ellendigen sten in de plats galex.“ — de byrman antvordde: „gei zout y srat tox nit haben. geloof darom, dat de sten y(u) srat is en gei seit nits armer dan te voran.“ — „ben ik ok nit armer,“ zeide de vrek. „zo is en ander vel reiker. ik-sou wulent knnen vorden!“

Gierigaard or vrek miser  
 buurman neighbour  
 schat (m.) treasure  
 tuin (m.) garden  
 steen (m.) stone

plaats (f.) place  
 (on)gelukkig (un)happy  
 ellendig miserable  
 arm(er) poor(er)  
 rijk(er) rich(er)

*woedend* furious  
*mij* me  
*dien* (A) which, that  
*een ander* another  
*veel* much

*toch niet* not . . . after all  
*daarom* therefore  
*dan te voren* than before  
*klagen* (s. § 59) to lament  
*ge'looven* (s. § 175) to believe

\* *stelen* to steal: *ik steel*, *ik stal*, *ik heb gestolen*; *ontstelen* to rob

\* *begraven* to bury: *ik begraaf*, *ik begroef*, *ik heb begraven*

(!) *kunnen* to be able: *ik kan*, *ik kon*, *ik heb gekund* (*kunnen*)

\* *worden* to become, to get: *ik word*, *ik werd*, *ik ben geworden*.

### **Zijn** to be.

Indicative.

Past Tense.

*Ik was* I was

*Was ik?* was I?

*hij (zij, het, men) was* he (she,  
 it, one) was

*was hij?* was he?

*wij waren* we were

*waren wij?* were we?

*gij waart* you were

*waart gij?* were you?

*zij waren* they were

*waren zij?* were they?

### **The Verb.**

#### **Conjugation. (Continued.)**

§ 177. The first and third p. S. of the **Present Subjunctive** are formed by adding *e* to the root. The three persons Pl. have the same form as those of the Indicative. Examples:

#### **Leggen**

*Ik legge* I lay

*hij legge* he lay

*wij leggen* we lay

*gij legt* you lay

*zij leggen* they lay.

#### **Zetten**

*Ik zette* I set

*hij zette* he set

*wij zetten* we set

*gij zet* you set

*zij zetten* they set.

#### **Leven**

*Ik leve* I live

*hij leve* he live.

*wij leven* we live

*gij leeft* you live

*zij leven* they live.

#### **Reizen**

*Ik reize* I travel

*hij reize* he travel

*wij reizen* we travel

*gij reist* you travel

*zij reizen* they travel.

§ 178. The **Past Subjunctive** has the same form as the Past Indicative (s. §§ 174—176).

§ 179. The **Imperative** has in the Singular the same form as the root; the Plural is formed by the addition of *t*, if the root does not end in *t* already. Examples:

S. *leg* — *zet* — *leef* — *reis* — *antwoord*  
 P. *legt* — *zet* — *leeft* — *reist* — *antwoordt*.

§ 180. The **Present Part.** is formed by adding **de** to the Infinitive; the **Past Part.** (see §§ 169, 170) has always the prefix **ge**, if no other prefix is added to the root. Examples:

Present Part.: *klagende* — *reizende* — *sturende* — *vernachtende*  
 Past Part.: *geklaagd* — *gereisd* — *gestolen* — *vernacht*.

§ 181. The **compound tenses** (*samengestelde tijden*) are formed as in English with auxiliary verbs.

### Conversation.

*Wat zeide de vrek klagend tot zijn buurman?*  
*Welken schat had men hem ontstolen?*  
*Wat had men in de plaats gelegd?*  
*Wat antwoordde de buurman op het klagen van den vrek?*  
*Wat moest de vrek maar gelooven?*  
*Waarom (Why) zou de vrek woedend kunnen worden?*

### Exercises.

#### 7.

Write down: a) the Present and Past Subj.; b) the Imperative of: *antwoorden*, *wenschen*, *klagen*, *zeggen*, *reiz* v., *verhuizen*, *weven* (to weave).

#### 8.

Translate: The king was in Hanover and in the Netherlands. Was the inn-keeper sly? Were you in England? Were they furious? Was the woman old? She had a treasure. The stone was in the garden. The neighbour was much richer. Were the eggs scarce? The dog was old. Was it in [the] summer? The cricket had sung. Was the cricket hungry (*Had . . . honger*)?

## Fifth Lesson. Vijfde Les.

[*veifde les.*]

### Vriendelijk aanbod.

Een burgerman kreeg eens in den schouwburg twist met een jong en zeer trotsch edelman. Deze bedreigde hem, dat hij zijnen bedienden gelasten zou hem een dracht stokslagen toe te dienen. „Mijnheer“, zeide de eerste, „bedienden heb ik niet, maar als u even met mij naar buiten wilt gaan, zal ik de eer hebben ze u zelf te geven.“

*rindalak* anbot.

*an* burgerman *krex ens in dan* *sxnubryg* *trist met an jry en zer* *trots* *edelman*. *deze bedreigde hem, dat hei sein bedindan gelasten* *zou hem an draxt stokslagen tu te dinen*. „*meinher*“, *zeide de erste*, „*bedindan heb-ik nit, mar als y evan met mei nar bæytan vilt-xan,* *zal ik de er hebben zo y zelf te gevan*.“

*Het* aanbod the offer  
*burgerman* commoner  
*schouwburg* (m.) theatre  
*twist* (m.) quarrel  
*een dracht stokslagen a sound*  
*beating*  
*stokslag* (m.) stroke with a stick  
*Mijnheer Sir! Mijnheer A. Mr. A.*  
*eer* (f.) honour  
*de bediende* the servant, Pl. *bedienden*  
*vriendelijk* friendly, kind  
*jong* young

*trotsch* haughty  
*de eerste* the former (first)  
*ik zelf* I myself  
*deze* the latter  
*ze = zij* they  
*zeer* very  
*als* if  
*even a moment, just*  
*naar buiten* outside  
*toedienen* to administer, to serve  
*bedreigen* to threaten, to menace  
*gelasten* to order, to charge

(!) *gaan* to go: *ik ga, ik ging, ik ben gegaan*

(!) *willen* to want: *ik (hij) wil, ik wilde or wou, ik heb gewild*

(!) *zullen*: *ik zal* I shall. *ik zou(de)* I should.

### Conversation.

*Met wien kreeg de burgerman twist?*

*Waar kreeg hij twist?*

*Waarmede (with what) bedreigde hem de edelman?*

*Wien zou hij gelasten de stokslagen toe te dienen?*

*Wat antwoordde de burgerman?*

*Welke eer wilde hij hebben?*

### Auxiliary Verbs. *Hulpwerkwoorden* *[hulpverkworden]*.

#### § 182. *Zijn* or *wezen* to be.

**Infinitive** *Onbepaalde wijs*.

**Present Tense** *tegenwoordige tijd*. **Past Tense** *Verleden tijd*.

*Zijn, wezen* to be. *Geveest zijn* to have been.

**Participles** *Deelwoorden*.

**Present** *Tegenwoordig*.

**Past** *Verleden*.

*Zijnde, wezende* being.

*Geveest* been.

**Indicative** *Aantoonende wijs*.

**Subjunctive** *Aanvoegende wijs*.

**Present Tense** *Onvoltooid tegenwoordige tijd*.

*Ik ben* I am.

*Ik zij* I be.

*hij is*

*hij zij*

*wij zijn*

*wij zijn*

*gij zijt*

*gij zijt*

*zij zijn*.

*zij zijn*.

Past Tense *Onvoltooid verleden tijd.*

<i>Ik was</i>	I was.	<i>Ik ware</i>	I were.
<i>hij was</i>		<i>hij ware</i>	
<i>wij waren</i>		<i>wij waren</i>	
<i>gij waart</i>		<i>gij waret</i>	
<i>zij waren</i>		<i>zij waren</i>	

Present Perfect *Voltooid tegenwoordige tijd.*

<i>Ik ben</i>	} <i>geveest</i>	I have been.	<i>Ik zij</i>	} <i>geveest</i>	I have been.
<i>hij is</i>			<i>hij zij</i>		
<i>wij zijn</i>			<i>wij zijn</i>		
<i>gij zijt</i>			<i>gij zijt</i>		
<i>zij zijn</i>			<i>zij zijn</i>		

Pluperfect *Voltooid verleden tijd.*

<i>Ik was</i>	} <i>geveest</i>	I had been.	<i>Ik ware</i>	} <i>geveest</i>	I had been.
<i>hij was</i>			<i>hij ware</i>		
<i>wij waren</i>			<i>wij waren</i>		
<i>gij waart</i>			<i>gij waret</i>		
<i>zij waren</i>			<i>zij waren</i>		

Future *Onvoltooid toekomstige tijd.*

<i>Ik zal</i>	} <i>zijn</i>	I shall be	
<i>hij zal</i>		he will be	
<i>wij zullen</i>		we shall be	Is wanting <i>Ontbreekt.</i>
<i>gij zult</i>		you will be	
<i>zij zullen</i>		they will be.	

Future Perfect *Voltooid toekomstige tijd.*

<i>Ik zal</i>	} <i>geveest zijn</i>	I shall have	
<i>hij zal</i>		been.	
<i>wij zullen</i>			Is wanting.
<i>gij zult</i>			
<i>zij zullen</i>			

Present Conditional *Onvoltooid verl.toekomstige tijd.*

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	} <i>zijn</i>	I should be.	<i>Ik zoude</i>	} <i>zijn</i>	I should be.
<i>hij zou(de)</i>			<i>hij zoude</i>		
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

Past Conditional *Voltooid verl.toekomstige tijd.*

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	} <i>geveest zijn</i>	I should have	<i>Ik zoude</i>	} <i>geveest zijn</i>	I should have
<i>hij zou(de)</i>		been.	<i>hij zoude</i>		been.
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

**Imperative** *Gebiedende wijs.*S. *Wees!* be (thou)!Pl. *Weest!* be (you)!**Remarks on the Dutch construction.**

§ 183. In sentences with compound tenses the Dutch Past Part. must always be placed at the end. Examples:

*Ik heb een boek gehad* I have had a book.

*Hij is koning geweest* he has been king.

*Zij hebben een steen gevonden* they have found a stone.

*Zij waren gelukkig geweest* they had been happy.

*Zij zijn hier geweest* they have been here.

§ 184. Adverbs of time often introduce the sentence and in that case the first auxiliary is placed before the subject. Adverbs of time, if not at the head of the sentence, must follow immediately after the verb or auxiliary. Examples:

*Gisteren hebben wij eenen steen in den tuin gevonden.*

Yesterday we found a stone in the garden.

*Dezen morgen zijn wij hier geweest.*

This morning we have been here.

*Wij hebben dezen morgen eenen steen gevonden.*

We have found a stone this morning.

*Wij zijn dezen morgen hier geweest.*

We have been here this morning.

§ 185. In dependent clauses the verb is placed at the end of the clause, the auxiliary verb of compound tenses coming last:

*Ik geloof, { dat hij hier is*  
                                   *{ dat hij hier geweest is.*

*I believe { he is here*  
                                   *{ he has been here.*

§ 186. The negation *niet* follows the direct object:

*Hij heeft den steen niet gevonden* he has not found the stone.

*Wij hebben hem niet gezien* we have not seen him.

**Exercise.****9.**

Translate: The woman was ninety years old. The dogs were awake. The king is in England. The eggs will be scarce. The king has been in Hanover. The inn-keeper would have been sly. The cricket had been lazy (*lui*). It

is all right. The miser will be very unhappy. You are not poorer than before. Be quiet (S. and Pl.)! He would have been furious. Do not be (translate: be not, S. and Pl.) lazy! We should have been richer. The king has been here. The treasure is still (*nog*) in the garden. Were they happy? We are poor. They were rich. Were they old? You have been lazy. The commoner was not sly. He has been friendly. I believe that he is rich. Was the noble-man haughty? Would he have been happy?

## Sixth Lesson. Zesde Les.

[zɛsɔ lɛs.]

### Onverschilligheid van een geleerde.

Een geleerde was in zijn studeervertrek bezig met een groot boek te schrijven. Een knecht kwam verschrikt toelooopen en riep hem toe: „Mijnheer, mijnheer, er is brand in huis!” — Koeltjes antwoordde hierop de geleerde: „Ga dan mijne vrouw waarschuwen, gij weet wel, dat ik mij niet met het huishouden bemoei”.

*Onverschilligheid* [ʊnʋərʃɪlɪχ-heit] (f.) indifference

*een geleerde* [ɛn ɣɛlɛrdə] a learned man

*studeervertrek* [stydɛrvɛrtɾɛk] (n.) study

*boek* [bʊk] (n.) book

*brand* [brɑnt] (m.) fire

*huis* [hʏys] (n.) house

*mijne vrouw* [mɛinə vrʊ] my wife

*bezig* [bəzɪχ] busy

*huishouden* [hʏysɦʊdɛn] (n.) household

*groot* [ɣrot] great

*verschrikt* [ʋɛrʃɪkt] frightened

*koel(tjes)* [kʊltjɛs] cool(ly)

*hierop* [ɦiɐʋp] thereupon

*wel* [vɛl] very well

*er is brand in huis* [ɛr ɪs brɑnt-ɪn hʏys] the house is on fire

*ga waarschuwen* [ɣa ʋarsɦʏvɛn]

go and warn

\* *schrijven* [ʃɪrɛɪvɛn] to write: ik schrijf, ik schreef, ik heb geschreven

(!) *komen* [kʊmɛn] to come: ik kom, ik (hij) kwam, ik ben gekomen

\* *toelooopen* [tulʊpɛn] to run to: ik loop toe, ik liep toe, ik ben toegelooopen

\* *toeroepen* [turʊpɛn] to cry to: ik roep toe, ik riep toe, ik heb toegeroepen

(!) *weten* [vɛtɛn] to know: ik weet, ik (hij) wist, ik heb geweten  
*zich bemoeien* [z. bɛmʊɛn] to meddle with, to interfere: ik bemoei mij, ik bemoeide mij, ik heb mij bemoeid.

### Conversation.

*Waarmede was de geleerde bezig? Waar schreef hij?*

*Wat riep de verschrikte knecht hem toe?*

*Wat antwoordde de geleerde koeltjes?*



*Waarmede bemoeide hij zich niet?*

*Welke eigenschap (quality) had dus (therefore) de geleerde?*

## Auxiliary Verbs. (Continued.)

### § 187. *Hebben* to have.

#### Infinitive.

Present.

*Hebben* to have.

Past.

*Gehad hebben* have had.

#### Participles.

Present.

*Hebbende* having.

Past.

*Gehad* had.

#### Indicative.

*Ik heb* I have.

*hij heeft*

*wij hebben*

*gij hebt*

*zij hebben*

Present.

*Ik hebbe* I have.

*hij hebbe*

*wij hebben*

*gij hebbet*

*zij hebben*

Past.

*Ik had* I had.

*hij had*

*wij hadden*

*gij hadt*

*zij hadden*

*Ik hadde* I had.

*hij hadde*

*wij hadden*

*gij hadden*

*zij hadden*

#### Present Perfect.

*Ik heb* } I have had.  
*hij heeft* }  
*wij hebben* } *gehad*  
*gij hebt* }  
*zij hebben* }

*Ik hebbe* } I have had.  
*hij hebbe* }  
*wij hebben* } *gehad*  
*gij hebbet* }  
*zij hebben* }

#### Pluperfect.

*Ik had* } I had had.  
*hij had* }  
*wij hadden* } *gehad*  
*gij hadt* }  
*zij hadden* }

*Ik hadde* } I had had.  
*hij hadde* }  
*wij hadden* } *gehad*  
*gij hadden* }  
*zij hadden* }

#### Future.

*Ik zal* } I shall have.  
*hij zal* }  
*wij zullen* } *hebben*  
*gij zult* }  
*zij zullen* }

Is wanting.

## Future Perfect.

<i>Ik zal</i>	} <i>gehad hebben</i>	I shall have	
<i>hij zal</i>		had.	
<i>wij zullen</i>			Is wanting.
<i>gij zult</i>			
<i>zij zullen</i>			

## Present Conditional.

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	} <i>hebben</i>	I should have.	<i>Ik zoude</i>	} <i>hebben</i>	I should have.
<i>hij zou(de)</i>			<i>hij zoude</i>		
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Past Conditional.

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	} <i>gehad hebben</i>	I should have	<i>Ik zoude</i>	} <i>gehad hebben</i>	I should have
<i>hij zou(de)</i>		had.	<i>hij zoude</i>		had.
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Imperative.

S. *Heb!* have (thou)!Pl. *Hebt!* have (you)!

## Exercise.

## 10.

Translate: The king had eggs for (*voor*) his breakfast. The inn-keeper had had a bill. The cricket will sing in [the] summer. We shall have a long winter. Somebody has stolen the treasure, which was in the garden. You will not have the treasure. The commoner said: "I have no servants". I shall have the honour. He has written a fine book. Have (S. and Pl.) patience (*geduld*)! I should have had patience. They have had fine (*moore*) dogs. We had had a fine book. He has had courage. We should have had a treasure. The cricket would have sung in [the] winter. Have (S. and Pl.) courage (*moed*)!

## Seventh Lesson. Zevende Les.

[*zevende les.*]

## Gestrafte gulzigheid.

Een hond, die een stuk vleesch in zijn bek hield, zwom over eene rivier. Toen hij zijne beeltenis in 't water bemerkte, meende hij een anderen hond te zien, die een ander stuk in den bek had. Vol begeerlijkheid, wilde hij het hem afnemen en liet zijn stuk vleesch los. Hij was

het nu voor altijd kwijt, en hoe groot was zijne verbazing, toen hij den anderen hond insgelijks zonder zijn vleesch zag, even bedroefd kijkend als hij.

<i>Glulzigheid</i> [ <i>gʁlʒəcheit</i> ] (f.) glut- tony	<i>over</i> (eene rivier) [ <i>orər enə rivir</i> ] across
<i>stuk</i> [ <i>strk</i> ] (n.) piece	<i>vol</i> [ <i>vʊl</i> ] full (of
<i>vleesch</i> [ <i>vles</i> ] (n.) meat	<i>kwijt</i> [ <i>kʁijt</i> ] lost, gone
<i>bek</i> [ <i>bek</i> ] (m.) mouth	<i>groot</i> [ <i>grʊt</i> ] great
<i>rivier</i> [ <i>rivir</i> ] (f.) river	<i>bedroefd</i> [ <i>bədrʊft</i> ] sad
<i>beeltenis</i> [ <i>beltənɪs</i> ] (f.) image	<i>even — als</i> [ <i>evən — əls</i> ] as — as
<i>water</i> [ <i>vɑtər</i> ] (n.) water	<i>kijkend</i> [ <i>kɛikənt</i> ] looking
<i>begeerlijkheid</i> [ <i>bəgeərlikheit</i> ] (f.) avidity	<i>insgelijks</i> [ <i>ɪnsɣələiks</i> ] also
<i>verbazing</i> [ <i>vərbəzɪŋ</i> ] (f.) astonish- ment	<i>zonder</i> [ <i>zʊndər</i> ] without
<i>gestraft</i> [ <i>gəstrɑft</i> ] punished	<i>bemerken</i> [ <i>bəmərəkən</i> ] to observe
	<i>meenēn</i> [ <i>mēnən</i> ] to think

- kwijt worden* (*kwijt raken*) [*kʁijt vɔrdən* (*rakən*)] to lose.  
to get rid of
- (1) *houden* [*hʊndən*] to keep: *ik houd, ik hield, ik heb gehouden*  
\* *zweemen* [*zrēmən*] to swim: *ik zwem, ik zwom, ik heb ge-  
zweemen*
- (1) *zien* [*zin*] to see: *ik zie, ik zag, ik heb gezien*  
\* *afnemen* [*afnēmən*] to take away: *ik neem af, ik nam af,  
ik heb afgenomen*  
\* *loslaten* [*lɔslatən*] to let loose: *ik laat los, ik liet los, ik heb  
losgelaten.*

### Conversation.

*Wat hield de hond in zijn bek?*  
*Waarover* (Across what) *zwom hij?*  
*Waar bemerkte hij zijne beeltenis?*  
*Wat meende hij daarin te zien?*  
*Waarmede meende hij dien anderen hond te zien?*  
*Wat wilde hij vol begeerlijkheid doen?*  
*Wat geschiedde* (happened) *met zijn stuk vleesch?*  
*Wanneer* (When) *was zijne verbazing groot?*

### Auxiliary Verbs. (End.)

#### § 188. *Zullen* shall, will.

This auxiliary verb has five forms only:

	1. Infinitive: <i>zullen.</i>	
	2. Present Participle: <i>zullende.</i>	
3. Indic. Present.	4. Indic. Imp.	5. Subj. Imp.
<i>Ik zal</i> I shall.	<i>Ik zou(de)</i> I should.	<i>Ik zoude</i> I should.
<i>hij zal</i>	<i>hij zou(de)</i>	<i>hij zoude</i>
<i>wij zullen</i>	<i>wij zouden</i>	<i>wij zouden</i>
<i>gij zult</i>	<i>gij zoudt</i>	<i>gij zoudet</i>
<i>zij zullen</i>	<i>zij zouden</i>	<i>zij zouden</i>

§ 189. **Worden to be** (of the passive voice).

**Infinitive.**

Present.

Past.

*Worden to be.*

*Geworden zijn to have been.*

**Participles.**

Present.

Past.

*Wordende being.*

*Geworden been.*

**Indicative.**

**Subjunctive.**

Present.

*Ik word I am.*

*Ik worde I be.*

*hij wordt*

*hij worde*

*wij worden*

*wij worden*

*gij wordt*

*gij wordet*

*zij worden*

*zij worden*

Past.

*Ik werd I was.*

*Ik werde I were.*

*hij werd*

*hij werde*

*wij werden*

*wij werden*

*gij werdt*

*gij werdet*

*zij werden*

*zij werden*

**Present Perfect.**

*Ik ben* } :: I have been.  
*hij is* }  
*wij zijn* } *geworden*  
*gij zijt* }  
*zij zijn* }

*Ik zij* } :: I have been.  
*hij zij* }  
*wij zijn* } *geworden*  
*gij zijt* }  
*zij zijn* }

**Pluperfect.**

*Ik was* } :: I had been.  
*hij was* }  
*wij waren* } *geworden*  
*gij waart* }  
*zij waren* }

*Ik ware* } :: I had been.  
*hij ware* }  
*wij waren* } *geworden*  
*gij waret* }  
*zij waren* }

**Future.**

*Ik zal* } :: I shall be.  
*hij zal* }  
*wij zullen* } *worden*  
*gij zult* }  
*zij zullen* }

Is wanting.

**Future Perfect.**

*Ik zal* } :: I shall have  
*hij zal* } *zijn* been.  
*wij zullen* }  
*gij zult* }  
*zij zullen* }

Is wanting.

## Present Conditional.

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	∴	I should be.	<i>Ik zoude</i>	∴	I should be.
<i>hij zou(de)</i>	} ∴ worden		<i>hij zoude</i>	} ∴ worden	
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Past Conditional.

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	∴	I should	<i>Ik zoude</i>	∴	I should
<i>hij zou(de)</i>	} ∴ geworden	have been.	<i>hij zoude</i>	} ∴ geworden	have been.
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Imperative.

S. *Word!* be (thou)!Pl. *Wordt!* be (you)!

**Note 1.** The copula verb *worden* to become (to get, to grow, to turn), is conjugated in the same manner, cf.: *hij wordt gestraft* he is punished, — *hij wordt een geleerd man*.

**Note 2.** In compound tenses the Participle, Noun or Adjective must be placed directly after the verb: *hij is gestraft geworden* he has been punished, *hij zal gestraft worden* he will be punished, *hij zou rijk geworden zijn* he would have grown rich, *ik zou kapitein worden* I should become a captain.

**Note 3.** Instead of: «The house is building, was building» &c., translate as if the words ran «The house is built» *het huis wordt gebouwd*; «The house was built» *het huis werd gebouwd*.

## Exercise.

## 11.

Translate. The woman would have been forgotten. The sleeping dogs have been awakened. The eggs will be laid. The cricket would have sung in [the] summer. Be (become, S. and Pl.) happy! The miser would have been robbed. A stone was laid in its (*zijne*) place. The book was written. Do not be (become) sad! The other dogs were seen in the river. I should have been seen in the garden. We should have been forgotten. The piece (of) meat would have been eaten (*gegeten*). I am robbed. You are awakened. The palace (*paleis*, n.) was building. He was observed. The song (*lied*, n.) will be sung. We got rid of it. The eggs had been eaten. The book will be written.

# Eighth Lesson. Achtste Les.

[achtste les.]

## De bedrogen bedrieger.

Eens stortregende het te Londen. Een rijk koopman, die van de Beurs kwam, bemerkt eene vigilante, stapt er in, en laat zich naar eene zeer ver verwijderde wijk van de stad brengen.

Onderweg bemerkt de koopman, dat hij vergeten heeft zijne portemonnaie bij zich te steken.

Wat nu te doen?

Voor het huis aangekomen, waar hij wezen moest, stapte hij uit de vigilante en zeide tot den koetsier: „Wees zoo goed een lucifertje te geven, ik heb een souverain in 't rijtuig laten vallen“.

Dadelijk legt de koetsier de zweep over 't paard en verdwijnt weldra om den hoek van de straat.

*Bedrieger* [bədriɣər] deceiver  
*koopman* [kɔpmən] merchant  
*Beurs* [boʊrs] (f.) Exchange  
*beurs* (f.) purse  
*vigilante* [vɪʒilɑntə] (f.) cab  
*wijk* [vɪk] (f.) quarter  
*stad* [stat] (f.) city, town  
*portemonnaie* [pɔrtəmɔnɛ] (f.)  
 purse  
*koetsier* [kutsir] cabman, driver  
*lucifertje* [lysifertjə] (n.) match  
*souverain* [suverɛin] (m.) sover-  
 eign  
*rijtuig* [reitwɛx] (n.) carriage, cab  
*zweep* [zɛp] (f.) whip

*paard* [part] (n.) horse  
*hoek* [huk] (m.) corner  
*straat* [strat] (f.) street  
*te Londen* [tə lɔndən] in London  
*bedrogen* [bədɾɔɣən] deceived  
*verwijderd* [vərveidərt] distant  
*aangekomen* [aŋgəkomən] arrived  
*eens* [ɛns] once  
*er* [vər] far  
*onderweg* [ɔndərɛx] on the way  
*voor* [vor] before  
*dadelijk* [dadəlɛk] immediately  
*over* [ovər] on  
*weldra* [vɛldra] soon

*hij stapt er in* [hei stapt ɛr in] he gets in, *hij stapte er uit*  
 he got out

*hij laat zich brengen* [hei lat zɪx brɛŋən] he has himself taken  
*ik heb geld laten vallen* [ik heb ɣɛlt latən vallən] I have  
 dropped (some) money

*stortregenen* [stɔrtɾɛɣənən] to rain very fast: *het stortregent*,  
*het stortregende*, *het heeft gestortregend*

\* *verdwijnen* [vərdrɛinən] to disappear: *ik verdwijn*, *ik ver-*  
*dween*, *ik ben verdwenen*.

## Conversation.

*Vanwaar* (Whence) *kwam de rijke koopman?*

*Wat bemerkte hij?*

*Waarom wilde hij eene vigilante hebben? Omdat* (Be-  
 cause) . . .

*Waarheen liet hij zich brengen?*

*Wat bemerkte de koopman onderweg?*

*Wanneer stapte hij uit de vigilante?  
 Wat zeide hij tot den koetsier?  
 Wat deed de koetsier? Wie was bedrogen?*

### The Verb.

#### § 190. Conjugation of weak verbs.

##### Infinitive.

###### Present.

*Antwoorden* to answer.      *Wenschen* to wish.

###### Perfect.

*Geantwoord hebben* to have answered.      *Gewenscht hebben* to have wished.

##### Participles.

###### Present.

*Antwoordende* answered.      *Wenschende* wishing.

###### Perfect.

*Geantwoord* answered.      *Gewenscht* wished.

##### Indicative.

###### Present.

<i>Ik antwoord</i>	I answer.	<i>Ik wensch</i>	I wish.
<i>hij antwoordt</i>		<i>hij wenscht</i>	
<i>wij antwoorden</i>		<i>wij wenschen</i>	
<i>gij antwoordt</i>		<i>gij wenscht</i>	
<i>zij antwoorden</i>		<i>zij wenschen</i>	

###### Past.

<i>Ik antwoordde</i>	I answered.	<i>Ik wenschte</i>	I wished.
<i>hij antwoordde</i>		<i>hij wenschte</i>	
<i>wij antwoordden</i>		<i>wij wenschten</i>	
<i>gij antwoorddet</i>		<i>gij wenschtet</i>	
<i>zij antwoordden</i>		<i>zij wenschten</i>	

###### Present Perfect.

<i>Ik heb</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \end{array} \right\}$	I have answered.	<i>Ik heb</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \end{array} \right\}$	I have wished.
<i>hij heeft</i>			<i>hij heeft</i>		
<i>wij hebben</i>			<i>wij hebben</i>		
<i>gij hebt</i>			<i>gij hebt</i>		
<i>zij hebben</i>			<i>zij hebben</i>		

###### Pluperfect.

<i>Ik had</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \\ \text{geantwoord} \end{array} \right\}$	I had answered.	<i>Ik had</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \\ \text{gewenscht} \end{array} \right\}$	I had wished.
<i>hij had</i>			<i>hij had</i>		
<i>wij hadden</i>			<i>wij hadden</i>		
<i>gij hadt</i>			<i>gij hadt</i>		
<i>zij hadden</i>			<i>zij hadden</i>		

## Future Indefinite.

<i>Ik zal</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{antwoor-} \\ \text{den} \end{array} \right\}$	I shall answer.	<i>Ik zal</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{wenschen} \end{array} \right\}$	I shall wish.
<i>hij zal</i>			<i>hij zal</i>		
<i>wij zullen</i>			<i>wij zullen</i>		
<i>gij zult</i>			<i>gij zult</i>		
<i>zij zullen</i>			<i>zij zullen</i>		

## Future Perfect.

<i>Ik zal</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geantw. heb-} \\ \text{b.} \end{array} \right\}$	I shall have	<i>Ik zal</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{gewenscht h.} \end{array} \right\}$	I shall have
<i>hij zal</i>		answered.	<i>hij zal</i>		wished.
<i>wij zullen</i>			<i>wij zullen</i>		
<i>gij zult</i>			<i>gij zult</i>		
<i>zij zullen</i>			<i>zij zullen</i>		

## Conditional.

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{antwoor-} \\ \text{den} \end{array} \right\}$	I should an-	<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{wenschen} \end{array} \right\}$	I should wish.
<i>hij zou(de)</i>		swer.	<i>hij zou(de)</i>		
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudt</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Past Conditional.

<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geantw. heb-} \\ \text{b.} \end{array} \right\}$	I should have	<i>Ik zou(de)</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{gewenscht h.} \end{array} \right\}$	I should have
<i>hij zou(de)</i>		answered.	<i>hij zou(de)</i>		wished.
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudt</i>			<i>gij zoudt</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Imperative.

<i>Antwoord!</i> answer (thou)!	<i>Wensch!</i> wish (thou)!
<i>Antwoordt!</i> answer (you)!	<i>Wenscht!</i> wish (you)!

## Subjunctive.

## Present.

<i>Ik antwoorde</i>	I answer.	<i>Ik wensche</i>	I wish.
<i>hij antwoorde</i>		<i>hij wensche</i>	
<i>wij antwoorden</i>		<i>wij wenschen</i>	
<i>gij antwoordet (antwoordt)</i>		<i>gij wenschet (wenscht)</i>	
<i>zij antwoorden</i>		<i>zij wenschen</i>	

## Past.

<i>Ik antwoordde</i>	I answered.	<i>Ik wenschte</i>	I wished.
<i>hij antwoordde</i>		<i>hij wenschte</i>	
<i>wij antwoordden</i>		<i>wij wenschten</i>	
<i>gij antwoorddet</i>		<i>gij wenschet</i>	
<i>zij antwoordden</i>		<i>zij wenschten</i>	



## Present Perfect.

<i>Ik hebbe</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geant-} \\ \text{woord-} \\ \text{hebben} \end{array} \right\}$	I have an-	<i>Ik hebbe</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ge-} \\ \text{wenscht} \end{array} \right\}$	I have wished.
<i>hij hebbe</i>		swered.	<i>hij hebbe</i>		
<i>wij hebben</i>			<i>wij hebben</i>		
<i>gij hebbet</i>			<i>gij hebbet</i>		
<i>zij hebben</i>			<i>zij hebben</i>		

## Pluperfect.

<i>Ik hadde</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geant-} \\ \text{woord-} \\ \text{hadden} \end{array} \right\}$	I had an-	<i>Ik hadde</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ge-} \\ \text{wenscht} \end{array} \right\}$	I had wished.
<i>hij hadde</i>		swered	<i>hij hadde</i>		
<i>wij hadden</i>			<i>wij hadden</i>		
<i>gij haddet</i>			<i>gij haddet</i>		
<i>zij hadden</i>			<i>zij hadden</i>		

## Present Conditional.

<i>Ik zoude</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ant-} \\ \text{woorden} \end{array} \right\}$	I should an-	<i>Ik zoude</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{wenschen} \end{array} \right\}$	I should wish.
<i>hij zoude</i>		swer.	<i>hij zoude</i>		
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudet</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## Past Conditional.

<i>Ik zoude</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{geant-} \\ \text{woord-} \\ \text{hebb-} \end{array} \right\}$	I should have	<i>Ik zoude</i>	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{ge-} \\ \text{wenscht h-} \end{array} \right\}$	I should have
<i>hij zoude</i>		answered.	<i>hij zoude</i>		wished.
<i>wij zouden</i>			<i>wij zouden</i>		
<i>gij zoudet</i>			<i>gij zoudet</i>		
<i>zij zouden</i>			<i>zij zouden</i>		

## The Negative and Interrogative form.

§ 191. The **Negative** form of all Dutch verbs is like that of the English auxiliary verbs:

*Ik heb niet* I have not, *ik ben niet* I am not, *ik antwoord niet* I do not answer, *ik wenschte niet* I did not wish, *ik zing niet* I do not sing, *ik zong niet* I did not sing.

§ 192. The **Interrogative** form corresponds likewise to that of the English auxiliaries:

*Heb ik* have I? *Ben ik* am I? *Antwoord ik* do I answer? *Wenschte ik* did I wish? *Zing ik* do I sing? *Zong ik* did I sing?

§ 193. **Negative-Interrogative** form:

*Heb ik niet* have I not? *Ben ik niet* am I not? *Antwoord ik niet* do I not answer? *Wenschte ik niet* did I not wish? *Zing ik niet* do I not sing? *Zong ik niet* did I not sing?

## Exercises.

12. Conjugate the verbs: *leggen, dienen, bezorgen, maken, gebruiken, vernachten.*  
 13. Conjugate negatively: *dansen, klagen.*  
 14. Conjugate interrogatively: *bedreigen, zetten.*  
 15. Conjugate negatively-interrogatively: *bemerken, meenen.*

## Ninth Lesson. Negende Les.

[negende les.]

## In een medicijnkist verdronken.

De dokter van een Engelsch schip placht bij alle ongesteldheden zout water aan zijn patienten voor te schrijven. Zekeren avond, bij gelegenheid van een zeilpartij, viel hij over boord en verdronk. Den volgenden dag vraagde de kapitein, die niets van het ongeval wist, een van de matrozen: „Weet gij ook waar de dokter is?” „Ja wel”, antwoordde Jack, „hij is gisteren nacht in zijn eigen medicijnkist verdronken”.

Dokter [dɔktər] or geneesheer [ɡeːnɛʃer] physician  
 schip [ʃɪp] (n.) ship, Pl. schepen [ʃepən]

ongesteldheid [ʊngəstɛlɦeɪt] (f.) in-  
 disposition, Pl. ongesteldheden [ʊngəstɛlɦedən]

zout [zɔut] (n.) salt

zout water [zɔutwɔtər] (n.) salt water

avond [avɔnt] (m.) evening

gelegenheid [ɡɛlɛɡənɦeɪt] (f.) oc-  
 casion, opportunity

bij gelegenheid van [bɛi — van]  
 during

zeil [zɛil] (n.) sail

partij [partɛi] (f.) party

\* *plegen* [plɛɡən] to be accustomed: ik *pleeg*, ik (hij) *placht*

\* *verdrinken* [fɛrdrɪŋkən] to be drowned: ik *verdrink*, ik (hij)  
*verdrank*, ik *ben* (hij *is*) *verdronken*

*vragen* [vrɑɡən] to ask: ik *vraag*, ik *vraagde* (better than  
*vroeg*), ik *heb gevraagd*

boord [bɔrt] (n.) board

zeilpartij [zɛilpartɛi] (f.) sailing-  
 excursion

kapitein [kapɪtɛin] captain

ongeval [ʊŋɡəvɔl] (n.) accident

matroos [matros] sailor, Pl. ma-  
 trozen [matrozən]

medicijnkist [medɪsɛɪnkɪst] (f.)  
 medicine-chest

Engelsch [ɛŋɡlɪʃ] English

zeker [zɛkər] certain

volgende [vɔlgəndə] next

ja wel [ja vɛl]! oh yes!

voorschrijven aan zijne (patien-  
 ten) [vɔrskrɛɪvən an zɛine (pa-  
 sɪntən)] to prescribe his

## Conversation.

Wat placht de Engelsche geneesheer bij alle ongesteldheden  
 voor te schrijven?

Aan wie schreef hij dat voor?

Wanneer en bij welke gelegenheid viel hij over boord en  
 verdronk hij?

*Waarvan wist de kapitein niets?*

*Wat vraagde hij aan een van de matrozen?*

*Wat antwoordde Jack? What did Jack answer.*

## The Noun. *Het Zelfstandig Naamwoord*

[*het zelfstandig naamwoord*].

The Gender. *Het geslacht* [*het geslacht*].

§ 194. There are three genders in Dutch: The Masculine (*mannelijk*), the Feminine (*vrouwelijk*) and the Neuter (*onzijdig*).

Names of inanimate objects are either M., F., or N. — The gender of a substantive may generally be known either by its **signification** i. e. natural gender, or by its **termination** i. e. word gender. The following are the chief rules for determining gender; in many cases the dictionary will have to be resorted to.

§ 195. **Masculine** are:

All appellations of men and male animals.

The names of trees: *beuk* beech, *berk* birch. Except: *linde* (f.) lime-tree.

The names of stones: *diamant* diamond, *robijn* ruby; see § 197, Note.

The names of coins: *gulden* guilder (= 1 s. 8 d.), *stuiver* = penny, *cent* (5 cent = 1 d.). Except: *munt* coin, and *guinje* guinea, which are feminine.

The names of mountains: *de Etna*, *de Mont Blanc*.

The names of a) **months**: *Januari*, *Februari*, *Maart*, &c.; b) **days**: *Zondag*, *Maandag*, *Dinsdag*, *Woensdag*, *Donderdag*, *Vrijdag*, *Zaterdag*; c) **seasons**: *zomer* summer, *herfst* autumn, *winter*; except *lente* (f.) spring.

The primary nouns corresponding with the root of a strong verb, having an abstract meaning: *val* fall, *greep* grasp; — but: *val* = trap and *lettergreep* = syllable are feminine.

**Note.** If such nouns are preceded by an inseparable prefix they are neuter (s. § 197).

All dissyllabic nouns ending in *-aar*, *-aard*, *-erd*, *-el*, *-em*, *-sem*, *-lm*, *-rm*, *-er* and most words ending in *-en*: *beukelaar* buckler, *luijaard* sluggard, *mosterd* mustard, *beitel* chisel,

*adem* breath, *wasem* vapour, *storm* storm, *looper* strip of carpet, *regen* rain.

All words ending in **-ing**, (if they are not derived from verbs) and **-ling**: *ketting* chain, *penning* medal, *farthing*, *krakeling* cracknel.

The words ending in **-dom**, expressing a **state** or **condition**: *adeldom* nobility, *rijkdome* wealth, *wasdom* growth, *eigendom* = right of possession.

§ 196. **Feminine** are:

All names of female persons and of female animals. Except: *het wijf* = low, vulgar woman (but never used in polite language).

Such names of materials as are not neuter (s. § 197): *kant* lace, *wol* wool, *zijde* silk.

Most names of flowers, grains, fruits, vegetables and foreign produce: *roos* rose, *lilie* lily, *bes* or *bezie* berry, *peer* pear, *rogge* rye, *tarwe* wheat, *spinazie* spinage, *koffie* coffee, *siroop* syrup, *zwavel* brimstone.

The names, also proper names, of vessels<sup>1</sup>: *aak* longboat, *bark* barque, *brik* brig. Except: those ending in **-er**, which are masculine: *driemaster* three-master, *schoener* schooner.

The names of the letters of the alphabet, the figures, the notes and the intervals in music: *eene onduidelijke a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *e*, *f*, *g*, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*, *e*, *f*, *g*; *eene fa-kruis* an F-sharp, *eene groote tert* a major third.

The foreign names of musical instruments: *trompet* trumpet, *gitaar* guitar.

All dissyllabic substantives ending in **-e**, **-de**, **-te**, denoting **inanimate** objects: *aarde* earth, *koude* cold, *ellende* misery, *hoogte* height. Except: *vrede* (m.) peace, *einde* (n.) end, and the collective nouns ending in **-te** (s. § 197).

All derivative nouns formed with the suffixes **-heid**, **-nis**, **-teit** and all nouns ending in **-iek**, **-age**, **-ij**, **-ei**, **-uw**: *goedheid* goodness, *beeltenis* image, *majesteit* majesty; *fabriek* factory,

<sup>1</sup> According to this rule we must say: *De Willem III verloor hare masten*.

*slijtage* wear and tear, *bedelarij* beggary, *lei* slate, *schaduw* shadow.

Most words ending in **-ing**, **-st**, **-t**, formed from verbal roots: *belooning* reward, *gunst* favour, *vaart* canal. Except: *dienst* (m.) service, *last* (m.) load, *schrift* (n.) = writing (*Schrift* (f.) = scripture), *wicht* (n.) weight.

Words ending in **-schap** expressing a **body** or an **association** of persons or a **condition** (cf. § 197): *burgerschap* citizens, *priesterschap* priesthood, *riendschap* friendship.

§ 197. Of the **neuter** gender are:

The names of animals that express a **whole class** and the names of the young of animals: *paard* horse, *zwijn* swine, *veulen* foal, *kalf* calf.

The collective nouns: *volk* people, *leger* army, *woud* wood, *dorp* village, *gehucht* hamlet, *gebergte* chain of mountains, *gebeente* bones, *geboomte* trees; but *stad* town or city is feminine.

The names of materials: *goud* gold, *brood* bread, *zout* salt, *water* water. Except: a) some clothing-materials (s. § 196); b) the **masculine** nouns: *azijn* vinegar, *honing* or *honig* honey, *inkt* ink, *mostaard* or *mosterd* mustard, *room* cream, *wijn* wine.

**Note.** Some names of materials are also used to denote an **object**; in this case they are either masc. or fem.: *het diamant* (material), *de diamant* (s. § 195); *het doek* linen, *de doek* (m.) the cloth; *het draad* wire, *de draad* (m.) the thread.

The infinitive mood of verbs and all other parts of speech used as nouns: *het opgaan der zon* sunrise, *het ondergaan der maan* moonset, *het schoone* the beautiful, *het ja* the yes, *het waarom* the why.

Names of continents, countries, provinces and towns: *Amerika*, *Engeland*, *Zuid-Holland*, *Londen*.

All diminutives ending in **-je** (*pje*, *tje* &c) *kindje* little child, *bloempje* floweret, *mannetje* little man.

The words ending in **-dom**, except those which denote a state or condition (s. § 195): *bisdom* bishopric, *vorstendom* principality, *christendom* christianity, *heidendom* paganism.

All words ending in *-schap* when they express a dignity, an occupation or a territory: *priesterschap* priesthood, *koningschap* kingship, *meesterschap* mastership; — also: *genootschap* society, *gereedschap* tools, *gezelschap* company. *Verwantschap* relation or affinity is feminine.

All words ending in *-sel*: *overblijfsel* remainder, *raadsel* riddle, *blauwsel* blue.

The nouns formed from the root of a verb with the inseparable prefixes *be-*, *ge-*, *onder-*, *ont-*. *ver-*: *bedrag* amount, *gebruik* use, *onderwijs* or *onderricht* instruction, *ontstaan* origin, *verlies* loss. Except: *ontvangst* (m.) reception, *verkoop* (m.) sale, *verbouw* (m.) growth.

§ 198. Compound nouns have the gender of the principal word: *hoef* (m.) hoof, *de paardenhoef* (m.) a horse's hoof, *maand* (f.) month, *de zomermaand* (f.) the summermonth (June), *geloof* (n.) creed, *het vangelooft* superstition.

§ 199. Some words have two genders with a difference in meaning:

*atlas* (m.) = atlas; (n.) = silk stuff

*deken* (m.) = dean; (f.) = blanket

*gang* (m.) = gait; (f.) = hall

*hoop* (m.) = heap; (f.) = hope

*muil* (m.) = mule or muzzle; (f.) = slipper

*patroon* (m.) = patron; (f.) = cartridge; (n.) = model

*stof* (f.) = subject, material; (n.) = dust

*traan* (m.) = tear; (f.) = train-oil

*val* (m.) = fall; (f.) = trap; (s. § 195)

*veer* (f.) = feather, spring; (n.) = ferry, ferry-station

*vorst* (m.) = prince; (f.) = frost or ridge

*zaal* (f.) = hall; (n.) = saddle

*zegen* (m.) = blessing; (f.) = drag-net.

### Exercise.

#### 16.

Put the following words with the indefinite article in the Accusative Singular:

A. aanbod, afgod, avond, aarde, April, arbeid, adem, adeldom, azijn, aak, boek, brand, bek, beeltenis, begeerlijkheid, berk, beurs, bezem, blauwsel, bankier, blad, bad,

bevel, brood, boom, bouw, beuk, beitel, bark, belooning, bedelarij, bisdom, bloempje, bedrag, bes, brik, Christendom, cent, canapé, dag, dood, dorpsheerberg, dracht, dorst, duif, December, dienst, dwaasheid, doek, diamant, Dinsdag, dienstbaarheid, driemaster, draad, eten, ei, einde, eikenloof, ellende, fabriek, Februari, goed, gelegenheid, gebergte, guinje, gat, goedheid, genootschap, graan, gulden, gereedschap, gewin, goud, gehucht, gebruik, gezelschap, gebeente, honger, hond, honing, heidendom, huis, hoofd, hemel, horloge, hoogte, hand, invloed, inkt, Juni, jaar, krekel, kalf, kind, kleed, kleenood, kruin, kracht, koffie, koude;

B. lucifertje, lepel, lam, lied, lid, lucht, lei, lelie, linde, lettergreep, last, lichaam, leger, maaltijd, misdaad, maand, Maart, mond, maag, mosterd, Maandag, majesteit, nacht, ontbijt, ongesteldheid, onderwijs, ontstaan, October, oog, overblijfsel, plaats, plan, pen, pracht, peer, paard, prijs, rekening, rivier, rijtuig, rots, rad, rund, rij, room, robijn, rijksdaalder, regen, raadsel, rogge, rijkdom, schat, steen, schouwburg, stokslag, stuk, straat, stad, schip, sieraad, spel, slot, sofa, standbeeld, som, September, stam, schoener, storm, siroop, schaduw, slijtage, tuin, twist, tak, tafel, tralie, turf, tijd, trompet, tarwe, uurwerk, uniform, vinger, vleesch, vigilante, vrees, verjaardag, vloot, vat, verbazing, vogeltje, verdriet, vrede, vonnis, vaderland, val, vriendschap, veulen, verwantschap, verlies, volk, vorstendom, winter, water, weg, wind, wijn, wortel, wasdom, waard, wacht, wol, wasem, zinnebeeld, zomer, zout.

## Tenth Lesson. Tiende Les.

[*tinde les.*]

### Tantalus.

Tantalus, de zoon van Jupiter, was bij de goden zoo bemind, dat Jupiter hem tot de maaltijden der goden toeliet en hem zijne plannen voor de toekomst toevertrouwde. Maar Tantalus deelde, wat hij van zijn vader gehoord had, aan de stervelingen mede. Wegens deze misdaad werd hij in de onderwereld in het water gezet. Hij moest echter altijd dorst lijden, want zoo dikwijls hij een dronk wilde nemen, ging het water weg. Er hingen appels boven zijn hoofd, maar telkens als hij die trachtte af te plukken, dreef de wind de takken weg. Volgens anderen moet er een rots boven zijn hoofd hebben gehangen, en leefde hij in de eeuwigdurende vrees, dat deze zou instorten.

<i>Zoon</i> [zon] son	<i>bemind</i> [bəmint] loved
<i>God</i> [got] God	<i>eeuwig</i> [evix] eternal(ly)
<i>goden</i> [godən] gods	<i>durend</i> [dyrənt] lasting
<i>maaltijd</i> [malteit] (m.) meal, Pl.	<i>eeuwigdurend</i> [evigdyrənt] ever-
<i>maaltijden</i> [malteiden]	la-sting
<i>plan</i> [plan] (n) plan, Pl. <i>plannen</i>	<i>wegens</i> [vegəns] on account of
<i>[planən]</i>	<i>volgens</i> [vɔlgəns] according to
<i>toekomst</i> [tukumst] future	<i>boren</i> [borən] above, over
<i>vader</i> [vadər] father	<i>echter</i> [ɛxtər] however
<i>sterveling</i> [stervəlɪŋ] mortal, Pl.	<i>maar</i> [mar] but
<i>stervelingen</i> [stervəlɪŋən]	<i>want</i> [vant] for
<i>misdaad</i> [misdat] (f.) crime	<i>telkens</i> [telkəns] every time
<i>onderwereld</i> [ɔndərverəlt] (f.)	<i>toevertrouwen</i> [tuvərtrouvən] to
subterranean world	entrust
<i>dorst</i> [dɔrst] (m.) thirst	<i>mededeelen</i> [medədɛlən] to com-
<i>dronk</i> [drɔŋk] draught	municate
<i>hoofd</i> [hoft] (n.) head	<i>hooren</i> [horən] to hear
<i>wind</i> [vint] (m.) wind	<i>afplukken</i> [afplɪkən] to pluck
<i>tak</i> [tak] (m.) branch, Pl. <i>takken</i>	<i>er hingen</i> [ər hɪŋən] there hung
<i>rots</i> [rots] (f.) rock	<i>dorst lijden</i> [dɔrst leiden] to feel
<i>[takən]</i>	thirsty
<i>rees</i> [vres] (f.) fear	

*gezet worden* [gəzət vɔrdən] to be set, *hij werd gezet* he was set

- \* *toelaten* [tulətən] to admit, permit: *ik laat toe, ik liet toe* ik heb (ben) toegelaten
- \* *nemen* [nemən] to take: *ik neem, ik nam, ik heb genomen*
- (1) *weggaan* [vəɡən] to go away: *ik ga weg, ik ging weg, ik ben weggegaan*
- \* *hangen* [həŋən] to hang: *ik hang, ik hing, ik heb gehangen*
- \* *wegdrijven* [vɛgdreivən] to drive away: *ik drijf weg, ik dreef weg, ik heb (ben) weggedreven.*

### Conversation.

*Wie was Tantalus?*

*Hoezeer* (How much) *was hij bij de goden bemind?*

*Wat vertrouwden de goden hem toe?*

*Wat deelde Tantalus aan de stervelingen mede?*

*Hoe werd hij gestraft?*

*Kon hij* (Could he) *zijn dorst lesschen* (to quench)?

*Nee* (No), *want* . . .

*Waarom kon hij de appels boven zijn hoofd niet afplukken?*

*Wat moet er volgens anderen boven zijn hoofd gehangen hebben?*

*Wat vreesde* (to fear) *Tantalus voortdurend* (continually)?

### The Noun. (Continued.)

Declension. *Verbuiging* [vɛrbœyŋŋ].

§ 200. There are two declensions in Dutch: the **strong** and the **weak**. Almost all nouns belong to the



**strong** declension: the Genetive-ending is *s*. The few words belonging to the **weak** declension end in the Gen. in *en*.

§ 201. Declension of nouns in the **Singular** (*Enkelvoud*):

All **feminine** substantives remain unchanged.

Except: family and proper names in the Gen. preceding another noun; these take *s*: *moeders verjaardag* mother's birthday, *tantes hondje* aunt's little dog, *Maries hoed* Mary's hat. If a pronoun or an adjective precedes such expressions, it has the nominative-form: *mijn moeders verjaardag*, *uw oude tantes hondje*.

The **masculine** and **neuter** nouns take in the Genetive only a declension-ending: *s* or *(e)n*.

The following take *(e)n* (weak declension): a) all names of persons ending in *e*: *bode* messenger, *getuige* witness &c.; b) all adjectives and participles used substantively to denote male persons: *een wijze* a wise man, *de gevangene* the prisoner, *een geleerde* a learned man; c) the words: *hertog* duke, *graaf* count, *prins* prince, *vorst* monarch, *profeet* prophet, *paus* pope, *mensch* man, *heer* gentleman (except in compounds: *de huisheer* the landlord: *des huisheers*, *de gastheer* the host: *des gastheers*); d) the neuter word: *hart* heart, G. *des harten*.

The **Genetive** is used very seldom in Dutch; especially in conversation and common style the preposition *van* = of is used: *van den mensch*, *paus*, *getuige*. The Genetive of the following words is **always** formed by means of *van*: a) of those ending in *s*, *sch* or *st*; b) of the **neuter** nouns ending in *e*. Examples: *van het huis* of the house, *van het moeras* of the swamp, *van den loods* of the pilot, *van het gebergte* of the mountain-chain, *van het einde* of the end.

The **Accusative** of all substantives has always, and the **Dative** has generally the same form as the Nominative.

§ 202. Rules for the formation of the **Plural** (*Meervoud*):

**All nouns** have *en* or *s* in the four cases.

**Note.** A few neuter substantives take *er* before the plural-ending.

The following nouns take *s* in the plural: a) all **diminutives**<sup>1</sup> (*verkleinwoorden*): *het huisje*, *de huisjes*; *het boompje* the little tree, *de boompjes*. b) nearly all words ending in *-el*, *-em*, *-en*, *-aar*, *-ier*, *-aard*, *-erd*, *-age*; some of them admit also of the ending *en*, especially in poetry or elevated style; conversational language and common style prefer *s*. Examples: *lepel* spoon, *lepels*; *bezem* broom, *bezems*; *keten* chain, *ketens* or *ketenen*; *leeraar* teacher, *leeraars* or *leeraren*; *bankier* banker, *bankiers*; *luiard* sluggard, *luiards*; *lieverd* darling, *lieverds*; *bosschage* (n.) little wood, *bosschages*. Except: *engel* angel, *lauwer* laurel, *wonder* wonder, miracle. *christen* christian, which take *en* only: *engelen*, *lauweren*, *wonderen*, *christenen*. c) The words: *ra* (f.) yard, *vla* (f.) custard, *eega* husband, *kok* cook, *bruigom* bridegroom, *vaandrig* ensign, *maat* comrade; Pl.: *raas*, *claas*, *eegaas*, *koks*, *bruigoms*, *vaandrijs*, *maats*.

All the other substantives take *en* (*f* and *s* are changed into *v* and *z*, see § 113 and § 117): *pen* (f.) pen, *pennen*; *hoed* (m.) hat, *hoeden*; *duif* (f.) pigeon, *duiven*; *turf* (f.) peat *turven*; *huis* (n.) house, *huizen*; *muïs* (f.) mouse, *muizen*.

**Note.** In words of foreign origin *s* is generally written in the plural instead of *z*: *struis* (m.) ostrich, *struisen*; *kruis* (n.) cross, *kruisen*; *kaars* (f.) candle, *kaarsen*; *kers* cherry, *kersen*; *dans* (n.) dance, *dansen*; *krans* (m.) garland, *kransen*; *lans* (f.) lance, *lansen*; *schrans* sponger, *schransen*; *prins*, *prinsen*; *spons* (f.) sponge, *sponsen*; *boomschors* (f.) bark, *boomschorsen*; *paus* pope, *pausen*; *saus* sauce, *sausen*; *kous* stocking, *kousen*.

Some neuter nouns take *er* before the plural-ending *en*: *ei*, *eieren*; *goed* goods (ware), *goederen*; *kalf* calf, *kalveren* or *kalcen*; *lam* lamb,

<sup>1</sup> They are of more frequent use than in English or German.

*lammeren*; *lied* song, *liederen*; *rad* wheel, *raderen* or *raden*; *volk* nation, *volkeren* or *volken*; *gemoed* mind, *gemoederen*.

A few neuter nouns take **er-en** as well as **er-s**: *blad* leaf, *bladen* or *bladers*; *hoen* hen, *hoenderen* or *hoenders*; *kind*, *kinderen* or *kinders*; *rund* cow, *runderen* or *runders*.

### § 203. Example of the strong declension.

Singular.	Plural.
	Masculine.
N. <i>De leeraur</i>	N. <i>De leeraars, leeraren</i>
G. <i>des leeraars</i>	G. <i>der leeraars, leeraren</i>
D. <i>den leeraar</i>	D. <i>den leeraars, leeraren</i>
A. <i>den leeraar.</i>	A. <i>de leeraars, leeraren.</i>
N. <i>Een mond</i>	N. <i>Monden</i>
G. <i>eens monds</i>	G. <i>monden</i>
D. <i>eenen (een) mond</i>	D. <i>monden</i>
A. <i>eenen (een) mond.</i>	A. <i>monden.</i>
	Feminine.
N. <i>De vrouw</i>	N. <i>De vrouwen</i>
G. <i>der vrouw</i>	G. <i>der vrouwen</i>
D. <i>der (de) vrouw</i>	D. <i>den vrouwen</i>
A. <i>de vrouw.</i>	A. <i>de vrouwen.</i>
N. <i>Eene hand</i>	N. <i>Handen</i>
G. <i>eener hand</i>	G. <i>handen</i>
D. <i>eener (eene) hand</i>	D. <i>handen</i>
A. <i>eene hand.</i>	A. <i>handen.</i>
	Neuter.
N. <i>Het veld</i> (field)	N. <i>De velden</i>
G. <i>des velds</i>	G. <i>der velden</i>
D. <i>den veld</i> (het veld)	D. <i>den velden</i>
A. <i>het veld.</i>	A. <i>de velden.</i>
N. <i>Een boekje</i>	N. <i>Boekjes</i>
G. <i>eens boekjes</i>	G. <i>boekjes</i>
D. <i>een(en) boekje</i>	D. <i>boekjes</i>
A. <i>een boekje.</i>	A. <i>boekjes.</i>

### § 204. Example of the weak declension.

Singular.	Plural.
	Masculine.
N. <i>De bode</i>	N. <i>De boden</i>
G. <i>des boden</i>	G. <i>der boden</i>
D. <i>den bode</i>	D. <i>den boden</i>
A. <i>den bode.</i>	A. <i>de boden.</i>

N. <i>Een graaf</i>	N. <i>Graven</i>
G. <i>eens graven</i>	G. <i>graven</i>
D. <i>eenen (een) graaf</i>	D. <i>graven</i>
A. <i>eenen (een) graaf.</i>	A. <i>graven.</i>

## Neuter.

N. <i>Het (een) hart</i>	N. <i>De harten</i>
G. <i>des (eens) harten</i>	G. <i>der harten</i>
D. <i>den, het (eenen, een) hart(e)</i>	D. <i>den harten</i>
A. <i>het (een) hart.</i>	A. <i>de harten.</i>

## Exercises.

17.

Decline:

De vorst, een getuige, de lepel, een boompje, de pen, eene moeder, het dorp, het boompje.

18.

Form the plural of:

De avond, het boek, de bruigom, de bek, de bezem, de beeltenis, de beurs, het boord, de bankier, de Christen, de dorpsheer, de dokter, de dronk, de eega, de engel, het goed, de guinje, de gierigaard, de genceesheer, de hond, de herbergier, het huis, de hoek, het hoofd, het jaar, de krekkel, de kok, de koning, de knecht, de koetsier, de lauwer, het lucifertje, de mond, de matroos, de medicijnkist, de misdaad, de maaltijd, de nacht, de heer, de gastheer, de hertog, de prins, de keten, de duif, het lam, het rund, het gemoed, het lied, de luiaard, het huisje, de loods, het einde, het huis, het gebergte, de klinker, de maat, de medeklinker, de muis, het ongeval, de profeet, de plaats, het paard, de paus, de patient, het plan, de ra, de reiziger, de rekening, de rivier, het rijtuig, de rots, de schat, de steen, de schouwburg, de stokslag, het studeervertrek, het stuk, de straat, de sterveling, de tuin, de turf, de twist, de tak, de vaandrig, de vla, de vrouw, de vorst, het volk, de vinger, de vrek, de vader, de winter, de wind, het wonder, de zomer, de zweep, de zeilpartij.

## Eleventh Lesson. Elfde Les.

[*elfde les.*]

## De twist.

Twee kleine jongens hadden eene noot gevonden en raakten daarover hevig aan 't twisten. — „Zij is voor mij“, zeide een hunner; „want ik heb haar het eerst gezien.“ — „Nee, zij behoort mij“, sprak de andere; „ik heb haar het

eerst opgeraapt.“ — Zij werden handgemeen, toen een derde jongen, die getuige was van den twist tot hen zeide: „Kom, ik zal uwen twist beslechten“. — Hij plaatste zich tusschen de beide jongens, kraakte de noot en zeide: „Een der doppen behoort hem, die de noot het eerst gezien heeft, de andere is voor hem, die ze 't eerst heeft opgeraapt. Wat de pit aangaat, die houd ik voor 't vellen van het vonnis. — De beide kleine jongens waren nog niet van hune verbazing bekomen, toen de rechter, in zijne hooge wijsheid, de noot reeds had opgegeten. Zij begrepen nu dat men niets wint met twisten.

*Twist* [trɪst] (m.) quarrel  
*jongen* [jɔŋən] boy  
*eene noot* [enə not] a nut  
*dop* [dɒp] (m.) shell  
*pit* [pɪt] (f.) kernel  
*een vonnis vellen* [en vɒnɪs vɛləŋ]  
 to pronounce sentence  
*verbazing* [vɛrbazɪŋ] astonish-  
 ment  
*rechter* [rɛxtər] judge  
*wijsheid* [vɛɪshɛɪt] wisdom  
*twee* [tre] two  
*hevig* [hevɪx] passionate(ly)  
*een hunner* [en hʏnər] one of  
 them  
*het eerst* [hət ɛrst] first  
*derde* [dɛrdə] third  
*de beide jongens* [də beɪdə jɔŋənz]  
 the two boys

*daarover* [darovər] about it  
*neen* [nɛn] no  
*tusschen* [tʏsən] between  
*reeds* [rɛts] already  
*raken* [rakən] to begin  
*twisten* [trɪstən] to quarrel  
*behooren* [bəhorən] to belong  
*oprapen* [ɒprapən] to pick up  
*handgemeen worden* [handgəmən  
 vɔrdən] to come to blows  
*beslechten* [bəslɛxtən] to settle  
*plaatsen* [plɑtsən] to put  
*kraken* [krakən] to crack  
*wat . . . aangaat* [vət . . . ʌŋɡat]  
 concerning, as to (for)  
*bekomen van* [bəkomən vən] to  
 recover from

- \* *vinden* [vɪndən] to find: ik vind, ik vond, ik heb gevonden
- \* *spreken* [sprɛkən] to speak: ik spreek, ik sprak, ik heb gesproken
- \* *begrijpen* [bəgrɪpən] to understand: ik begrijp, ik begreep, ik heb begrepen
- \* *winnen* [vɪnən] to win: ik win, ik won, ik heb gewonnen.

### Conversation.

Wat deden de jongens nadat zij eene noot gevonden hadden  
 (after having found a nut)? Zij . . .  
 Waarom wilde de eerste de noot voor zich houden?  
 Wat meende de andere?  
 Hoe eindigde de twist?  
 Wat zeide de derde jongen, die getuige was van den twist?  
 Waar plaatste deze zich?  
 Wat zeide hij, toen hij de noot kraakte?  
 Wat hield hij voor het vellen van het vonnis?  
 Had de rechter de noot spoedig (soon) opgegeten?  
 (Ja, nog voordat . . . Yes, even before . . .)  
 Wat begrepen zij nu?

## The Noun. (Continued.)

### Additional Remarks on the Plural.

§ 205. Several nouns have a double form of the Plural, with a difference in meaning however:

<i>broeders</i> brothers	<i>broederen</i> brethren
<i>dochters</i> daughters	<i>dochteren</i> (f.) descendants
<i>heidens</i> gipsies	<i>heidenen</i> heathens
<i>hemels</i> testers	<i>hemelen</i> heavens
<i>knechts</i> servants	<i>knechten</i> slaves or (fig.) lans- quenets
<i>letters</i> letters	<i>letteren</i> letter, literature
<i>tafels</i> tables	<i>tafelen</i> ( <i>der wet</i> ) the tables of the law
<i>vaders</i> fathers	<i>vaderen</i> forefathers
<i>waters</i> rivers	<i>wateren</i> flood or sorts of water
<i>wortels</i> roots, (also fig.)	<i>wortelen</i> carrots
<i>zonen</i> ( <i>zonen</i> ) sons	<i>zonen</i> (m.) descendants
<i>benen</i> legs	<i>beenderen</i> bones (collective)
<i>bladen</i> leaves of a book, sheets, blades, flaps of a table, newspapers	<i>bladeren</i> leaves of a tree
<i>kleeden</i> cloths (table, floor)	<i>kleederen, kleeen</i> clothes.

§ 206. The Diminutives (ending in *je*, *pje* or *tje*) generally take *s* in the Plural: *het huisje*, *de huisjes*; *het boompje* little tree, *de boompjes*. A few neuter nouns take *er* before the diminutive-ending: *het eitje*, *de eitjes* or *eiertjes*; *het blaadje*, *de blaadjes* or *bladertjes*; *het hoentje*, *de hoentjes* or *hoendertjes*; *het lammetje*, *de lammetjes* or *lammertjes*; *het radje*, *de raadjes* or *radertjes*.

The Plural for *kindje* is *kindertjes*. Cf.: *kleedjes* = table centres, cloths and *kleertjes* = children's clothes.

§ 207. Some nouns change their vowel in the Pl.:

*lid* member, *leden*: *gelid* joint, rank, *gelederen*;  
*ooglid* eye-lid, *oogleden*; *schip* ship, *schepen*; *smid*  
smith, *smeden*; *stad* town, *steden*;  
*vloo* flea, *vlooien*; *koe* cow, *koeien*; *kleinood* gem,  
*kleinoodiën* (also *kleinooden*). *sieraad* ornament,  
*sieradiën* (also *sieraden*);

all nouns ending in **-heid** change **heid** into  
**-heden**: *de gelegenheid* the opportunity, *de  
gelegenheden*; *de goedheid* kindness, *de goedheden*;  
the word **man** has in the Pl.: a) **mannen**,  
b) **man**, if preceded by a numeral: **honderd**

(a hundred) *man*, c) *lieden* or *lui* in compounds denoting an office or profession: *de staatsman* statesman, *de staatslieden*; *de timmerman* carpenter, *de timmerlieden* or *timmerlui*; *de landman* farmer, *de landlieden* or *landlui*;

the following words, having a short vowel in the S., change this into a long vowel in the Pl. without doubling the final consonant:

with [a]:	<i>het bad</i> bath,	[a]:	<i>de baden</i>
	<i>het blad</i> leaf,		<i>de bladen</i>
	<i>de dag</i> day,		<i>de dagen</i>
	<i>het dak</i> roof,		<i>de daken</i>
	<i>het dal</i> dale,		<i>de dalen</i>
	<i>het gat</i> hole		<i>de gaten</i>
	<i>het glas</i> glass,		<i>de glazen</i>
	<i>het pad</i> path,		<i>de paden</i>
	<i>het rad</i> wheel,		<i>de raden</i>
	<i>de slag</i> blow,		<i>de slagen</i>
	<i>het rat</i> cask.		<i>de raten</i> ;
with [ɛ]:	<i>het berel</i> order.	[e]:	<i>de bevelen</i>
	<i>het spel</i> game,		<i>de spelen</i> ;
with [ɔ]:	<i>het hol</i> cavern,	[o]:	<i>de hollen</i>
	<i>het lot</i> lot,		<i>de loten</i>
	<i>de god</i> god,		<i>de goden</i>
	<i>de afgod</i> idol,		<i>de afgoden</i>
	<i>het slot</i> lock,		<i>de sloten</i> .

§ 208. As in English some words are used in the Pl. only:

<i>gelieren</i> lovers	<i>lieden</i> people
<i>goederen</i> goods	<i>mazelen</i> measles
<i>hersens</i> brains	<i>onkosten</i> cost
<i>ingewanden</i> entrails	<i>oulers</i> parents
<i>inkomsten</i> revenue	<i>pokken</i> small-pox
<i>kosten</i> expenses	<i>vooroulers</i> ancestors
<i>levensmiddelen</i> victuals	&c.

Also the geographical names: *de Antillen*, *de Apennijnen*, *de Ardennen*, *de Balearen*, *de Cycladen*, *de Kurpathen*, *de Pyrenecën*, &c.

**Note.** The following English plural-forms have a singular-form in Dutch:

arms <i>wapen(en)</i>	embers <i>gloeïende</i> (glowing) <i>asch</i>
ashes <i>koude</i> (cold) <i>asch</i>	billiards <i>biljartspel</i>
compasses <i>passer</i>	contents <i>inhoud</i> (m.)

dregs <i>grondsop</i> , <i>bezinksel</i>	spectacles <i>bril</i>
nutcrackers <i>notenkraker</i>	stairs <i>trap</i>
oats <i>haver</i>	thanks <i>dank</i>
pincers <i>nijptang</i>	tidings <i>tijding</i>
riches <i>rijkdom</i>	tongs <i>tang</i>
scissors <i>schaar</i>	trousers <i>broek</i> , <i>pantalon</i>
snuffers <i>snuiter</i>	wages <i>loon</i> .

§ 209. In the S. only are used: a) the names of materials: *melk* milk, *azijn* vinegar, *vleesch* meat; — *drie vleezen* = three courses of meat; b) the abstract nouns (s. § 210): *gehoorzaamheid* obedience, *verdriet* sorrow; c) nouns denoting **number**, **weight**, **measure** or **value**: *twee riem papier* two reams of paper, *acht gros pennen* eight gross of pens, *drie vat bier* three barrels of beer, *tien pond suiker* ten pounds of sugar, *vier el laken* four yards of cloth, *rijf paar kousen* five pair of stockings, *twintig gulden* twenty guilders, *vijf stuiver* five pence.

The rule for the difference in meaning between *pence* and *pennies* holds good for the Dutch **cent** and **centen**, cf.:

*zeestig cent* = one shilling, *zeestig centen* = 60 pieces of 1 cent; *tien pond suiker* = 10 p. of s., *tien ponden* = 10 separate portions of 1 p. each; *twintig gulden* = 20 guilders, *twintig guldens* = 20 pieces of 1 guilder.

**Note 1.** The following Engl. singular-forms are used in Dutch in the Pl.:

business <i>zaak</i> , <i>zaken</i>	progress <i>ordering(en)</i>
furniture <i>meubelen</i>	property <i>bezitting(en)</i>
information <i>inlichtingen</i>	small-pox <i>pokken</i>
knowledge <i>kennis</i> , <i>kundigheden</i>	strength <i>kracht(en)</i> .

**Note 2.** The names of sciences ending in *ics* have no plural-form in Dutch: mathematics *wiskunde*, mechanics *werktuigkunde*, physics *natuurkunde*, &c.

§ 210. Abstract nouns have no plural as a rule; however some of them take as their plurals, the plurals of words allied in meaning: *aanbod* offer, *aanbiedingen*; *bedrog* deception, *bedriegerijen*; *doel* aim, *doeleinden*; *eer* honour, *eerbewijzen*; *gedrag* behaviour, *gedragingen*; *genot* enjoyment, *genietingen*; *kennis* knowledge, *kundigheden* (*kennis* = friends); *leer* doctrine, *leringen*, *leerstukken*, *leerstellingen*; *oordeel* judgment, *oordeelstellingen*, *beoor-*



*deelingen*; *raad* counsel, *raadgevingen*; *roof* plunder, *rooverijen*; *troost* consolation, *vertroostingen*; *twijfel* hesitation, *twijfelingen*; *wanorde* disorder, *wanordelijkheden*: *zegen* blessing, *zegeningen*.

### Declension of Proper Nouns and foreign words.

§ 211. As regards the declension of **Proper Nouns** and **foreign words** the following should be noticed:

The Saxon Genetive in Dutch is formed by adding **s** to the word; words ending in **s** or **œ** take an apostrophe only. If the final letter is a vowel, **'s** is added. except when the vowel is **ie** or the unaccented **e**. Examples:

*Willems vader*, *Nederlands dichters*, *Floris' zoon*; *Beatrix' moeder*, *Maria's boek*, *Cicero's werken*, *Maries armbanden*, *Karolines boek*.

The Plural of proper names is formed by means of **s**, except those ending in **s**, **sch** or **st**, which take **(e)n**: *de Willems*, *de Maartens*, *de De Witts*, *de Cornelissen*, *de De Vriezen*. Names of nations take **en**, those ending in **er** take **s**, those ending in **aar** take **s** or **en**: *Belg* Belgian, *Belgen*; *Deen* Dane, *Denen*; *Noor* Norwegian, *Noren*; *Portugees* Portuguese, *Portugeezen*; *Rus* Russian, *Russen*; *Zweed* Swede, *Zweden*; — *Amsterdammer*, *Amsterdammers* people of Amsterdam; *Rotterdammer*, *Rotterdammers* people of Rotterdam; — *Londenaar*, *Londenaars* or *Londenaren* people of London; *Gouwenaar*, *Gouwenaars* or *Gouvenaren* people of Gouda. Compound words with **man** take **en** (**n** of **man** is doubled), or if the first part is an adjective, the word **man** is dropped and **en** added to the adjective: *Noorman* Norman, *Noormannen*; *Muzelman* Mussulman, *Muzelmannen*; — *een Engelschman*, *Franschman*, *Geldersman* an Englishman, a Frenchman, a Gueldrian; *tien Engelschen*, *Franschen*, *Gelderschen*; *de Engelschen*, *Franschen*, *Gelderschen*.

Most foreign words take **s** in the Pl.: *de dame* lady, *de dames*; *de korporaal* corporal, *de kor-*

*poraals; de sergeant, de sergeants; de kapitein captain, de kapiteins; de officier, de officiers; de professor, de professors.* In elevated style **en** is often used: *de officieren, de professoren.* Inanimate things in **ier, eur, oor** always take **en**: *het vizier vizier, de vizieren; het humeur temper, de humeuren; het kwispedoor spittoon, cuspidor, de kwispedoren.*

Proper nouns and foreign words ending in an accented vowel take **'s** in the Pl.: *de collega's colleagues, de sofa's, de canapé's, de motto's, de bureau's.* Except those in **ie**: *Maries, bougies, tralies*: also those with unaccented **e**: *Adelines, Lines, horloges watches, diligences stage-coaches.*

Latin words ending in **ius** and **ium** generally drop **us** or **um** before the plural ending **en**: *de genius, de gewiën; het gymnasium, de gymnasiën or gymnasia.*

### Exercises.

#### 19.

Write down the simple tenses of:

raken, twisten, behooren;

also the compound tenses of:

oprapen (*separable*), beslechten, plaatsén, kraken.

#### 20.

Write down the Plural of:

De twist, de jongen, de noot, de dop, de pit, het vonnis, de rechter, het lid, het gelid, het eitje, het blaadje, het ooglid, het schip, het hoentje, het lammetje, de smid, het diertje, de stad, de vloot, het sieraad, de koe, de wijsheid, de goedheid, de timmerman, de landman, de gelegenheid, de staatsman, de koopman, de heldendaad, de collega, de bougie, de genius, het horloge, de canapé, het gymnasium, het bureau, de sofa, de tralie, het werk, de dichter.

#### 21.

Write down the S. and the Pl. of:

aim, bath, behaviour, blessing, blow, cask, cavern, consolation, counsel, dale, day, deception, disorder, enjoyment, game, glass, god, hesitation, hole, honour, idol, judgment, knowledge, leaf, doctrine, lock, lot, order, path, plunder, wheel.

## 22.

Translate :

Broederen, beenderen, bladeren, dochteren, heidenen, hemelen, kleederen, knechten, letteren, tafelen, vaderen, wateren, wortelen, zonen, kleertjes, broeders, beenen, bladen, dochters, heidens, hemels, kleeden, knechts, letters, tafels, vaders, waters, wortels, zoons, kleedjes.

## 23.

Translate: ancestors, Apennines, arms, ashes, brains, business, Balearic Isles, Belgians, billiards, clothes, charges, compasses, contents, Danes, dregs, entrails, Englishman, the English, expenses, embers, furniture, Frenchman, the French, goods, information, knowledge, lovers, mathematics, measles, Mussulman, mechanics, nutcrackers, Normans, oats, parents, people, progress, pincers, property, physics, the Portuguese, Pyrenees, revenue, riches, Russians, small-pox, scissors, strength, snuffers, Swedes, spectacles, stairs, thanks, tidings, tongs, trousers, victuals, wages, captains, corporals, colleagues, genii, gymnasiums, ladies, officers, professors, sergeants, stage-coaches, tempers, viziers, watches, ten pence, five guilders, four yards of cloth, ten pounds of sugar, twenty reams of paper, two barrels of beer, sixty cents.

## Twelfth Lesson. Twaalfde Les.

[*twaalfde les.*]

### De bediende en zijn meester.

Een rijk Engelschman zit aan tafel. Hij neemt het brood op, dat de knecht hem gebracht heeft, en zegt toen op strengen toon: „Thompson, ik heb u verscheidene malen beknord, omdat gij mij oudbakken brood bij mijn middageten gebracht hebt. Hoe komt het dat ge mij nu weer oudbakken brengt?”

Thompson antwoordt op deftigen en eerbiedigen toon: „Waarlijk, mijnheer, ik weet niet meer hoe ik 't aanleggen moet. Het oudbakken brood kan toch niet weggegooid worden, wel?”

„Zeker niet, maar me dunkt dat de bedienden dat wel konden eten.”

„Wij eten alleen versch brood in de keuken”, antwoordde Thompson.

<i>Zijn meester</i> [ <i>zijn meester</i> ] his	<i>maal, keer</i> [ <i>mal, ker</i> ] (f.) time
<i>master</i>	<i>het middageten</i> [ <i>het mid-a-reten</i> ]
<i>brood</i> [ <i>brot</i> ] bread	<i>dinner</i>
<i>toon</i> [ <i>toon</i> ] (m.) tone, voice	<i>keuken</i> [ <i>koken</i> ] (f.) kitchen

<i>rijk</i> [rɛik] rich	<i>omdat</i> [ɔmdat] because
<i>verscheidene</i> [vɛrsɛidənə] several	<i>bij</i> [bei] with
<i>deftig</i> [dɛftɪk] grave	<i>weer</i> [vɛr] again
<i>eerbiedig</i> [ɛrbidɪk] respectful	<i>hoe</i> [hu] how
<i>oudbakken</i> [ɔudbakən] stale	<i>wel</i> [vɛl] well
<i>vers</i> [vɛrs] new	<i>maar</i> [mar] but
<i>waarlijk</i> [vɑrlɪk] truly	<i>alleen</i> [alɛn] only
<i>zeker</i> [zɛkər] certainly	<i>beknorrēn</i> [bɛknɔrən] to scold
<i>toen</i> [tun] then	<i>aanleggen</i> [anlɛgən] to manage
<i>op strengen toon</i> [ɔp strɛŋən tun]	<i>mij</i> (me) <i>dunkt</i> [mɛi (mɛ) dɪŋkt]
in . . .	me thinks
* <i>zitten</i> [zɪtən] to sit: <i>ik zit, ik zat, ik heb (ben) gezeten</i>	
* <i>opnemen</i> [ɔpnɛmən] to take up: <i>ik neem op, ik nam op, ik heb opgenomen</i>	
* <i>wegwerpen</i> [vɛrvɛrɪpən] to throw away: <i>ik werp weg, ik wierp weg, ik heb weggegoorpen.</i>	

## Conversation.

*Wie zit aan tafel?*  
*Wat zegt de meester op strengen toon tot zijn knecht?*  
*Wat wil hij weten? Hoe het komt, dat . . .*  
*Hoe en wat antwoordt Thompson?*  
*Wat kan niet weggeworpen worden?*  
*Wat mernde de meester van Thompson?*  
*Wat antwoordde de laatste (the latter)?*

## The Adjective. *Het Bijvoegelijk* [bɛivɔgɛlɪk] naamwoord.

## Declension.

§ 212. In Dutch an Adjective or Past Participle may be used: a) attributively or predicatively, b) as a noun. When used substantively the Adjective follows the same rules for the declension as those for nouns ending in *e* (s. § 201).

## Examples.

## Masculine.

Singular.	Plural.
N. ( <i>de, een</i> ) <i>blind</i> <b>e</b> the (a) blind	N. ( <i>de</i> ) <i>blinden</i> the blind or
G. ( <i>des, eens</i> ) <i>blinden</i> [man	G. ( <i>der</i> ) , [the blind men
D. ( <i>den, een</i> ) <i>blinde</i>	D. ( <i>den, de</i> ) ,
A. ( <i>den, een</i> ) <i>blinde</i> .	A. ( <i>de</i> ) ,

## Feminine.

N. ( <i>de, eene</i> ) <i>blind</i> <b>e</b> the (a) blind	N. ( <i>de</i> ) <i>blinden</i> the blind or the
G. ( <i>der, eener</i> ) , [woman	G. ( <i>der</i> ) , [blind women
D. ( <i>de, eene</i> ) ,	D. ( <i>den, de</i> ) ,
A. ( <i>de, eene</i> ) ,	A. ( <i>de</i> ) ,

## Neuter.

N. *Het goede*

G. (not used)

Not used.

D. *het goede*A. *het goede*.

The prep. Genetive with **van** is generally used for the Masc. and Fem.; it is always used for the Neuter: *van den blinde, van de blinde, van het goede*.

§ 213. Declension of an Adjective preceding the noun.

	Singular.		Plural.
Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.	M. F. N.
N. <i>goede, goed</i>	<i>goede</i>	<i>goede, goed</i>	<i>goede</i>
G. <i>goeden</i>	,	<i>goeden</i>	<i>goede</i>
D. <i>goeden</i>	,	<i>goeden</i>	<i>goeden</i>
A. <i>goeden, goed</i>	,	<i>goede, goed</i>	<i>goede</i> .

§ 214. It should be noticed that:

Instead of the Gen. **van** is generally used: *van den grooten man, van de goede vrouw, van het kleine kind, van goede mannen, vrouwen, kinderen*; also *van eenen grooten man, van eene goede vrouw, van een klein kind*. The circumlocution with **van** must be used, when the adjective is not preceded by an article or a pronoun: *van goede eieren, van oud brood*.

Adjectives not preceded by any word or preceded by the indefinite article or by a possessive pronoun are left unchanged in the N., D. and A.: *goed brood, een goed boek, mijn oud huis*. Cf.: *het goede brood, het goede boek, het oude huis*. The **Superlatives** and the **Ordinal Numbers**, however, take **e**: *hun beste boek, ons kleinste huis, dit tweede hoofdstuk* (chapter).

Adjectives preceding masculine nouns drop the ending **e** in the N., D. and A., if they are used with **een** and the quality refers to the profession; cf.: *een groote man* a tall man, *een groot man* a great man; *een goede koning* a true-hearted king, *een goed koning* good as a king; *een slechte jager* a hunter with a bad character, *een slecht jager* a bad sportsman.

The old genitive-ending *s* of the Neuter remains in the Partitive-Genitive, if indefinite pronouns or numerals precede: *iets moois* something pretty, *niets slechts* nothing bad, *wat aangenaams* something agreeable, *weinig nieuws* little news.

§ 215. The following Adjectives remain unchanged:

The Adjectives used predicatively: *dit huis is groot, oud, hoog*.

Those ending in *en*: *het gouden horloge, de zilveren lepel, de ijzeren vork* the iron fork, *gesloten brieven* closed letters.

Those ending in *er*, derived from the name of a place: *De Haarlemmerhout* the Harlem wood, *Neurenberger waren* Nurenberg articles.

**Rechter** and **linker**: *de rechter of linker zijde* the right or left side.

**Note.** These words form a compound word with the following substantive:

<i>linkerarm</i>	left arm,	<i>rechterarm</i>	right arm
<i>linkerbeen</i>	» leg,	<i>rechterbeen</i>	» leg
<i>linkerhand</i>	» hand,	<i>rechterhand</i>	» hand
<i>linkerkant</i>	» side,	<i>rechterkant</i>	» side.

Generally for euphonic reasons the dissyllabic or polysyllabic adjectives in *en* and the trisyllabic or polysyllabic comparatives: *verheven* (dignified) *woorden*, *verhevener* (more d.) *woorden*, *dapperder* (more courageous) *mannen*.

### Exercises.

#### 24.

Decline a) in the S. and Pl.:

*de goede vader, de oude moeder, het kleine kind, mijn groote tuin, uwe slechte pen, zijn oud huis;*

b) in the S.:

*goede wijn, slechte vrucht, oud brood, het kwade;*

c) in the S. and Pl.:

*eene arme, eene rijke (Pl. de armen, de rijken).*

#### 25.

Translate: The death of the old woman. No sleeping dogs. The bill of the sly host. One single egg. In a large village-inn. Eggs are scarce. During (*Gedurende*) the whole

day and the whole night. The treasure of the unhappy miser. A miserable stone. You would not have your great treasure. The miser was poor. The servants of a young and very proud nobleman. They spoke about (*over*) the friendly offer. The study of a learned man. The learned man wrote large books. The dog swam across the large river. How great was his astonishment! We go to (*naar*) a distant quarter. The physician of an English ship. He was drowned in his own medicine-chest. He communicated it to the man. He lived in everlasting fear. That boy was (a) witness. Those boys were witnesses of the quarrel. He placed himself between the quarrelling (boys). The little boys saw the nut. In his great wisdom. The stale bread. The stolen meat. At the right side. With the left hand and foot. Much good. Nothing new. He saw it with his right eye. Nuremberg toys (*speelgoed*).

## Thirteenth Lesson. Dertiende Les.

[*dertinde les.*]

### Lodewijk de Veertiende en Puget.

De beroemde beeldhouwer Puget beklagde zich eens bij den markies de Louvois, dat hij niet tevreden was met den prijs, dien de koning hem voor zijne standbeelden betaald had.

De minister sprak er met den koning over; Lodewijk de Veertiende antwoordde den minister: „Puget moest zich ook duidelijker verklaren en nauwkeurig opgeven wat hij hebben moet“. Louvois drong bij den beeldhouwer aan hem den juiste prijs op te geven.

Puget vroeg eene zeer aanzienlijke som.

„Maar de koning betaalt niet meer aan de generaals zijner legers“, hernam de minister.

„Dat kan wel zoo wezen“, antwoordde Puget, „de koning weet echter zeer goed, dat hij zeer gemakkelijk bekwame generaals vinden kan onder tal van uitmuntende officieren, die hij bij zijne troepen heeft; maar er zijn in Frankrijk niet vele Pugets.“

Lodewijk de Veertiende [*lodavrik de vertinde*] Lewis the Fourteenth

beeldhouwer [*belthouwer*] sculptor

markies [*markis*] marquis

prijs [*preis*] (m.) price

het standbeeld [*het standbelt*] statue

som [*sum*] (f.) sum

generaal [*genraal*] general

het leger [*het legər*] the army

Frankrijk [*frankrik*] France

beroemd [*barumd*] celebrated

tevreden [*terredən*] contented

duidelijk [*døytslek*] clear(ly)

nauwkeurig [*naukorər*] exact(ly)

juist [*jøyst*] exactly [able]

aanzienlijk [*anzinlijk*] consider-

<i>gemakkelijk</i> [gəmakələk] easy,	<i>zeer</i> [zer] very
<i>easily</i>	<i>met</i> [mɛt] with
<i>bekwaam</i> [bəkram] capable	<i>beklagen</i> , <i>zich</i> [z. bəklagən] —
<i>uitmuntend</i> [œytmuntənt] excel-	to complain
<i>veel</i> [vel] much, many	<i>betalen</i> [bətalən] to pay
<i>onder tal van</i> [ʊndər tal van]	<i>verklaren</i> [vərklərən] to explain,
among a great number of	<i>zich</i> — to explain oneself

\* *opgeren* [ʊpgərən] to declare: *ik geef op*, *ik gaf op*, *ik heb opgegeven*

\* *aandringen* [andrɪŋən] to insist: *ik dring aan*, *ik drong aan*, *ik heb aangedrongen*.

### Conversation.

*Wie bekluaagde zich bij den markies de Louvois?*

*Waarover bekluaagde hij zich?*

*Wat zeide Lodewijk XIV tot den minister, die er over gesproken had?*

*Waarop drong Louvois aan?*

*Wat vroeg Puget?*

*Wat hernam de minister?*

*Hoe luiddde (was) het antwoord van Puget?*

### The Adjective. (Continued.)

Degrees of Comparison. *Trappen van Vergelijking.*

§ 216. There are three degrees of comparison: the **Positive** *de stellende trap*, the **Comparative** *de vergelijkende trap*, and the **Superlative** *de overtreffende trap*.

§ 217. The **Comparative** is formed by adding (*e*)*r* to the Positive: *groot* — *groo**ter***, *hoog* — *hoog**er***, *blijde* — *blijd**er***, *bloede coy* — *bloed**er***. If the Positive ends in *r*, the letter *d* is inserted: *ver* — *verd**er***, *zwaar* heavy — *zwaard**er***.

For change of letters see Book I.

§ 218. The **Superlative** is formed by adding *st* to the Positive: *groot* — *groot**st***, *hoog* — *hoog**st***.

If the Positive ends in *e* this letter is dropped: *blijde* — *blijd**st***, *bloede* — *blood**st***.

If the Positive ends in *s* or *sch*, *t* only is added: *wijs* wise — *wij**st***, *frisch* — *frisch**t***.

§ 219. For the sake of euphony the Comp. and the Superl. are often expressed by *meer* more and *meest* most. This is always done in the Superl., if the Positive ends in *st*: *vast* firm — *meest vast*, *juist* exact — *meest juist*.



§ 220. Some Superlatives are formed from Adverbs but are used as Adjectives: *achterst* (*achter*) hindermost, *benedenst* (*beneden*) lowest, *binnenst* (*binnen*) inmost, *borenst* (*boren*) uppermost, *buitenst* (*buiten*) outmost, *onderst* (*onder*) undermost, *voorst* (*voor*) foremost.

§ 221. The Positives *goed*, *veel*, *weinig* have adverbial forms in the Comp. and Superl.:

*goed*, *beter*, *best* = good, better, best

*veel*, *meer*, *meest* = much (many), more, most

*weinig* = little, *minder* = less, *minst* = least.

**Note.** *Kwaad* = bad, ill: *erger*, *ergst* (from *erg*);  
*kwaad* = angry: *kicader*, *kwaadst*.

§ 222. Some Adjectives with an absolute meaning are sometimes used in the Superl. in a figurative sense: *de volmaaktste rust* the most complete rest, *het volste glas* the fullest glass.

§ 223. Participles admit of degrees of comparison, if they have become real Adjectives (they have the accent on the root of the verb): *een welsprekender man* a more eloquent man, *de welsprekendste man* the most eloquent man; also: *uitstekend* excellent, *innemend* charming, *ingenómen* pleased at. The Participles *úitstekend*, *innemend*, *ingenomen* do not admit of degrees of comparison.

§ 224. In English the Comparative is often used, where the Dutch language requires the Superlative: *de jongste der beide broeders* the younger of the two brothers; cf.: *Scipio de Jongere*.

§ 225. Sometimes the Comparative expresses a contrast only: *hooger en lager onderwijs* academic and primary instruction, *het Lagerhuis en het Hoogerhuis* the House of Commons and the House of Lords.

§ 226. The Superlative is often strengthened by **aller**:

*aardig* nice — *aardigst*, *alleraardigst* very nice;

*lief* lovely — *liefst*, *allertiefst* most lovely;

*treurig* sad — *treurigst*, *allertreurigst* most sad;

*belangrijk* important — *belangrijkst*, *allerbelangrijkst* of the utmost importance.

§ 227. If the Positive is a compound word the endings are added to the last part:

*bouwvallig* decayed — *bouwvalliger*, *bouwvalligst*;  
*vrijmoedig* bold, free — *vrijmoediger*, *vrijmoedigst*;  
*weldadig* charitable — *weldadiger*, *weldadigst*.

§ 228. The degrees of *goedkoop* cheap are: *goedkooper*, *goedkoopst*: we also find the forms: *beterkoop* and *bestkoop* used as Adjectives, though they are adverbs and should be used as such only.

§ 229. Note: 1. *Hij is zoo groot als ik* = he is as tall as I; *hij is niet zoo groot als ik* = he is not so tall as I.

2. *Hij is grooter dan ik* = he is taller than I; *hij is minder groot dan ik* = he is less tall than I.

3. *Hij is eerder vlug dan vlijtig* = he is sharp rather than industrious.

4. *Zij zijn hoogst gelukkig* = they are most happy.

§ 230. Superlatives used predicatively are in Dutch preceded by the article: *De mensch is in zijn jeugd het gelukkigst* man is happiest in his youth, *de Schelde is hier het diepst* the Scheldt is deepest here.

### Exercises.

#### 26.

Write down the Comparative and Superlative of:

Arm, aanzienlijk, bedroefd, begerlijk, bemind, belangrijk, bouwvallig, beroemd, blijde, bekwaam, bloode, deftig, duidelijk, ellendig, frisch, goedkoop, goed, geleerd, gemakkelijk, gierig, hoog, handig, hevig, innemend, ingenomen, jong, juist, koel, klein, lief, nauwkeurig, oud, ongelukkig, ongesteld, schaarsch, trotsch, treurig, tevreden, uitmuntend, uitstekend, vlijtig, vergenoegd, vrijmoedig, veel, vriendelijk, wijs, wakker, weinig, welsprekend, weldadig, woedend, zeker, zuiver, zwaar.

#### 27.

His sister is a tall and beautiful lady. Tell was no bad sportsman. The king is a good father. We go to London with the Flushing (*Vlissingen*—*Vlissinger*) boat. Do you go with the Amsterdam boat? My most beloved friend goes with me. In the wood we enjoyed the greatest rest. The upper part of the house is decayed. The younger of these two boys is ill (*ziek*). This fact (*feit*) is of the utmost importance. He goes with a Rotterdam boat to New-York. We have seen the House of Commons and the House of Lords. That village is most lovely. Are you as tall as

your brother? No I am much taller than he. That man is more clever than learned. Schoolbooks (*Schoolboeken*) are cheaper than novels (*romans*). This room is extremely large. Where is the (river) Thames (*Theems*) broadest? The miser was less happy than rich. Be contented and you will be happier than the richest (man).

## Fourteenth Lesson. Vertiende Les.

[*vertiende les.*]

### De twaalf maanden van het jaar.

De maanden van het jaar zijn: Januari, Februari, Maart, April, Mei, Juni, Juli, Augustus, September, October, November en December. Januari, Maart, Mei, Juli, Augustus, October en December hebben een en dertig dagen. April, Juni, September en November hebben dertig dagen. Februari heeft in een gewoon jaar acht en twintig, in een schrikkeljaar negen en twintig dagen.

December, Januari en Februari zijn de wintermaanden; Maart, April en Mei de lentemaanden; Juni, Juli en Augustus de zomermaanden; September, October en November de herfstmaanden.

Iedere maand heeft hare eigenaardige bekoorlijkheden, maar toch zal menigeen aan de Mei maand met hare prachtige bloemen en aan de October maand met hare heerlijke vruchten de voorkeur geven; terwijl de kinderen vooral December als eene der prettigste maanden zullen beschouwen.

*Maand* [*mant*] (f.) *month*  
*het jaar* [*het jar*] *year*  
*schrikkeljaar* [*scrikeljar*] *leap-*  
*year*  
*bekoorlijkheid* [*bekorlekheit*]  
*charm*  
*de voorkeur geven (aan)* [*de vor-*  
*kor geven an*] *to prefer* . . . (to)  
*gewoon* [*gevon*] *common*

*eigenaardig* [*eigendardig*] *peculiar*  
*prettig* [*pretig*] *merry*  
*dertig* [*dertig*] *thirty*  
*een en dertig* [*enendertig*] *thirty-*  
*one*  
*acht en twintig* [*achtentwintig*]  
*twenty-eight*  
*negen en twintig* [*negenentwintig*]  
*twenty-nine.*

### Conversation.

*Hoe heeten de maanden van het jaar?*

*Welke maanden hebben dertig en welke hebben een en dertig dagen?*

*Hooveel dagen heeft Februari?*

*Welke zijn de lente- en zomermaanden?*

*Welke de herfst- en wintermaanden?*

*Welke maanden worden door velen voor de schoonste gehouden?*

*In welke maand vieren vooral de kinderen feest?  
Op welken dag<sup>1</sup>?*

### The Verb. (Continued.)

Impersonal verbs. *Onpersoonlijke [unpersonlike] werkwwoorden.*

§ 231. Impersonal verbs are used in the Third Person S. only, with **het** as a grammatical subject.

§ 232. Impersonal are:

All verbs denoting the operations of nature:

<i>bliksemen</i> to lighten,	<i>het bliksemt</i>
<i>broeien</i> to brood,	<i>er broeit een onweer</i> a thunder-storm is gathering
<i>donderen</i> to thunder,	<i>het dondert</i>
<i>dooien</i> to thaw,	<i>het dooit</i>
<i>hagelen</i> to hail,	<i>het hagelt</i>
<i>ijzelen</i>	<i>het ijzelt</i> there is a glazed frost
<i>lichten</i> to lighten,	<i>het licht</i>
<i>misten</i> to be misty,	<i>het mist</i>
<i>nevelen</i> to be hazy,	<i>het nevelt</i>
<i>regenen</i> to rain,	<i>het regent</i>
<i>rijpen</i>	<i>het rijpt</i> it freezes with a hoar-
<i>schemeren</i> to gloam,	<i>het schemert</i> [frost]
<i>sneeuwen</i> to snow,	<i>het sneeuwt</i>
<i>stofregenen</i> to drizzle,	<i>het stofregent</i>
<i>vriezen</i> to freeze,	<i>het vriest</i>
<i>waaien</i> to blow, to be windy,	<i>het waait</i> the wind blows
<i>weerlichten</i> to lighten	<i>het weerlicht.</i>

The periphrastical expressions, denoting **weather**, **time**, or simply an action without mentioning the doer:

*het is winderig, nevelig, koud, warm, zacht, zwoel (zoel), drukkend, gloeiend heet, buig, ongestadig, onstuimig* it is windy, hazy, cold, warm, mild, sultry, close, broiling, showery, unsettled, stormy; — *het is laat, vroeg, avond, half zes* it is late, early, evening, half past five; — *het slaat, schijnt, houdt op* it strikes, seems, ceases; *er wordt gezegd* it is said; *er werd veel gezongen en gesprongen* there was much singing and dancing.

<sup>1</sup> St. Nicholas-day is celebrated in the Netherlands on the 5th of December. All sorts of presents are delivered in a mysterious manner by the good old Saint, who is said to have lived as a bishop of Lydia in the third century.

Some verbs which express a sentiment or an impression of the mind (*gevoelsaandoening*):

*het bedroeft, smart, verdriet mij* I am sorry

*het berouwt mij* I repent

*het doet mij leed* I am sorry

*het grieft mij* I am vexed

*het past mij* it becomes me

*het spijt mij* I am sorry, it vexes me

*het verheugt, verblijdt mij* I am glad

*het verveelt mij* it wearies me

*het walgt mij* it disgusts me

*mij dorst* I am thirsty

*mij hongert* I am hungry, &c.

General expressions, as:

*het gebeurt* it occurs

*het geschiedt* it happens

*het past, voegt, betaamt* it is proper, &c.,

and the great number of expressions with *het is*:

*het is billijk, rechtvaardig* it is just

*het is duidelijk* it is plain

*het is helder, klaar* it is clear

*het is natuurlijk* it is natural

*het is waar, zeker* it is true, certain, &c. &c.

§ 233. In English there are sentences as:

Those were happy days;

these are my books;

they are my brothers.

In Dutch they are rendered by:

*Dat waren gelukkige dagen;*

*dat zijn mijn boeken;*

*het zijn mijn broers.*

§ 234. *Er (daar) is, er (daar) zijn* are translated by there is, there are:

*Er zijn slechte mensen!* There are bad men!

*Wat voor nieuws is er?* What news?

*Er (daar) zijn er weinig, die dat weten!* There are but few who know that!

§ 235. Conjugation of an impersonal verb:

#### Infinitive.

Present.

*Sneeuwen* to snow.

Past.

*Gesneeuwd hebben* to have snowed.

**Participles.**

Present.

*Sneeuwend* snowing.

Past.

*Gesneeuwd* snowed.**Indicative.****Subjunctive.**

Present.

*Het sneeuwt* it snows.*Het sneeuwe* it snow.

Past.

*Het sneeuwde* it snowed.*Het sneeuwde* it snowed.

Present Perfect.

*Het heeft gesneeuwd* it has snowed.*Het hebbe gesneeuwd* it have snowed.

Pluperfect.

*Het had gesneeuwd* it had snowed.*Het hadde gesneeuwd* it had snowed.

Future.

*Het zal sneeuwen* it will snow.

Is wanting.

Future Perfect.

*Het zal gesneeuwd hebben* it will have snowed.

Is wanting.

Present Conditional.

*Het zou(de) sneeuwen* it would snow.*Het zoude sneeuwen* it would snow.

Past Conditional.

*Het zou(de) gesneeuwd hebben* it would have snowed.*Het zoude gesneeuwd hebben* it would have snowed.

§ 236. The impersonal verbs denoting an operation of nature are weak, except *vriezen*, which is strong: *het vriest* it freezes, *het vroom* it froze, *het heeft gevroom* or *gevrozen* it has frozen.

§ 237. Most verbs used impersonally, denoting a sentiment or an impression of the mind, govern the Accusative, a few the Dative:

Present.

Imperfect.

With Acc. { *het verheugt mij*  
*het verheugt hem*  
*het verheugt ons*  
*het verheugt u*  
*het verheugt hen*

*het verheugde mij*  
*het verheugde hem*  
*het verheugde ons*  
*het verheugde u*  
*het verheugde hen.*

With Dat.	<i>het doet mij leed</i>	<i>het deed mij leed</i>
	<i>het doet hem leed</i>	<i>het deed hem leed</i>
	<i>het doet ons leed</i>	<i>het deed ons leed</i>
	<i>het doet u leed</i>	<i>het deed u leed</i>
	<i>het doet hun leed</i>	<i>het deed hun leed.</i>

## Exercises.

28.

Conjugate *regnen, hagelen, misten.*

29.

Translate. In January and in December it is cold. In February it often snows. In March it is often stormy. In May it is not yet warm. In (the) summer it is generally too warm. It thundered and lightened yesterday. It was very foggy this morning. It is warm enough now. I am glad that it has not rained. It is natural, that it freezes in December. In which month does it freeze most (tr. the most)? In April the weather is unsettled, now it rains or hails or snows, now it is mild. Spring begins in March, summer in June, autumn in September and winter in December. There are many people, who do not know this. In which month are the apples ripe? Are there many apples and pears this year? Were there many bad men in his company (*gezelschap*)? Does it thaw now? No, it freezes again. I am very sorry that he leaves (*verlaat*) us. I am very glad that it freezes again (*weer*). It is very late already. There was much singing and dancing in the village. What o'clock is it? It is half past five.

## Fifteenth Lesson. Vijftiende Les.

[*vijftiende les.*]

## De eik.

Van alle boomen van ons vaderland onderscheidt zich de eik door zijn stevig, hard hout, zijn breede kruin en zijn knoestigen stam. Sedert overouden tijd is hij het zinnebeeld van mannelijke kracht, verheven rust en koninklijke waardigheid. Nog thans schenkt men eenen krans van frisch eikenloof aan den man, die door burgerdeugd uitblinkt.

Van zijn hout maakt men nuttige gereedschappen en gebruikt het tot den bouw van schepen en huizen. Na honderd en meer jaren is het vaak nog zoo vast en sterk als of het nieuw ware. De meubelmaker verwerkt het daarom tot schoone stoelen, tafels, kasten en schrijftafels. Behalve de

vruchtboomen is er geen boom zoo nuttig als de eik. De den, de linde, benevens den beuk en den olm, hebben geringere waarde dan hij.

De eik evenwel groeit slechts langzaam. Terwijl de populier binnen weinige jaren zeer hoog wordt, heeft hij eerst na zeer langen tijd zijn vollen wasdom bereikt.

*Kruin* [krɔɪn] (f.) top  
*stam* [stam] (m.) trunk, stem  
*het zinnebeeld* [het zɪnbɛlt]  
symbol

*kracht* [kraxt] (f.) strength  
*waardigheid* [vɑrdɔxheit] dignity  
*krans* [krans] (m.) wreath  
*het eikenloof* [het eɪknlɔf] oak-  
leaves

*burgerdeugd* [bɪrgərdɔxt] civic  
virtue  
*gereedschappen* [gɔrɛtsxapən]  
tools

*bouw* [buu] (m.) construction  
*meubelmaker* [mɔbɛlmakɛr] joiner  
*stoel* [stul] (m.) chair  
*kast* [kast] (f.) cupboard  
*schrijftafel* [sxrɛɪftafəl] writing-  
table

*waarde* [vɑrdɔ] (f.) value  
*van hout gemaakt* [vɑn hɔut ɣə-  
makt] made of wood

\* *schenken* [sxɛŋkən] to give: ik schenk, ik schonk, ik heb geschonken

\* *uitblinken* [ɔɛtblɪŋkən] to excel: ik blink uit, ik blonk uit, ik heb uitgeblonken.

**Note.** In Dutch *er* is often used as an expletive: *Behalve de vruchtboomen is er geen boom zoo nuttig als de eik. Er zijn er velen, die dat gelooven* there are many who believe that.

### Conversation.

*Waardoor onderscheidt zich de eik van andere boomen?*

*Waarvan is hij sedert overouden tijd het zinnebeeld?*

*Wat schenkt men nog thans aan den man, die door burgerdeugd uitblinkt?*

*Wat maakt men van zijn hout?*

*Blijft het eikenhout lang vast en sterk?*

*Waartoe verwerkt de meubelmaker dit hout?*

*Welke boomen zijn even nuttig als de eik?*

*Welke boomen hebben geringere waarde?*

*Hoe groeit de eik?*

*Wanneer heeft hij zijn vollen wasdom bereikt?*

*Groeit de populier ook langzaam?*

*sterig* [stɛrɛx] strong, solid  
*knoestig* [knɔstɛx] gnarled  
*overoud* [ɔvɔrɔut] very ancient  
*verheven* [vɛrɦɛvən] sublime  
*nuttig* [nɪxtɛx] useful  
*vast* [vʌst] solid, hard  
*weinige* [vɛɪnɪgə] a few  
*sedert* [sɛdɛrt] since  
*nog thans* [nɔx tʌns] even now  
*daarom* [dʌrɔm] therefore  
*behalve* [bɛɦʌlvɛ] except  
*geen* [gɛn] no  
*benevens* [bɛnɛvɛns] together with  
*evenwel* [ɛvənɛl] however  
*slechts* [slɛxts] only  
*zich onderscheiden* [z. ɪndɛr-  
sxɛɪdɛn] to distinguish one-  
self  
*verwerken* [vɛrɦɛrkən] to make  
into  
*groeien* [grɔɪən] to grow  
*bereiken* [bɛrɛɪkən] to reach



## The Verb. (Continued.)

Passive Voice. *Lijdende vorm* [*leidende vorm*].

§ 238. The **Passive Voice** is formed with the aid of the Auxiliary Verb “*worden*” (s. § 189):

### Infinitive.

Present.

Past.

*Bemind worden* to be loved.      *Bemind geworden zijn* to have been loved.

### Participles.

Present.

Past.

*Bemind wordende* being loved.      *Bemind geworden* been loved.

### Indicative.

### Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>Ik word</i> I am loved. <i>hij wordt</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span> <i>bemind</i> <i>wij worden</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span> <i>gij wordt</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span> <i>zij worden</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span>		<i>Ik worde</i> I be loved. <i>hij worde</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span> <i>bemind</i> <i>wij worden</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span> <i>gij wordet</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span> <i>zij worden</i> <span style="font-size: 2em; vertical-align: middle;">}</span>
--	--	--

Past.

*Ik werd bemind* I was loved      *Ik werde bemind* I were loved  
 &c.      &c.

Present Perfect.

*Ik ben bemind geworden* I have been loved, &c.      *Ik zij bemind geworden* I have been loved, &c.

Pluperfect.

*Ik was bemind geworden* I had been loved, &c.      *Ik ware bemind geworden* I had been loved, &c.

Future Indefinite.

*Ik zal bemind worden* I shall be loved, &c.      Is wanting.

Future Perfect.

*Ik zal bemind geworden zijn* I shall have been loved, &c.      Is wanting.

Present Conditional.

*Ik zou(de) bemind worden* I should be loved.      *Ik zoude bemind worden* I should be loved.

Past Conditional.

*Ik zou(de) bemind geworden zijn* I should have been loved.      *Ik zoude bemind geworden zijn* I should have been loved.

**Imperative.**

S. *Word bemind!* Be (thou) Pl. *Wordt bemind!* Be (you)  
loved! loved!

In the same manner are conjugated:

Het wordt koud, het werd koud, het is koud geworden, het was koud geworden, het zal koud worden, het zal koud geworden zijn, het zou koud worden, het zou koud geworden zijn, het worde koud, het werde koud, het zij koud geworden, het ware koud geworden &c.

**Reflexive Verbs.** *Wederkeerige* [*vedər'kerəgə*] *werkwoorden*.

§ 239. **Reflexive Verbs** are always used with a Reflexive Pronoun: *zich schamen* (over) to be ashamed (of), *zich beroemen* (op) to pride one's self (on), *zich ontfermen* (over) to have mercy (upon). Cf.: *zij wasschen zich* they wash themselves, *zij wasschen de kinderen* they wash the children.

§ 240. Conjugation of a Reflexive Verb:

**Infinitive.**

Present.

Past.

*Zich verheugen* to rejoice.*Zich verheugd hebben* to have rejoiced.**Participles.**

Present.

Past.

*Zich verheugende* rejoicing.*Zich verheugd hebbende* having rejoiced.**Indicative.****Subjunctive.**

Present.

*Ik verheug mij* I rejoice.*Ik verheuge mij* I rejoice.*hij verheugt zich**hij verheuge zich**wij verheugen ons**wij verheugen ons**gij verheugt u**gij verheuget u**zij verheugen zich**zij verheugen zich*

Past.

*Ik verheugde mij* I rejoiced, &c.*Ik verheugde mij* I rejoiced, &c.

Present Perfect.

*Ik heb mij verheugd* I have rejoiced, &c.*Ik hebbe mij verheugd* I have rejoiced, &c.

Pluperfect.

*Ik had mij verheugd* I had rejoiced, &c.*Ik hadde mij verheugd* I had rejoiced, &c.

## Future.

*Ik zal mij verheugen* I shall Is wanting.  
rejoice, &c.

## Future Perfect.

*Ik zal mij verheugd hebben* Is wanting.  
I shall have rejoiced, &c.

## Present Conditional.

*Ik zou(de) mij verheugen* I *Ik zoude mij verheugen* I  
should rejoice, &c. should rejoice, &c.

## Past Conditional.

*Ik zou(de) mij verheugd hebben* *Ik zoude mij verheugd hebben*  
I should have rejoiced, &c. I should have rejoiced, &c.

## Imperative.

S. *Verheug u!* rejoice! Pl. *Verheugt u!* rejoice!

## Interrogative form.

## Present.

*Verheug ik mij?* do I rejoice!  
&c.

## Imperfect.

*Verheugde ik mij?* did I  
rejoice? &c.

## Negative form.

*Ik verheug mij niet* I do not *Ik verheugde mij niet* I did  
rejoice, &c. not rejoice, &c.

## Negative-Interrogative form.

*Verheug ik mij niet?* do I not *Verheugde ik mij niet?* did I  
rejoice? &c. not rejoice? &c.

## Exercises.

30.

Conjugate: *gestraft worden, gezien worden, licht worden*  
(impersonal).

31.

Conjugate: *zich schamen, zich verwonderen, zich wasschen.*

## Sixteenth Lesson. Zestiende Les.

[zestinde les.]

## Genève.

Genève was de geboorte- of woonplaats van een aantal mannen, wier namen algemeen bekend zijn. Hier oefende Calvijn in zijn tijd een grooten invloed; hier woonden en werkten, om maar eenigen te noemen, Beza, Rousseau, de Saussure, de Candolle, mevrouw de Staël. Bijna geen straat

die niet een huis bevat, welks bewoner naam in de wereld gemaakt heeft. Nog tegenwoordig is de stad op het gebied der fijne industrie vermaard en houdt daarin meer dan vier duizend personen bezig. Jaarlijks worden er minstens honderd duizend uurwerken gemaakt en naar het buitenland verzonden. Een der fraaiste plekjes te Genève is het eiland van Rousseau, dat met zijn bronzen standbeeld prijkt. Den 28<sup>en</sup> Juni 1836 *[æxtentvntərstən jɔni ætɪnhvndərtseɪndərtəx]* vierde de stad, die hem eenmaal uitgeworpen had, met veel plechtigheid het eeuwfeest der geboorte van den wijsgeer. Ook Voltaire bewoonde langen tijd de buitenplaats *les Délices* in de nabijheid van Genève, doch werd evenzeer door de onverdraagzaamheid vandaar verjaagd en begaf zich naar Lausanne, totdat hij eindelijk het armzalige Ferney met zijn acht hutten met rieten daken, wederom in de nabijheid van Genève, kocht.

*Genève* [ʒənɛvə] Geneva  
*geboorteplaats* [gəbortəplɑts] birth-place  
*woonplaats* [vɔnplɑts] dwelling-place  
*aantal* [ɑntəl] (n.) number  
*naam* [nɑm] (m.) name  
*mevrouw* [mœrvru:] madam, mistress  
*bewoner* [bəvɔnər] inhabitant  
*wereld* [vɛrəlt] (f.) world  
*het gebied der industrie* [hət ɡəbɪt dər ɪndʌstri:] the domain of industry  
*persoon* [pɛrsən] (m. or f.) person  
*het uurwerk* [hət ʊrɜrk] time-piece  
*het buitenland* [hət bæytənlɑnt] foreign country; naar het buitenland abroad  
*plekje* [plɛk:j] spot, place  
*plechtigheid* [plɛxtəzɦeɪt] ceremony  
*het eeuwfeest* [hət eufɛst] jubilee  
*wijsgeer* [vɛɪsɔgɛr] philosopher  
*buitenplaats* [bəytənlɑts] country-seat  
*nabijheid* [nɑbɛɦeɪt] neighbourhood  
*het eiland* [hət ɛilɑnt] isle, island  
*hut* [hʌt] (f.) hut, cottage  
*het dak* [hət dɑk] roof  
*wier* namen [vɪr nɑmən] whose names  
*algemeen* [ɑlgəmə:n] generally

*bekend* [bɛkənt] known  
*eenigen* [ɛnɔgən] some, a few  
*welks* bewoner [vɛlks bəvɔnər] the inhabitant of which  
*fijn* [fɛɪn] fine  
*vermaard* [vɛrmɑrt] celebrated  
*vier duizend* [vɪr dœɪzənt] four thousand  
*honderd duizend* [hʌndərd-dœɪzənt] a hundred thousand  
*fraai, schoon* [fraɪ. sɔn] nice, beautiful  
*bronzen* [brʌnzən] bronze  
*armzalig* [ɑrmzəlɪx] miserable  
*riet* [rɪt] reed, thatch  
*rietdak* [rɪtɪdɑk] thatched roof  
*tegenwoordig* [tɛɡənvordɪx] at present, now-a-days  
*jaarlijks* [jɑrlɪks] (Adv.) annually  
*jaarlijksch* [jɑrlɪks:] (Adj.) annual  
*bijna* [beɪnə] nearly: *bijna geen* hardly any  
*minstens* [mɪnstəns] at least  
*eenmaal* [ɛnmɑl] once  
*veel* [vɛl] much, many  
*langen tijd* [lɑgən tɛɪt] long  
*doch* [dɔx] but, however  
*evenzeer* [ɛvənzɛr] also  
*randaar* [vɑndɑr] from there  
*totdat* [tɒtdɑt] till  
*eindelijk* [ɛɪndəlɪk] at last  
*wederom* [vɛdərɔm] again  
*wonen* [vɔnən] to dwell, to live  
*bewonen* [bəvɔnən] to inhabit

noemen [numm] to call

bevatten [bɛvʌtən] to contain

naam maken [nam makən] to

make oneself a name

bezig houden [bezzɪ] to occupy

prijken [prɛikən] here: to boast of

vielen [vɪɛn] to celebrate

\* zenden [zɛndən] to send: ik zend, ik zond, ik heb gezonden

(\*) verjagen [vɛrjagən] to drive away: part. verjaagd.

### Conversation.

Waardoor is Genève in de geschiedenis (history) bekend?

Wie hebben er zoo al gewoond en gewerkt?

Waar aan herinnert ons bijna elke straat?

Op welk gebied is de stad tegenwoordig nog vermaard?

Waar mede houdt zij meer dan 4000 personen bezig?

Hooveel uurwerken worden er jaarlijks gemaakt?

Waarheen worden deze verzonden?

Noem een der fraaiste plekjes van Genève?

Wat vierde de stad den 28<sup>en</sup> Juni 1836?

Waar woonde Voltaire langen tijd?

Waarheen begaf hij zich?

Hoe lang bleef hij daar?

### Numerals. Telwoorden [telvordən].

#### I. Cardinal numbers. Hoofdgetallen [hoofdgetalən].

§ 241. The Cardinal numbers are:

1 één one	23 drie en twintig twenty-three
2 twee two	24 vier en twintig twenty-four
3 drie three	25 vijf en twintig twenty-five
4 vier four	26 zes en twintig twenty-six
5 vijf five	27 zeven en twintig twenty-seven
6 zes six	28 acht en twintig twenty-eight
7 zeven seven	29 negen en twintig twenty-nine
8 acht eight	30 dertig thirty
9 negen nine	40 veertig forty
10 tien ten	50 vijftig fifty
11 elf eleven	60 zestig sixty
12 twaalf twelve	70 zeventig seventy
13 dertien thirteen	80 tachtig eighty
14 veertien fourteen	90 negentig ninety
15 vijftien fifteen	100 honderd a hundred
16 zestien sixteen	101 honderd (en) één one hundred and one
17 zeventien seventeen	102 honderd (en) twee one hundred and two
18 achttien eighteen	
19 negentien nineteen	
20 twintig twenty	
21 één en twintig twenty-one	
22 twee en twintig twenty-two	

110 <i>honderd (en) tien</i> one hundred and ten	2000 <i>twee duizend</i> two thousand
200 <i>tweehonderd</i> two hundred	3000 <i>drie duizend</i> three thousand
300 <i>driehonderd</i> three hundred	
400 <i>vierhonderd</i> four hundred	9000 <i>negen duizend</i> nine thousand
500 <i>vijfhonderd</i> five hundred	[sand
1000 <i>duizend</i> a thousand	10,000 <i>tien duizend</i> ten thousand
1001 <i>duizend (en) één</i> a thousand and one	100,000 <i>honderd duizend</i> a hundred thousand
1100 <i>elfhonderd</i> eleven hundred	1,000,000 <i>één millioen</i> a million
1200 <i>twaalfhonderd</i> twelve hundred	10,000,000 <i>tien millioen</i> ten million.

§ 242. The number *een* and the negation *geen*, when joined to a noun, are declined like the Indefinite Article (s. § 166). *Beide* both is declined like the Definite Article:

N. *beide*, G. *beider*, D. *beiden*, A. *beide*.

If preceded by a defining word it is declined like an Adjective:

N. *de beide*, G. *der beide*, D. *den beiden*, A. *de beide*.

If used substantively for **persons**:

N. *beiden*, G. *beider*, D. *beiden*, A. *beiden*;

and for **things**:

N. *beide*, G. *beider*, D. *beiden*, A. *beide*.

§ 243. *Millioen*, *billioen*, *trillioen*, *milliard* are Neuter Substantives, Pl.: *millioenen* &c. The plural of the substantives *honderd*, *duizend*, is formed regularly by means of *en*, Pl.: *honderden*, *duizenden*.

§ 244. The Cardinal Numbers are indeclinable. Except:

If used substantively: *twee vieren* two fours, *vier negens* four nines.

In expressions of time, if the word *uren* is omitted: *Hoe laat is het?* What o'clock is it? *Het is zes uur* it is six o'clock, *het is half zes* it is half past five, *het is kwart (kwartier) voor zessen* it is a quarter to six, *het is kwart (kwartier) over zessen* it is a quarter past six, *het is vijf minuten voor zessen* it is five minutes to six, *het is tien minuten voor zessen* it is ten minutes to six, *het is bij zessen* it is nearly

six o'clock, *het is over zessen* it is past six o'clock, *ik ga om zes uur uit* I go out at six o'clock.

§ 245. The number 1120 may be read and written: *elfhonderd (en) twintig* or *één duizend één honderd (en) twintig*, as a date it is pronounced (in the year) *elfhonderd twintig*.

**Note.** If preceded by another numeral *honderd* is written with the preceding number in one word, but *duizend* is not *tweehonderd*, *driehonderd*, *vierhonderd* &c.; *twee duizend*, *drie duizend*, *vier duizend*, &c.

## II. Ordinal numbers. *Ranggetallen [Rangtalen].*

§ 246. These are formed from the cardinals by adding *-de* from 2 to 19, and *-ste* from 20 upwards:

**Irregular** are: *eerste*, *achtste*; instead of *driede*, the word *derde* is used.

The 1st <i>de eerste</i>	The 17th <i>de zeventiende</i>
The 2nd <i>de tweede</i>	The 18th <i>de achttiende</i>
The 3rd <i>de derde</i>	The 19th <i>de negentiende</i>
The 4th <i>de vierde</i>	The 20th <i>de twintigste</i>
The 5th <i>de vijfde</i>	The 21st <i>de één en twintigste</i>
The 6th <i>de zesde</i>	The 30th <i>de dertigste</i>
The 7th <i>de zevende</i>	The 40th <i>de veertigste</i>
The 8th <i>de achtste</i>	The 50th <i>de vijftigste</i>
The 9th <i>de negende</i>	The 60th <i>de zestigste</i>
The 10th <i>de tiende</i>	The 70th <i>de zeventigste</i>
The 11th <i>de elfde</i>	The 80th <i>de tachtigste</i>
The 12th <i>de twaalfde</i>	The 90th <i>de negentigste</i>
The 13th <i>de dertiende</i>	The 100th <i>de honderdste</i>
The 14th <i>de veertiende</i>	The 500th <i>de vijfhonderdste</i>
The 15th <i>de vijftiende</i>	The 1000th <i>de duizendste</i>
The 16th <i>de zestiende</i>	The 1,000,000th <i>de millioenste</i> .

They are declined like Adjectives.

§ 247. **The former and the latter**, when referring to **two** persons or objects are translated into Dutch by *de eerste* and *de laatste* (s. § 224).

§ 248. The date is expressed as follows:

*De hoereelste is het vandaag* } What day of the month  
or *den hoereelste hebben wij vandaag* } is it to-day?

*Het is de twee en twintigste April* } It is the 22nd  
or *wij hebben den twee en twintigsten April* } of April.

§ 249. **Distinctives** are formed from the ordinals by the word *ten*:

<i>ten eerste</i> firstly	<i>ten tiende</i> tenthly
<i>ten tweede</i> secondly	<i>ten twintigste</i> twentiethly
<i>ten derde</i> thirdly	&c. {

### III. Multiplicatives. *Verdubbelgetallen* [*verdubbelgetalēn*].

§ 250. The multiplicatives are formed by adding the syllable **-voud** to the Cardinal numbers: *eenvoud* or *enkelvoud* (more usual) simple, *tweevoud* twofold, *drievoud* threefold, *honderdvoud* hundredfold; they are used substantively only.

Of these words Adj. or Adv. may be formed by adding **-ig**: *eenvoudig* or *enkelvoudig*, *tweevoudig* or *dubbel*, *drievoudig*, *honderdvoudig*.

### IV. Variative Numerals. *Soortgetallen* [*soortgetalēn*].

§ 251. These are formed by adding **-hande** (= kind) which is preceded by **er** or **der**; **er** is used with *één*, *twee*, *drie*, *acht*, *honderd*, *duizend* and the tens: *eenerhande* of one kind, *tweeerhande* of two kinds, *drieërhande* *achterhande*, *honderderhande*, *duizenderhande*, *twintigerhande*, *viijftigerhande*. With all the other **der** is used: *vierderhande* of four kinds, *viijfderhande*, *zesderhande* &c.

Words compounded with **lei** have also the same meaning: *eenerlei*, *tweeërlei*, *drieërlei*, *viijfderlei*, *dertigerlei* &c.

### V. Numbers of repetition. *Herhalingsgetallen* [*her'halingsgetalēn*].

§ 252. The Numbers of repetition are adverbs which are formed by adding **maal**, **keer** or **werf** to the Cardinal Numbers: *eenmaal* or *eens* once, *tweemaal*, *tweekeer*, *tweewerf* twice, *driemaal*, *driekeer*, *driewerf* three times &c. **Een** is also combined with **-reis**: *eenreis* once, shortened to *ereis* or even *res* (res).

### VI. Fractional Numbers. *Breukgetallen* [*breukgetalēn*].

§ 253. Except **half** they have the same form as the Ordinal Numbers:  $\frac{1}{2}$  = *een half*,  $\frac{1}{3}$  = *een derde*,  $\frac{1}{4}$  = *een vierde* or *een kwart*,  $\frac{1}{5}$  = *een vijfde*, 0.1 *een tiende*, 0.01 *een honderdste*, 0.001 *een duizendste*, 0.000001 *een millioenste*.



**Note 1.** If *half* is used as an Adj. it is placed after the article: *een half uur* half an hour, *het halve jaar* half the year, *een halve dag* half a day.

**Note 2.** With *half* another kind of indeclinable diminutive numerals is formed: *anderhalf* =  $1\frac{1}{2}$ , *derdehalf* =  $2\frac{1}{2}$ , *vierdehalf* =  $3\frac{1}{2}$ , *vijfdehalf* =  $4\frac{1}{2}$  &c.

## VII. Indefinite Numbers. *Onbepaalde [unbepaalde] telwoorden.*

§ 254. These are: *weinige* a few, *enkele*, *ettelijke*, *eenige*, *sommige* some, *verscheidene* several, *vele* many, *alle* all, *menig* many a one, *(de) meeste* most, *(de) minste* the least.

*Eenig* is also used as an Adj. before collectives: *eenig geld*, *eenig volk*.

*Menig* is used in the Sing. only: *menig man*, *menige vrouw*, *menig kind*; the G. is not used. and before masculine names of persons it has no ending at all: N., D., A. *menig generaal*.

§ 255. *Sommige*, *verscheidene*, *alle* must be used without the Article; *vele*, *weinige*, *enkele*, *eenige*, *beide* may be used without the Article; they have the same declension as the Adjectives:

N. *sommige*, *alle*, *vele*, *eenige* &c. (*mensen*)

G. (paraphrased) *van sommige* &c.

D. *sommigen*, *allen*, *velen*, *eenigen* (*mensen*)

A. *sommige*, *alle*, *vele*, *eenige* (*mensen*).

**Note.** *Ik heb weinig mensen gezien* I have seen few people. *Binnen weinige minuten was hij klaar* within a few minutes he was ready.

§ 256. The indefinite Numbers which are used in the Plural may be used **substantively**, but for persons only, they are inflected like the Substantives ending in *e*; in the Gen. the old ending *er* is generally used except with *weinige*.

N. *sommigen*, G. *sommiger*, D. *sommigen*, A. *sommigen*.

### Exercise.

32.

Translate: Thirty-one apples, some idols, many commoners, fifty-three books, all leaves, a hundred loaves, the

first trees, the tenth brig (*brik*), many a kingdom, a few pigeons, the eighteenth [of] December, three three-masters, most oaks, many a general, two kinds of trumpets, all sorts of songs, many heads, a few houses, half past six, the (*den*) twentieth [of] June, it is a quarter past one, both saw it, no kings, it is past three o'clock, the eighth merchant, four sorts of lilies, all kinds of men, the ninth month, the first dinner, some money, the twenty-first [of] May eighteen hundred and thirty six, a hundred thousand watches, four hundred streets, four thousand persons, a half, the half, half a pound, a tenth part, three nines, four eighths, a ten millionth, several ministers, both boys, a threefold misfortune, ninety patients, a twofold puzzle, his birthday is on the sixth of August, the eleventh bill, it is already past twelve o'clock, another time, two guineas and a half, one guilder and a half, eighty books, the third dog, six sorts of trees, four hundredths of a guilder, the thirtieth of November, eighteen hundred and ninety-one, fifty sorts of watches, several dogs, some numerals, many verbs, the hundredth man, what o'clock is it? What day of the month is it? It is the first, the third, the eighth.

## Seventeenth Lesson. Zeventiende Les.

[*zeventiende les.*]

### Gestrafte onbeschaamdheid.

Een hoveling, die Beaumarchais, den schrijver van Figaro's Huwelijk, met een zeer mooien rok aan, in de galerij van Versailles zag wandelen, meende den geestigen tooneeldichter, die de zoon van een horlogemaker was, eene gevoelige les te kunnen geven.

Hij ging naar hem toe en zeide: „Zoo, mijnheer Beaumarchais, ik ben blij dat ik u ontmoet: mijn horloge is geheel van streek; wees zoo goed er even naar te zien”. — „Volgaarne, mijnheer, maar ik moet u vooruit zeggen dat ik zeer onhandig ben.”

Toen de hoveling echter bleef aanhouden, nam hij het horloge en liet het vallen.

„O! mijnheer, neem mij niet kwalijk. Ik had u immers gewaarschuwd, gij wildet echter niet anders.”

En Beaumarchais verwijderde zich, den man, die hem had willen vernederen, zeer verlegen latende staan.

<i>Onbeschaamdheid</i> [ <i>ʊnbɛsɛamt- heit</i> ] impudence	<i>colgaarne</i> [ <i>ʋɔlgarnə</i> ] with plea- sure
<i>horeling</i> [ <i>hɔrɛlɪŋ</i> ] courtier	<i>onhandig</i> [ <i>ʊnhandɛx</i> ] clumsy
<i>schrijver</i> [ <i>ʃrɛivɛr</i> ] author, writ- ter, clerk	<i>echter</i> [ <i>ɛtɛr</i> ] however
<i>het huwelijk</i> [ <i>hɛt hyrɛlɪk</i> ] mar- riage	<i>immers</i> [ <i>imɛrs</i> ] here: had not I
<i>rok</i> [ <i>rɔk</i> ] (m.) coat	<i>verlegen staan</i> [ <i>ʋɛrlɛgən stan</i> ] to be ashamed
<i>galerij</i> [ <i>galɛrɛi</i> ] gallery	<i>wandelen</i> [ <i>vandɛlən</i> ] to walk
<i>tooneeldichter</i> [ <i>tonɛldɪɛtɛr</i> ] dra- matic poet	<i>ontmoeten</i> [ <i>ʊntmɔtən</i> ] to meet
<i>horlogemaker</i> [ <i>hɔrɔzɛmakɛr</i> ] watchmaker	<i>vernederen</i> [ <i>ʋɛrnɛdɛrən</i> ] to humble
<i>mooi</i> [ <i>moi</i> ] fine	<i>van streek zijn</i> [ <i>van strek zɛin</i> ]: deze man is van streek is un- well, is geheel van streek quite upset, het horloge is van streek: the watch is out of order
<i>geestig</i> [ <i>gɛstɛx</i> ] witty	<i>kwadijk nemen</i> [ <i>kwalɪk nɛmən</i> ] here: I am so sorry
<i>gevoelig</i> [ <i>gɛvulɛx</i> ] severe	
<i>naar hem toe</i> [ <i>nar hɛm tu</i> ] to him	
<i>vooruit</i> [ <i>ʋɔrɔɛt</i> ] beforehand	

\* *blijven* [*blɛivən*] to remain: *ik blijf, ik bleef, ik ben gebleven*;  
*blijven aanhouden* to persist

\* *aanhouden* [*anhoudən*] to insist: *ik houd aan, ik hield aan,*  
*ik heb aangehouden.*

**Note.** If the Infinitive of a verb is used with the auxiliaries: *hebben, zijn, worden, kunnen, mogen* &c., or with the verbs *zien, hooren, helpen, maken, leeren*, the principal verb is nearly always put after the auxiliary or one of the other verbs mentioned: *Een horeling, die B. zag wandelen, toen de horeling echter bleef aanhouden*; cf.: *ik heb hem leeren kennen* I got acquainted with him, *ik heb hem helpen zoeken* I have helped him to look for it, *hij heeft mij laten komen* he has ordered me to come, *hij wist, dat ik hem had geroepen* (or *geroepen had*) he knew, that I had called him.

### Conversation.

*Waar wandelde eens Beaumarchais?*

*Wat had hij an?*

*Waar door is Beaumarchais vooral bekend?*

*Van wien was Beaumarchais de zoon?*

*Wie zag hem daar wandelen?*

*Wat meende deze den tooneeldichter te kunnen geven?*

*Wat zeide hij daarom tot hem?*

*Wat meende Beaumarchais vooruit te moeten zeggen?*

*Wat deed Beaumarchais, toen de horeling bleef aanhouden?*

*Hoe verontschuldigde zich Beaumarchais?*

*Wat deed Beaumarchais daarna?*

**Pronouns. *De voornaamwoorden***  
*[də vornamvordən].*

**I. Personal Pronouns. *Persoonlijke* [persoʊnləkə]  
*voornaamwoorden.***

§ 257. Declension:

	Singular.	First Person.	Plural.
N.	<i>Ik</i> ( <i>'k</i> ) I		<i>Wij</i> ( <i>we</i> ) we
G.	<i>mijns, mijner</i>		<i>ons, onzer</i>
D.	<i>mij</i> ( <i>me</i> )		<i>ons</i>
A.	<i>mij</i> ( <i>me</i> )		<i>ons.</i>

	Second Person.
	Singular and Plural.
N.	<i>Gij</i> ( <i>ge</i> ), <i>jij</i> ( <i>je</i> ) thou — you
G.	<i>uws, uwer</i>
D.	<i>u, jou</i> ( <i>je</i> )
A.	<i>u, jou</i> ( <i>je</i> ).

	Third Person.		
	Singular.		
	Feminine.		
	Neuter.		
N.	<i>Hij</i> he	<i>Zij</i> ( <i>ze</i> ) she	<i>Het</i> ( <i>'t</i> ) it
G.	<i>zijns, zijner</i>	<i>haars, harer</i>	— —
D.	<i>hem</i> ( <i>em, 'm</i> )	<i>haar</i> ( <i>er</i> )	<i>het</i> ( <i>'t</i> )
A.	<i>hem</i> ( <i>em, 'm</i> )	<i>haar</i> ( <i>er, ze</i> )	<i>het</i> ( <i>'t</i> ).

	Plural.
	Feminine.
N.	<i>Zij</i> ( <i>ze</i> ) they
G.	<i>huns, hunner</i>
D.	<i>hun</i>
A.	<i>hen</i> ( <i>ze</i> )

§ 258. The Pronoun of the second P. S. *du* is no longer used, it has been replaced by the second P. Pl. In colloquial language *gij* has become *jij*, *jou*, *je* in the S. (*jij bent, je zegt*; interr.: *ben jij, zeg jij*); in the Pl. *gijlieden, ulieden, jelieden*, shortened to *jelui* and *jullie* is used. In polite conversation *U* is used for the S. as well as for the Pl.

In letters *Gij* is used when addressing friends, in other cases *U* (= *Uwe Edelheid*) is written with the verb in the 2nd P. Pl. or 3rd P. S.: *U hebt* or *U heeft*.

§ 259. The Gen. *mijns, ons, uws, zijns, haars* occurs in connection with *zelfs* or *gelijke*

only: *mijns gelijke* my equal(s), *uws gelijke* your equal(s),  
*om haars zelfs wil* for her own sake.

The Gen. *mijner, onzer, uwer, zijner, hunner* occurs in more dignified style and poetry, when the verb or adjective governs the genetive case: *gedenk mijner* remember me, *hij is uwer niet waardig* he is not worthy of you.

In all other cases the Gen. is paraphrased by *van* or replaced by a Possessive Pronoun: *de kinderen van mijn vriend, de huizen van uw vader*.

§ 260. The D. and A. of the Pers. Pronouns are used as **Reflexive Pronouns**. The Third P. however has a special Reflexive form, viz. *zich* which is used in the D. and A. only for all genders S. and Pl.

§ 261. The **Reciprocal Pronouns** are: *elkander (elkaar)* and *malkander (mulkaar)* each other. In the G. they take *s*; the D. and A. have the same form as the N.: *zij ontmoetten elkander* they met with each other, *wij zullen elkander schrijven* we shall write to each other, *elkanders geluk* each other's fortune.

§ 262. To emphasize the Pers. Pronouns the word *zelf* is added. In the S. *zelf* is generally used, in the Pl. *zelven*: *ik zelf heb het gezien* I have seen it myself, *wij zelven hebben het gehoord* we have heard it ourselves.

§ 263. In Dutch the Pers. Pronouns are sometimes used instead of the Demonstrative (s. § 280) and often instead of the Correlative Pronouns (s. § 281).

## II. Possessive Pronouns. *Bezittelijke [bəzɪtləkə] voornaamwoorden.*

§ 264. The Possessive Pr. are: *mijn* my — *ons* our; *uw* thy or your; *zijn* his or its — *hun* their; *haar* her or their.

§ 265. They are declined as follows:

Masc. Sing.	Fem. Sing.	Neuter Sing.	Pl. (all genders).
N. <i>mijn</i>	<i>mijne</i>	<i>mijn</i>	<i>mijne</i>
G. <i>mijns</i>	<i>mijner</i>	<i>mijns</i>	<i>mijner</i>
D. <i>mijnen</i>	<i>mijne(r)</i>	<i>mijnen</i>	<i>mijnen</i>
A. <i>mijnen</i>	<i>mijne</i>	<i>mijn</i>	<i>mijne.</i>

Except *ons* which has the form *onze* in the Nom. Sing. of the masculine gender: *mijn, uw, zijn, haar, hun vader* — *onze vader*.

§ 266. If preceded by the definite article, they are used adjectively and inflected like an Adjective:

N. *Mijn vader of de uwe is hier* my father is here or yours.

G. *Het huis mijns vaders en dat des uwen* the house of my father ~~or~~ of yours.

D. *Ik gehoorzaam mijnen vader en gij den uwen* I obey my father and you obey yours.

A. *Ik bemin mijnen vader en gij den uwen* I love my father and you love yours.

Plural: N. *mijne broeders en de uwe*

G. *mijner broeders en der uwe*

D. *mijnen broeders en den uwen*

A. *mijne broeders en de uwe*.

Note. A friend of his *een vriend van hem*; a book of mine *een boek van mij* &c.

§ 267. If they do not refer to a preceding substantive, they are used substantively and are inflected like masculine names of persons ending in *e*:

S. N. *Hoogachtend, blijf ik geheel de Uwe* I remain, yours respectfully.

A. *Hoogachtend noem ik mij den Uwe*.

Pl. N. *Geene menschen zijn hem dierbaarder dan de zijnen* nobody is dearer to him than his family.

G. *Hij verwerft zich de liefde der zijnen* he obtains the love of his family.

D. *Hij geeft den zijnen een goed voorbeeld* he sets his family a good example.

A. *Hij zorgt goed voor de zijnen* he takes good care of his family.

§ 268. *Du* and *dijn* being no longer used, *jouw* or *je* are used in familiar style; in other cases *uw* (in letters *Uw*) must be used both for the S. and Pl.

### III. Interrogative Pronouns. *Vragende [vragende] voornaamwoorden.*

§ 269. These are: *wie* who? *wat* what? *welk* which? *Wie?* applies to **persons**, it is always used substantively; *wat?* applies to inanimate **objects**, it is used substantively and adjectively: *welk?* applies to persons and objects, it is used both adjectively and substantively.

## § 270. Declension of the interrogative pronouns:

a) <i>Wie</i> :	Masc. Sing.	Fem. Sing.	Plural.
N.	<i>wie</i>	<i>wie</i>	<i>wie</i>
G.	<i>wiens</i>	<i>(wier)</i>	—
D.	<i>wien</i>	<i>wie</i>	—
A.	<i>wien</i>	<i>wie</i>	<i>wie</i> .

The Genetive *wier* is used very seldom, it is generally paraphrased by: *van wie*: *Wier boek is dat? Van wie is dat boek?*

b) *Wat* is used in the N. and A. only. In the other cases it is paraphrased by a preposition with the adverb *waar*; instead of *van wat*, *aan wat*, *in wat* &c., the words *waarvan*, *waaraan*, *waarin* &c. are used.

c) *Welk* is declined like a possessive pronoun, the Genetive is paraphrased by *van*:

	Singular.		Plural
Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.	(all genders).
N. <i>welke</i>	<i>welke</i>	<i>welk</i>	<i>welke</i>
G. —	—	—	—
D. <i>welken</i>	<i>welke</i>	<i>welk</i>	<i>welke(n)</i>
A. <i>welken</i>	<i>welke</i>	<i>welk</i>	<i>welke</i> .

§ 271. *Welk* is also used as an adjective, the N. and A. Singular of the masculine gender is invariably *welk* (instead of *welke*, *welken*): *Welk soldaat* what soldier? *Welke moeder zal dat doen* what mother will do this? *Van welk soldaat spreekt gij* of which soldier do you speak?

Instead of this adjective *welk* we may also use *wat voor een* or simply *wat*: *Wat voor een soldaat is hij?* *Wat voor een vrouw is dat?* *Wat man zou dat doen?* In the Plural *wat voor*: *Wat voor soldaten (vrouwen) zijn dat?*

## Exercise.

## 33.

Translate: My book. Your daughter. Our house. Your king. His country-houses. Which loaf? Which man is his brother? What mother would do this? Whom do you see? [To] whom have you said it? Who was here? Whose house is this? Whose books have been lost? My house and yours. My dogs and his. Of what is he speaking (tr. speaks he)? Have you seen each other? He always thinks of his family. The book of my brother or that of yours is lost. His family

loves him. The child has lost its money, it is sad. Have you sold (*verkocht*) your house? Which house? There you find your equals. We have done it for his sake. In which garden was his treasure? Whose book is this? My brother's or John's (i.e. it is of my brother or of John).

## Eighteenth Lesson. Achttiende Les.

[*astinda les.*]

### Proza of poëzie.

De heer Jourdain wil eene dame een briefje schrijven en verzoekt zijn meester hem daaraan te helpen. Deze vraagt hem: Wilt gij haar verzen schrijven? poëzie?

De heer J. Neen, neen, geene verzen.

M. Dus proza?

J. Neen, noch proza, noch poëzie.

M. Het moet toch een van beide zijn.

J. Waarom dat?

M. Wel, mijnheer J., omdat wij slechts op tweeërlei wijzen onze gedachten kunnen uitdrukken, in proza of in poëzie.

J. Er is dus niets anders dan proza of poëzie?

M. Al wat geen proza is, is poëzie, en al wat geene poëzie is, heet proza.

J. En wat men nu zoo gewoonlijk spreekt, wat is dat dan?

M. Wel, dat is proza.

J. Wat: als ik bij voorbeeld zeg: Jan, breng me mijne pantoffels en geef mij mijne slaapmuts, is dat dan proza?

M. Zeker, mijnheer J.

J. Mijn hemel! dan heb ik al meer dan veertig jaren proza gesproken, zonder het zelf te weten, en ik ben u zeer verplicht dat gij mij dat geleerd hebt.

Proza [*proza*] (f.) prose

poëzie [*poezi*] (f.) poetry

dame [*dama*] (Pl. dames) lady

briefje [*brifje*] note

meester<sup>1</sup> [*mestər*] teacher

vers [*vers*] (n.) verse

wijze [*wi:zə*] (n.) manner

gedachten [*gədaxtən*] thoughts

voorbeeld [*vorbe:lt*] (n.) example

bij voorbeeld [*bei vorbe:lt*] (b. v.)

for instance

Jan<sup>2</sup> [*jan*] John

sluapmuts [*slapmʏts*] (f.) night-

cap

<sup>1</sup> In conversational language *mee-ter* (*schoolmeester*) is often used instead of *onderwijzer* teacher of a primary school; a teacher at a H. B. School (*Hoogere Burgerschool*) or a Gymnasium (*Gymnasium*) is called *leeraar*, a professor of the university (*Universiteit* or *Hoogeschool*) is called *professor* or *hoogleeraar*.

<sup>2</sup> *Jan* formerly was the general name for servants and waiters; servants now are called by their own name and waiters are called *Kellner*.



*hemel* [heməl] (m.) heaven  
*mijn hemel* [mɛin heməl]! good  
 heavens!

*daaraan* [daran] with that  
*gewoonlijk* [gəwɔnlək] generally  
*meer dan* [mɛr dan] more than

*uitdrukken* [œytlɪrɪkən] to ex-  
 press

*leeren* [lɛrən] a) to learn, b) =  
*onderwijzen* [ɔndərwiːzən],  
*onderrichten* [ɔndərɪxtən] to  
 teach

\* *helpen* [hɛlpən] to help: *ik help, ik hielp, ik heb (ben) geholpen.*

### Conversation.

*Wat wil de heer Jourdain doen en wat verzoekt hij zijn  
 meester?*

*Wat vraagt deze hem?*

*Wat wilde de heer Jourdain schrijven?*

*Waarom moest het proza of poëzie zijn?*

*Is er niets anders dan proza of poëzie?*

*Wat is dat, wat men zoo gewoonlijk spreekt?*

*Wat noemde de heer Jourdain als voorbeeld?*

*Wat had de heer Jourdain meer dan veertig jaren gedaan?*

### IV. Demonstrative Pronouns. *Aanwijzende* [aunwɛizəndə] *voornaamwoorden.*

§ 272. These are: a) the article *de*, b) *deze* this one, *die* or *gene* that, *dezelfde*, *dieszelfde* the same, which are used substantively and adjectively, c) *degene* (*diegene*) he, she, used substantively only, d) *zelve* self, used adjectively only.

§ 273. *De* is inflected like the article *de*.

§ 274. *Deze* and *die* are declined as follows:

	Singular.		Plural
Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.	(all genders).
N. <i>deze</i>	<i>deze</i>	<i>dit</i>	<i>deze</i>
G. <i>dezes</i>	<i>dezer</i>	( <i>dezes</i> )	<i>dezer</i>
D. <i>dezen</i>	<i>deze(r)</i>	( <i>dezen</i> )	<i>dezen</i>
A. <i>dezen</i>	<i>deze</i>	<i>dit</i>	<i>deze.</i>

The Gen. of *deze*, used substantively, is always paraphrased.

	Singular.		Plural
Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.	(all genders).
N. <i>die</i>	<i>die</i>	<i>dat</i>	<i>die</i>
G. <i>diens</i>	<i>dier</i>	( <i>diens</i> )	<i>dier</i>
D. <i>dien</i>	<i>die(r)</i>	( <i>dien</i> )	<i>dien</i>
A. <i>dien</i>	<i>die</i>	<i>dat</i>	<i>die.</i>

§ 275. *Gene* is inflected like *deze*, but has no singular form for the neuter gender, for which *gindsch* is used: *gindsch huis, gene huizen.*

The G. is paraphrased by *van*, the D. by *aan*, which is also generally done with *dit* and *dat*.

§ 276. Instead of *dit* and *dat* used substantively and preceded by a preposition, pronominal adverbs are used: *hierdoor* (instead of *door dit*), *daarin* (inst. of *in dat*), *daarmede* (inst. of *met dat*), *hiervoor* &c.

§ 277. *Dezelfde*, *hetzelfde*, *diezelfde*, *datzelfde*, used adjectively, are inflected as an Adjective preceded by the Article.

If they are used substantively, they are declined as an Adjective which is used substantively:

M. S. N. *dezelfde*, G. *deszelfden*, D. and A. *denzelfde*.

F. S. N. *dezelfde*, G. *derzelfde*, D. and A. *dezelfde*.

N. S. N. *hetzelfde*, D. and A. *hetzelfde*.

Plural. N. and A. *dezelfden*, G. *derzelfden*, D. *de(n)zelfden*.

*Diegene* and *diezelfde* are but seldom used in modern Dutch.

§ 278. *Degene* has no Genetive form. For the Neuter Singular *datgene* is used. In the other cases it is declined like an Adj. used substantively:

M. S. N. *degene*, D. and A. *dengene*.

F. S. N., D. and A. *degene*.

N. S. N., D. and A. *datgene*.

Plural. N. *degenen*, D. *de(n)genen*, A. *degenen*.

§ 279. *Zelve* is placed after Substantives and Pers. Pr. (s. § 262) for the sake of emphasis. The word *zelf* may be used invariably: *ik zelf*, *wij zelf*, *hem zelf*, *den man zelf* &c., or we may make use of the following forms:

M. S. N. *zelve*, G. (*zelfs*), D. and A. *zelven*.

F. S. In all cases *zelve*.

N. S. N. *zelve*, G. (*zelfs*), D. and A. *zelve*.

Plural. N. *zelve*, G. *zelve*, D. *zelve(n)*, A. *zelve*.

The Gen. M. and N. never occurs with Substantives.

§ 280. In Dutch sometimes a Pers. Pronoun is used instead of a Demonstrative:

*Kent gij dien officier? Neen hem niet, wel den andere.*  
Do you know that officer? No, not that one, but the other.

**Note.** *Je sleutel?* Your key? *Die is niet hier.* It is not here. *Je boek?* Your book? *Dat heb ik niet.* I have not got it.

V. Correlative Pronouns. *Bepalingaankondigende*  
[bəpaliŋankʊndəgəndə] *voornaamwoorden*.

§ 281. The Demonstrative Pronouns *degene* &c.. when connected with a Relative Pronoun, are termed **Correlative Pronouns**. They are: a) *degene, die* or *die, welke*, b) *wie*, c) *dat, wat, datgene wat, hetgeen*, d) the Pers. Pronouns *hij, zij* (s. § 263).

**Examples.**

*Degene is te beklagen, die geen vriend heeft* he who has no friend is to be pitied.

*Die, welke geen vriend heeft, is te beklagen.*

*Wie geen vriend heeft, is te beklagen.*

*Hij (zij), die geen vriend heeft, enz.* (= *en zoo voorts, &c.*).

*Wee hem, wiens leven onnuttig besteed is* woe to him whose life has been fooled away.

*Dat, wat ik bedoel* (*Wat ik bedoel*), *zal ik u zeggen* I shall tell you what I mean; *wat hij weet, zegt hij ook* he says what he knows; *aan datgene wat ik zeg* (*aan hetgeen ik zeg*), *behoeft gij niet te twifelen* you need not doubt of that which I say.

VI. Relative Pronouns. *Betrekkelijke* [bətrəkələkə]  
*voornaamwoorden*.

§ 282. These are: a) some cases of the Demonstr. Pr. *die* and of the Interrogative *wie*, b) the Interr. Pr. *welke* with a neuter form *'twelk* or *hetwelk*.

§ 283. Declension of the Relative Pr. *die*, and *dat*:

	Singular.		Plural
Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.	(all genders).
N. <i>die, wie</i>	<i>die, wie</i>	<i>dat, wat</i>	<i>die, wie</i>
G. <i>wiens</i>	<i>wier</i>	—	<i>wier</i>
D. <i>wien</i>	<i>wie</i>	—	<i>wie(n)</i>
A. <i>dien, wien</i>	<i>die, wie</i>	<i>dat, wat</i>	<i>die, wie.</i>

§ 284. *Wie* and *wien* are used in the N. and A. when the pronoun introduces a subjective or an objective clause: *Wie waagt, die wint* fortune favours the bold; *hij kastijdt wien hij liefheeft* he chastises whom he loves. When a definite person is meant, we use *die*: *Die daar staat, is mijn neef* he who stands there is my nephew.

*Wien* must also be used after a preposition: *bij wien, door wien, etc.*

*Die(n)* must always be used in the N. and A. when

an antecedent precedes: *Die man, die daar staat en dien gij kent* the man who stands there and whom you know.

§ 285. The N. and A. *wat* occur in connection with *het, alles, dat* and *datgene* only: *alles, wat wij gekocht hebben, was goedkoop* all that we have bought was cheap.

§ 286. The Genetives *wiens* and *wier* (S. and Pl.) refer to persons only. For objects, and generally for persons also, we make use of the pron. adverb *waarvan*. For the G. and D. Neuter we must use *waarvan* and likewise *waaruit, waarin, waar-door* &c., instead of *uit wat, in wat, door wat* &c.

§ 287. Declension of the relative *welke*:

	Singular.		Plural
Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.	(all genders).
N. <i>welke</i>	<i>welke</i>	<i>hetwelk</i>	<i>welke</i>
G. <i>welks</i>	<i>welker</i>	<i>welks</i>	<i>welker</i>
D. <i>welken</i>	<i>welke</i>	—	<i>welken</i>
A. <i>welken</i>	<i>welke</i>	<i>hetwelk</i>	<i>welke</i> .

§ 288. The Gen. Masc. *welks* refers but seldom to persons. The N. and A. Neuter is *welk*, if it is used adjectively.

## VII. Indefinite Pronouns. *Onbepaalde [vnbepaalde] voornaamwoorden.*

§ 289. Some Indefinite Pronouns may be used only substantively: *men* one, they, people; *iemand* somebody, anybody, some one; *niemand* nobody; *iets* something, anything; *niets* nothing; *een iegelijk, iedereen, elkeen* or *een ieder* everybody, every one; *elkander* or *malkander* each other, one another.

Substantively or adjectively: *ieder, elk* every one, everybody, each.

Adjectively only: *zeker* a certain.

§ 290. *Men, iets* and *niets* are indeclinable: *Men zegt* people say, they say; *als men ziek is* when one is ill; *men heeft hem geroepen* he has been called. — *Hebt gij iets gezien? Neen, ik heb niets gezien* have you seen anything? No, I have seen nothing.

§ 291. *Iemand* and *niemand* take *s* in the Gen., in the D. and A. they remain unaltered.

§ 292. *Iedereen* and *elkeen* are invariable; *een iegelijk*, *een ieder*, also *ieder* and *elk* have no Plural; in the Gen. S. they take *s*, if used substantively.

§ 293. Declension of *ieder*, *elk* used adjectively:

	Masc. Sing.	Fem. Sing.	Neuter Sing.
N. <i>ieder(e)</i> , <i>elk(e)</i>		<i>iedere</i> , <i>elke</i>	<i>ieder</i> , <i>elk</i>
G. — —		— —	— —
D. <i>iedereen</i> , <i>elken</i>		— —	— —
A. <i>iedereen</i> , <i>elken</i>		<i>iedere</i> , <i>elke</i>	<i>ieder</i> , <i>elk</i> .

The defective forms are paraphrased. *Ieder*, *elk* are used with masculine names of persons: *ieder man*, *elk soldaat*, but *iedere vogel* (bird), *elke hond*.

§ 294. *Zeker* has the inflection of *ieder* and *elk*, but also a plural form: N. *zekere*, D. *zekeren*, A. *zekere*. If the Article *een* precedes, it is declined like an Adjective: *zeker man* — *een zekere man*, Pl. *zekere lieden*.

§ 295. *Elkander* or *elkaar*, *malkander* or *mekaar* may take *s* in the Gen., but in the other cases they remain unaltered.

§ 296. The following words are also considered as Indefinite Pronouns: a) the Pers. Pr. *het* as the subject of an impersonal verb (s. § 231); b) the Numeral *een* = a certain, as such it has always the form *eene*: *eene mijnheer A. is hier* a certain Mr. A. is here; c) the Indefinite Pr. *wat* = something, some, a little: *wat moois* something beautiful, *wat brood* some bread.

#### Exercises.

#### 34.

Translate: They say so. Of what do you speak? Every one knows it. Everybody has seen it. Of whom have you heard it? A certain Mr. B. was here. Tell me with whom you converse (*verkeeren*), and I shall tell you who you are. He who says so (tr. that), knows nothing about it (tr. of it). We pity him who has no friend. Everyone has heard of it. Nobody will know anything of it. Here are two books, this [one] belongs [to] you, that [one] belongs [to] your brother. He does not know what he says. I have seen this man [here] very often. Do you know that man [there]? A friend of his has been here, but he does not know which. They meet each other often. In which street? Are those houses

yours? No, but these are mine. They always help each other. I have found somebody's books. I have told it nobody. Nobody's books have been found. Which way (*weg*, in.) must I take? This [one]. Give him some meat. Have you a little bit of bread? Has he done anything good? This is all that I have read about (tr. of) him. What do people say about the war (*oorlog*, m.)? Every dog can swim. Every soldier would act (*handelen*) in this way (tr. in this way act).

## 35.

Translate the words in brackets:

De lente en de herfst hebben (*their*) genoegens;<sup>1)</sup> (*the latter*) geeft vruchten, (*the former*) bloemen. Hebt gij nog sigaren? Ja, ik heb (*some left*). (*What*) landsman<sup>2)</sup> is hij? Ik heb een boom gezien. (*What sort of*) een boom was het? Ik weet niet, (*whose*) kind hij is. Zeg mij, (*whom*) gij gezien en met (*whom*) gij gesproken hebt. Het is de wil (*of him*), die mij gezonden heeft. (*He*), die goed geleefd heeft, kan gerust<sup>3)</sup> sterven<sup>4)</sup>. De roem<sup>5)</sup> van (*him*), die liegt,<sup>6)</sup> duurt<sup>7)</sup> niet lang. Vertel mij het lot (*of those*), die terugkwamen<sup>8)</sup>. Met (*nothing*) vangt<sup>9)</sup> men (*nothing*). Niet veel is toch (*something*). (*All*) zijn ziek<sup>10)</sup> en (*every one*) heeft eene andere ziekte. (*Many*) zijn geroepen, maar (*few*) zijn uitverkoren<sup>11)</sup>. Geef (*everybody*) het zijne. Hij is arm, (*whose*) uitgaven<sup>12)</sup> de ontvangsten<sup>13)</sup> overtreffen<sup>14)</sup>. Dat is de wees, (*from whom*) de dood haar ouders ontrukkt<sup>15)</sup> heeft. Hij zeide „(*good*) dag!“, (*which*) groet<sup>16)</sup> zij vriendelijk beantwoordde. Het boek, (*of which*) inhoud<sup>17)</sup> ons zoo zeer beviel,<sup>18)</sup> is niet meer te krijgen<sup>19)</sup>. Wij handelen (*both*) iwaas. Draag zooveel<sup>20)</sup> gij kunt tot het geluk van (*others*) bij. Zijt gij de persoon van (*whom*) men mij gesproken heeft?

## 36.

Arm is niet (*he who*) weinig bezit, maar (*he who*) veel noodig<sup>21)</sup> heeft. Gedenk (*us*) in het buitenland, wij zullen u niet vergeten. (*Whom*) God een ambt<sup>22)</sup> geeft, (*him*) geeft hij ook verstand. (*Whose*) broot ik eet, (*whose*) lied ik zing. Wij stonden op een heuvel,<sup>23)</sup> aan (*of which*) voet zich de stad uitstreckte,<sup>24)</sup> (*which*) wij verlaten hadden en (*of which*)

1) *het genoeg* pleasure. 2) *de landsman*, Pl. *de landslieden*. 3) *calmly*. 4) *to die*. 5) *glory*. 6) *liegen* to lie. 7) *duren* to last. 8) *terugkomen* to return. 9) *vangen* to catch. 10) *ill*. 11) *chosen*. 12) *de uitgave* expense. 13) *de ontvangst* revenue. 14) to surpass. 15) *ontrukken* to take away. 16) *salutation*. 17) *contents*. 18) *bevallen* to please. 19) to obtain. 20) *as much*. 21) *noodig hebben* to want. 22) *charge, duty*. 23) *hill*. 24) *uitstrekken* to extend.

huizen wij nog zien konden. Er is geen erger doove<sup>25</sup>) dan (*he who*) niet hooren wil. Vertrouw<sup>26</sup>) niet op (*that which*) hij zegt; hij is een van (*those*) menschen, van (*whom*) men zeggen kan: (*he who*) zich op (*them*) verlaat, (*he*) is verlaten. Groet (*your family*) hartelijk van mij. Heeft (*anybody*) ter wereld ooit<sup>27</sup>) (*such a thing*) beleefd!<sup>28</sup>) (*You*), die zegt, dat gij God liefhebt<sup>29</sup>) en (*your*) broeder haat, zijt leugenaars. Admiraal de Ruyter was een held ter zee die (*his*) gelijken slechts (*few*) heeft. (*Everyone*) het zijne, dan krijgt gij (*yours*) en ik (*mine*). Ontfermt<sup>30</sup>) u (*upon me, G.*) riep de oude man. De koning (*himself*) was er. (*Even*) de koning was er. De vrienden omarmden<sup>31</sup>) (*each other*) en beloofden<sup>32</sup>) (*each other*) eeuwige<sup>33</sup>) trouw<sup>34</sup>) en vriendschap. Wij zullen (*each other*) spoedig<sup>35</sup>) weerzien.

25) *de (een) doore a deaf man.* 26) *vertrouwen to trust.* 27) *ever.* 28) *beleven to see, to experience.* 29) *liefhebben to love.* 30) *ontfermen to have mercy.* 31) *omarmen (omhelzen) to embrace.* 32) *beloven promise.* 33) *eeuwig eternal.* 34) *faith.* 35) *soon.*

## Nineteenth Lesson. Negentiende Les.

[*negentinde les.*]

### Een Brief.

Hoorn, 5 Juni 1911.

Waarde Vriend!

Daar wij binnen zeven weken vacantie hebben, wordt het tijd onze reisplannen nader te bespreken. Hebt Gij lust dit jaar met mij Heidelberg en het Neckardal eens te bezoeken. Ik kan U verzekeren het is een der mooiste plekjes van geheel Duitschland en men moet al zeer verwend zijn, wil men daar niet volop genieten. Verleden jaar ben ik er ook geweest, maar men kan er gerust een tweede of derde maal heenreizen, het blijft altijd nieuw. Mocht Gij soms een ander plan hebben, wees dan zoo goed het mij spoedig mede te deelen. Zoo niet, dan zal ik onzen vriend Paul van onze komst verwittigen. Ik zou hem nog wel eens willen ontmoeten, ik mag hem gaarne lijdén; daarenboven kent hij de schoonheden van Heidelberg en omstreken. Vraag of mijnheer R. een reisgids van Zuid-Duitschland voor ons heeft! Ik durf er hem niet lastig om vallen en kan er hier geen leenen.

Weet Gij hoe lang van te voren men de rondreisbiljetten moet bestellen?

Antwoord spoedig. Groetend

Uw vriend  
N. N.

*Week* [vek] (f.) week  
*vacantie* [vakansi] (f. sing.) holiday  
*reisplan* [reisplan] (n.) travelling-plan  
*het Neckardal* [het nekardal] the Neckar valley  
*Duitschland* [dwytslant] Germany  
*komst* [kvmst] arrival  
*schoonheid* [szonheit] beauty  
*omstreken* [vmstrekan] environs  
*reisgids* [reizgits] (m.) guide  
*Zuid-Duitschland* [zoeyd-dwytslant] South Germany  
*rondreisbiljet* [rvndreizbiljct] (n.) circular ticket  
*daar* [dar] as, because  
*nader* [nadər] further  
*roloep* [rvlcp] plenty

*gerust* [gərvst] quite well  
*daarenboven* [darmboren] besides  
*hoe lang* [hu lay] how long  
*van te voren* [van tə vorən] before  
*het wordt tijd* [het vort teit] it is time  
*lust hebben* [lɪst hɛbən] to like  
*verzekeren* [vərzekərən] to assure  
*verwennen* [vərvenən] to spoil  
*(er) heenreizen* [ər heuvreizən] to travel thither  
*mededeelen* [medədelən] to communicate  
*verwittigen* [vərɹitəgən] to inform  
*lastig vallen om* [lastəx valm vm] to trouble about  
*lenen* [lenən] to borrow  
*grootend* [grutənt] with kind regards

- \* *bezoeken* [bazukən] to visit: *ik bezoek, ik bezocht, ik heb bezocht*
- \* *genieten* [gəniten] to enjoy: *ik geniet, ik genoot, ik heb genoten*
- (1) *mogen* [mogen] may, s. § 298.
- (1) *durven* [dvrən] to dare, s. § 300.

### Conversation.

Complete the following sentences:

*Ik schrijf aan mijn vriend, dat het tijd wordt onze reisplannen nader te bespreken, omdat* . . . . .  
*Ik vraag hem of hij lust heeft* . . . . .  
*Ik kan mijn vriend verzekeren, dat Heidelberg* . . . . .  
*Verleden jaar ben ik er reeds geweest, maar men* . . . . .  
*Ik verzoek mijn vriend mij spoedig te schrijven, indien* . . . . .  
*Mocht hij geen ander plan hebben, dan* . . . . .  
*Ik zou hem nog wel eens willen ontmoeten, want* . . . . .  
*daarenboven* . . . . .  
*Ik verzoek mijn vriend aan mijnheer R. te vragen of hij* . . . . .  
*soms* . . . . ., *want* . . . . .  
*Ten slotte (at last) vraag ik of mijn vriend weet* . . . . .  
*en verzoek hem spoedig* . . . . .

### Verbs. (Continued.)

Irregular Verbs. *Onregelmatige [vnregelmatəgə] werkwoorden.*

§ 297. The **Irregular Verbs** (s. § 168) are: a) *kunnen* to be able, *zullen*: the auxiliary for the future, *mogen* to be allowed, *weten* to know, *moeten* to be obliged, *willen* to want; b) *zeggen* to say, *leggen* to lay,



*werken* to work, *brenghen* to bring, *denken* to think, *dunken* to seem, to appear, *zoeken* to seek, *koopen* to buy, *hebben* to have; c) *doen* to do, *gaan* to go, *slaan* to beat, to strike, *zien* to see, *zijn* (*wezen*) to be.

**Note.** Besides these verbs a few strong verbs show irregularities by inserting or changing a consonant: *houden* — Imp. *hield*; *verliezen* — Imp. *verloor*, P. P. *verloren*; *vriezen* — Imp. *vroor*, P. P. *gevroren*.

### § 298. Conjugation of:

*Kunnen mogen*<sup>1</sup> *weten moeten zullen willen*

#### Present Indicative.

<i>Ik kan</i>	<i>mag</i>	<i>weet</i>	<i>moet</i>	<i>zal</i>	<i>wil</i>
<i>hij kan</i>	<i>mag</i>	<i>weet</i>	<i>moet</i>	<i>zal</i>	<i>wil</i>
<i>wij kunnen</i>	<i>mogen</i>	<i>weten</i>	<i>moeten</i>	<i>zullen</i>	<i>willen</i>
<i>gij kunt</i>	<i>moogt</i>	<i>weet</i>	<i>moet</i>	<i>zult</i>	<i>wilt</i>
<i>zij kunnen</i>	<i>mogen</i>	<i>weten</i>	<i>moeten</i>	<i>zullen</i>	<i>willen</i>

#### Present Subjunctive.

<i>Ik kunne</i>	<i>moge</i>	<i>wete</i>	<i>moete</i>	(wanting)	<i>wil</i>
<i>hij kunne</i>	<i>moge</i>	<i>wete</i>	<i>moete</i>		<i>wil</i>
<i>wij kunnen</i>	<i>mogen</i>	<i>weten</i>	<i>moeten</i>		<i>willen</i>
<i>gij kun(ne)t</i>	<i>moogt</i>	<i>wetet</i>	<i>moet(et)</i>		<i>wilt</i>
<i>zij kunnen</i>	<i>mogen</i>	<i>weten</i>	<i>moeten</i>		<i>willen</i>

#### Past Indicative and Subjunctive.

<i>Ik kon(de)</i>	<i>mocht</i>	<i>wist</i>	<i>moest</i>	<i>zou(de)</i>	<i>wilde,</i>	<i>wou(de)</i>
<i>hij kon(de)</i>	<i>mocht</i>	<i>wist</i>	<i>moest</i>	<i>zou(de)</i>	<i>wilde,</i>	<i>wou(de)</i>
<i>wij konden</i>	<i>mochten</i>	<i>wisten</i>	<i>moesten</i>	<i>zouden</i>	<i>wilden,</i>	<i>wouden</i>
<i>gij kondet</i>	<i>mocht</i>	<i>wist</i>	<i>moest</i>	<i>zoudet</i>	<i>wildet,</i>	<i>woudet</i>
<i>zij konden</i>	<i>mochten</i>	<i>wisten</i>	<i>moest</i>	<i>zouden</i>	<i>wilden,</i>	<i>wouden</i>

#### Imperative.

—	—	<i>weet</i>	—	—	—
---	---	-------------	---	---	---

#### Present Participle.

<i>kunnende</i>	<i>mogende</i>	<i>wetende</i>	<i>moetende</i>	<i>zullende</i>	<i>willende</i>
-----------------	----------------	----------------	-----------------	-----------------	-----------------

#### Past Participle.

<i>gekund</i>	<i>gemoogd</i>	<i>geweten</i>	<i>gemoeten</i>	—	<i>gewild</i>
<i>(kunnen)</i>	<i>(mogen)</i>	<i>(weten)</i>	<i>(moeten)</i>	—	<i>(willen).</i>

§ 299. The verbs *kunnen*, *mogen*, *weten*, *moeten* and *zullen* have lost their original **singulars** of the Present Ind., which have been replaced by the Sing.

<sup>1</sup> *Vermogen* (to be able) has the same conjugation, except in the Past Part. which is *vermocht*.

of the old **Preterite** tenses. The Present Ind. of *willen* has been replaced by the old Pres. Subj.

The 3rd P. S. of these six verbs is like the 1st and does not admit of a final **t**.

§ 300. *Durven* is a regular weak verb now, but the old irregular Past **dorst** is still in use by the side of the weak form **durfde**.

§ 301. *Leggen* and *zeggen* have the weak forms *legde* — *gelegd*, *zegde* — *gezegd* besides the irregular forms *leide* — *geleid*, *zeide* — *gezeid*.

§ 302. *Werken* has the weak forms *werkte* — *gewerkt*, but also the irregular forms *wrocht* — *gewrocht*, Engl. wrought, when speaking of a work of art. *Het gewrocht* = work of art.

§ 303. *Brengen*, *denken*, *dunken* have vowel change in the Past, and in the Past Part. The impersonal verb *dunken* has no Past Part.:

*brengen*: ik *bring*, *bracht*, *gebracht*,

*denken*: ik *denk*, *dacht*, *gedacht*,

*dunken*: mij *dunkt*, mij *dacht* or *docht*.

§ 304. *Zoeken* and *koopen* have a short **o** [ɔ] in the Past and in the Past Part.:

*zoeken*: ik *zoek*, *zoekt*, *gezocht*,

*koopen*: ik *koop*, *kocht*, *gekocht*.

**Note.** For the Conjugation of *hebben* s. § 187.

§ 305. **Doen**, **gaan**, **slaan**, **staan**, **zien**, **zijn** are the only monosyllabic verbs:

*doen*: ik *doe*, *hij doet*, *wij doen*, *gij doet*, *zij doen*;

ik *deed*, *hij deed*, *wij deden*, *gij deedt*, *zij deden*;

ik *heb gedaan* &c.

*gaan*: ik *ga*, *hij gaat*, *wij gaan*, *gij gaat*, *zij gaan*;

ik *ging*, *hij ging*, *wij gingen*, *gij gingt*, *zij gingen*;

ik (*heb*) *ben gegaan* &c.

*slaan*: ik *sla*, *hij slaat*, *wij slaan*, *gij slaat*, *zij slaan*;

ik *sloeg*, *hij sloeg*, *wij (zij) sloegen*, *gij sloegt*;

ik *heb geslagen* &c.

*staan*: ik *sta*, *hij staat*, *wij staan*, *gij staat*, *zij staan*;

ik *stond*, *hij stond*, *wij (zij) stonden*, *gij stondt*;

ik *heb gestaan* &c.

*zien*: ik *zie*, *hij ziet*, *wij zien*, *gij ziet*, *zij zien*;

ik *zag*, *hij zag*, *wij (zij) zagen*, *gij zaagt*;

ik *heb gezien* &c.

*zijn*: s. § 182.

## Observations on the Use of Auxiliaries.

§ 306. **Kunnen, mogen.** *Kunnen* answers to the English can: *hij kan niet komen* he cannot come. *Zou kunnen* = could or might: *wij zouden het niet beter kunnen schrijven* we could not write it better. If *kunnen* expresses **eventuality** it answers to the English may: *hij kan wel ziek zijn* he may be ill, *dit werk had beter kunnen zijn* this work might have been better. *Had(t) kunnen* = might: *gij hadt beleefder tegen hem kunnen zijn* you might have been more polite towards him.

*Mogen* = may: *gij moogt met ons uitgaan* you may go out with us, *mag niet* referring to a prohibition answers to must not: *gij moogt nu niet spelen* you must not play now. *Mocht* denoting a supposition = should: *mocht hij nog komen* should he still come. *Mogen* is also used in the sense of to be fond of (*houden van*), to like: *ik mag zulke boeken niet* I do not like such books.

§ 307. **Moeten** = must, to be obliged, to have to: *ik moet een brief schrijven* I must write a letter, *ik moest een brief schrijven* (obligation): I had to (I was obliged to) write a letter. *Had moeten* denoting a duty that is not done = ought: *ik had gisteren een brief moeten schrijven* I ought to have written a letter yesterday. *Moeten* denoting the will of another person = to be: *wie moet dit doen* who is to do this?

**Note.** *Hij moet erg ziek zijn.*

He is said to be very ill.

§ 308. **Zullen**: the auxiliary verb for the future. *Gij zult dat doen* (with special stress) you shall do that.

§ 309. **Willen** a) = will *hij wil niet gaan* he will not go; b) = to want, to like, to wish: *ik weet niet wat hij wil* I do not know what he wants, *doe wat gij wilt* do as you like, *hij wil mij zien* he wishes to see me; c) = to say, to pretend: *hij wil er alles van weten* he pretends to know everything about it; *men wil dat hij zijn vrouw heeft verlaten* people say he has deserted his wife, he is said to have deserted his wife; d) = to be about, to be going: *ik wilde juist vertrekken, toen gij binnen kwamt* I was just about to start, when you entered. *Zou willen (wou)* = would:

*ik zou willen schrijven, maar ik kan nu niet* I would write but I cannot do it now.

If the English **will** expresses a habit or custom it must be rendered by *plegen*: my father would often talk about the war against Belgium *mijn vader placht dikwijls van den oorlog met België te spreken*. Sometimes **will** must not be translated at all: Weeds will grow in spite of the gardener's care *onkruid groeit trots de zorg van den tuinier* = *onkruid vergaat niet*; *ik verzoek u, mij wel te willen verontschuldigen* I beg you kindly to excuse me.

§ 310. **Doen** is but very seldom used as an Auxiliary Verb, it must be left untranslated in almost all cases where it is used as such in English:

What does he do? *Wat doet hij?*

How do you do? *Hoe vaart u? Hoe gaat het?*

I do not know it. *Ik weet het niet.*

Do make haste! *Toe! haast u wat!*

Does he know it? yes, he does. *Weet hij het? Ja (jawel).*

Such means did he use to obtain his end.

*Zulke middelen wendde hij aan om zijn doel te bereiken.*

Note the use of **doen** in: I had rather go at once *ik deed beter dadelijk te gaan*, I think you had better stay at home *mij dankt gij deelt beter van thuis te blijven*.

§ 311. **Hebben, zijn.** **Hebben** is used:

With all Transitive Verbs: *Ik heb een brief geschreven*. A few are also used with *zijn*, when they have another meaning: *ik heb mijn boek vergeten* I have forgotten my book, *ik ben vergeten wat ik zeggen wilde* I forget what I was going to say; — *wij hebben uw voorbeeld gevolgd* we have followed your example, *de politie is den dief gevolgd* the police has pursued the thief; — *ik heb besloten mee te gaan* I have resolved to go with you, *ik ben vast besloten het niet te doen* I am firmly resolved not to do it.

With all Reflexive and Impersonal Verbs: *hij heeft zich geschaamd*; *het heeft den heelen zomer geregend*. Except with *gebeuren* and *geschieden*: *het is gebeurd, het is geschied*.

With Intransitive Verbs that express an action or a condition: *ik heb geslapen*; *deze school heeft al 25 jaar bestaan* this school has existed these 25 years. Except with *zijn*, *blijven* to remain: *ik ben geweest* I have been, *hij is gebleven waar hij was* he has remained where he was.

**Zijn** is used with the above mentioned Verbs.

- a) With Intr. Verbs that express a change of condition: *het kind is gevallen* the child has fallen, *de kinderen zijn gegroeid* the children have grown.
- b) With Intr. Verbs when the place of destination is expressed: *ik heb lang gereisd* I have travelled a long time; — *ik ben naar Amsterdam gereisd* I have travelled to Amsterdam; — *wij hebben veel gewandeld* we have walked much; — *wij zijn van Londen naar Richmond gewandeld* we have walked from London to Richmond.

The Verbs *worden*, *ontstaan* to arise: *hij is soldaat geworden* he has become a soldier; *hoe is die twist ontstaan* how did that quarrel arise?

**Note.** Some Verbs are used with **hebben** or with **zijn** according to the meaning they express: *de bediende heeft mijne bevelen opgevolgd* the servant has obeyed my orders; *Willem II is Frederik I opgevolgd* William II. has succeeded Frederick I.; *hij volbracht alles wat hij begonnen had* he finished all he had begun; *hij was reeds begonnen eer wij het wisten* he had begun already before we knew it; *met zulke menschen is niets te beginnen* such people are not to be managed. *Beginnen* is always used with *zijn* if it is followed by an Infinitive: *zij zijn al begonnen te spelen* they have already begun playing.

§ 312. The Verbs **willen**, **zullen**, **moeten**, **mogen**, **kunnen**, **durven** and **gaan** are followed by an Infinitive without **te**: *hij wil, zal, moet, mag wandelen*; *hij kan, durft spreken*; *hij gaat den geneesheer halen* he goes for the doctor. Cf.: *hij durft het niet zeggen* — *hij waagt het niet te zeggen*.

#### Exercises.

#### 37.

Write down the Present and Imperfect Indicative of:  
 brengen, denken, doen, duren, gaan, houden,  
 koopen, kunnen, leggen, moeten, mogen, slaan, verliezen,  
 vriezen, wenken, willen, weten, zeggen, zien, zoeken, zullen.

## 38.

Translate: You could not have noticed<sup>1)</sup> the mistake<sup>2)</sup>. You might not have noticed the mistake. You cannot have noticed the mistake. You may not have noticed the mistake. You might have noticed the mistake. I should have noticed the mistake. You ought to have noticed the mistake. He might not understand us. He could not understand us. He may not have seen it. He cannot have seen it. He may be mistaken<sup>3)</sup>. If you would have a thing done well, do it yourself. It will be time when the clock strikes twelve. It shall be done when the clock strikes twelve. He who should do this, would be one of the greatest benefactors<sup>4)</sup> of mankind<sup>5)</sup>. I should be glad if you would translate this for me. I should be glad if you should succeed. My brother says he will be punished. My brother says he shall be punished. He should have brought me a book, but he has forgotten it. It happened, that the king passed through the Netherlands. We have walked from Whitby to Malton. How long have you walked. What has<sup>6)</sup> become of him? I have made up my mind not to leave this country. These children have always followed the example of their parents. I forget his name. I had rather start (*vertrekken*) at once. I think you had better stay in your own country. How do you do, Sir? Very well, [I] thank you. As (*daar*) I am ill, I beg you kindly to excuse me.

1) to notice *opmerken*. 2) *fout* (f.). 3) to be mistaken *zich vergissen*. 4) *weldoener*. 5) *menschdom* (see § 197). 6) insert *er* between the auxiliary and the verb.

## 39.

Put the required auxiliaries in the spaces.

Een rechter,<sup>1)</sup> een officier en een geestelijke<sup>2)</sup> - met de post in eene kleine stad aangekomen, waar het posthuis<sup>3)</sup> tevens<sup>4)</sup> het hotel voorstelde<sup>5)</sup>. Nauwelijks<sup>6)</sup> — zij afgestapt<sup>7)</sup> of ieder verlangde een bed; maar de logementhouder had er slechts één; en het — bij hem steeds<sup>8)</sup> als regel gegolden,<sup>9)</sup> dat de gast, die het eerst aangekomen —, in het bed zou slapen, terwijl zij die later aangekomen — met een strooleger<sup>10)</sup> moesten tevreden zijn. Nu — er echter drie en alle drie maakten aanspraak<sup>11)</sup> op het bed. De waard — dus beslissen<sup>12)</sup>.

„Wie is u“, vroeg hij, zich tot den officier wendend,<sup>13)</sup>

1) judge. 2) clergyman. 3) station of the stage-coach. 4) at the same time, also. 5) to represent. 6) scarcely. 7) to alight. 8) always. 9) to be a rule. 10) bed of straw. 11) to lay claim to. 12) to decide. 13) to address.

„en waar — u tot nu toe geweest?“ „Ik — 15 jaar in B. als kapitein in garnizoen gelegen“,<sup>14)</sup> antwoordde de officier.

„En ik — 20 jaar te E. als rechter in de rechtbank gezeten“,<sup>15)</sup> zeide de rechter.

„En ik — reeds 25 jaar te H. als dominee gestaan“, zeide de geestelijke.

„Welnu, dan — de twist op eens beslecht, riep de waard. U, mijnheer de kapitein, — 15 jaar gelegen; u, mijnheer de rechter, — 20 jaar gezeten, mijnheer de dominee evenwel — 25 jaar gestaan, hem komt bijgevolg<sup>16)</sup> het bed toe.“

14) to be in garrison. 15) to have a seat in the court of justice. 16) in consequence, therefore.

#### 40.

Waarde Vriend! Gij — weten hoe het mij tegenwoordig gaat. Welnu, ik — U meedeelen, dat mijne gezondheid<sup>17)</sup> langzamerhand<sup>18)</sup> beter —. Als de zon flink<sup>19)</sup> schijnt<sup>20)</sup> — ik reeds in den tuin wandelen en — dan een paar uren buiten blijven. 's Morgens en 's avonds — ik echter nog niet uitgaan, ik — mijne herstelling<sup>21)</sup> daarmee<sup>22)</sup> ook niet bespoedigen<sup>23)</sup>. Zoodra ik geheel beter —, — ik U schrijven, wanneer ik U eens kom opzoeken<sup>24)</sup>. — ik mijn vriend D. meebrengen<sup>25)</sup>. Hij — zoo gaarne uwen tuin eens zien en — U ook wel eens uitnoodigen<sup>26)</sup> om zijne bloemen te komen bewonderen<sup>27)</sup>.

17) health. 18) gradually. 19) bright. 20) to shine. 21) recovery. 22) with it. 23) to hasten, accelerate. 24) to visit, to call upon. 25) to bring with. 26) to invite. 27) to admire.

## Twentieth Lesson. Twintigste Les.

[*twintaxsta les.*]

### Trek van zelfverloochening.

Szekuli, een Oostenrijksch kapitein, werd tot opsluiting in de vesting Szegedin veroordeeld. De bediende van dezen ongelukkige nam het besluit, zich tot den keizer te wenden, om hem te verzoeken, zijn meester in de vesting te mogen volgen. „Wat wilt ge bij uw meester doen?“ vroeg hem de keizer, „ge weet immers, dat hij als misdadiger veroordeeld is.“ „Ik weet het“, antwoordde de trouwe dienaar, „maar ik heb hem in zijn geluk gediend, en nu bied ik mij aan, hem ook in zijn ongeluk te volgen. Hij zal mijne diensten op zijn ouden dag noodig hebben en wanneer ik niets anders doen kan om zijn lot te verzachten, dan zal ik hem ten minste troosten en hem aannoodigen om zijn

straf geduldig te verdragen.“ De keizer, door zulk een zeldzame verknochtheid en trouw geroerd, veroorloofde hem, zijn meester te vergezellen en stond hem zelfs een klein pensioen toe.

*Trek* [trek] (m.) **trait**  
*zelfverloochening* [zelfverloochening]  
**self-denial**  
*opsluiting* [vpslœyting] **confinement**  
*vesting* [vœtɪŋ] **fortress**  
*keizer* [keizər] **emperor**  
*misdadiger* [mɪzɪdɑdɪgər] **criminal**  
*dienaar* [dɪnɑr] **servant**  
*het lot* [het lot] **fate**  
*straf* [strɑf] (f.) **punishment**  
*verknóchtheid* [vərknœchtheid] **attachment**  
*trouw* [trœu] (f.) **fidelity**  
*het pensioen* [het pensioen] **pension**  
*het geluk* [het gelyk] **fortune**  
*het ongeluk* [het unglyk] **misfortune**  
*Oostenrijksch* [oostənreikʃ] **Austrian**  
*trouw* [trœu] (Adj.) **faithful**

*wanneer* [canner] **if**  
*niets anders . . . dan* [nits anders . . . dan] **only**  
*ten minste* [tən mɪnstə] **at least**  
*zelfs* [zɛlfs] **even**  
*veroordeelen* [vərordelən] **to condemn**  
*een besluit nemen* [ən bəslœt nemen] **to resolve**  
*verzoeken* [vərzøkən] **to beg**  
*aanbieden* [aənbidən] **to offer**  
*noodig hebben* [nodɪg hɛbən] **to want** [gate  
*verzachten* [vərzɑxtən] **to mitigate**  
*troosten* [trostən] **to console**  
*aanmoedigen* [aənmoedɪgən] **to encourage**  
*verdragen* [vərdrɑgən] **to bear**  
*roeren* [rœrən] **to touch**  
*veroorloven* [vərørlovən] **to allow**  
*vergezellen* [vərgzɛllən] **to accompany**

(!) *toestaan* [tustɑn] **to allow, to permit**: *ik sta toe, ik stond toe, ik heb toegestaan.*

### Conversation.

*Waarom werd Szekuli veroordeeld?*  
*Welk besluit nam de beziende van den kapitein?*  
*Wat vroeg hem de keizer?*  
*Hoe luidde het antwoord van den trouwen dienaar?*  
*Wat dacht de oude man ten minste nog te kunnen doen?*  
*Waarom veroorloofde de keizer hem zijn meester te vergezellen?*  
*Wat deed de keizer duerenboren?*

### Verbs. (Continued.)

**Strong Verbs.** *Sterke* [sterkə] **werkwoorden.**

§ 313. Paradigm of a Verb of the Strong Conjugation (s. § 170):

#### Indicative.

*Ik geef* I give  
*hij geeft*

#### Present.

#### Subjunctive.

*Ik geve* I give  
*hij geve*



*wij geven*  
*gij geeft*  
*zij geven.*

*wij geven*  
*gij geeft*  
*zij geven.*

## Past.

*Ik gaf* I gave  
*hij gaf*  
*wij gaven*  
*gij geeft*  
*zij gaven.*

*Ik gave* I gave  
*hij gave*  
*wij gaven*  
*gij geeft*  
*zij gaven.*

## Present Perfect.

*Ik heb gegeven enz.* I have  
 given &c.

*Ik hebbe gegeven enz.* I have  
 given &c.

## Pluperfect.

*Ik had gegeven enz.* I had  
 given &c.

*Ik hadde gegeven enz.* I had  
 given &c.

## Future Indefinite.

*Ik zal geven enz.* I shall give  
 &c.

Wanting.

## Future Perfect.

*Ik zal gegeven hebben enz.* I  
 shall have given &c.

Wanting.

## Present Conditional.

*Ik zou(de) geven enz.* I should  
 give &c.

*Ik zoude geven enz.* I should  
 give &c.

## Past Conditional.

*Ik zou(de) gegeven hebben enz.*  
 I should have given &c.

*Ik zoude gegeven hebben enz.*  
 I should have given &c.

## Imperative.

S. *Geef!* give!

Pl. *Geef!* give!

§ 314. For the Conjugation of a Strong Verb we must know besides the Infinitive: a) the Sing. of the Past Ind., b) the Plural of the Past Ind., c) the Past Participle; all other tenses are formed like those of a Weak Verb, except the Past Subjunctive which is formed from the Plural of the Past Ind.: *wij gaven* — *ik (hij) gave*; *wij schreven* — *ik (hij) schreve*; the 3 P. Pl. Past Subj. are the same as those of the Indicative.

§ 315. According to their vowel-change all strong verbs may be divided into seven classes:

Indicative.				Past Participle.
	Present.	Past S.	Past Pl.	
I	<i>berg</i>	<i>borg</i>	<i>borgen</i>	<i>geborgen</i>
	<i>bind</i>	<i>bond</i>	<i>bonden</i>	<i>gebonden</i>
II	<i>neem</i>	<i>nam</i>	<i>namen</i>	<i>genomen</i>
III	<i>lees</i>	<i>las</i>	<i>lazen</i>	<i>gelezen</i>
IV	<i>drijf</i>	<i>dreef</i>	<i>dreven</i>	<i>gedreven</i>
V	<i>bied</i>	<i>bood</i>	<i>boden</i>	<i>geboden</i>
	<i>sluit</i>	<i>sloot</i>	<i>sloten</i>	<i>gesloten</i>
VI	<i>vaar</i>	<i>voer</i>	<i>voeren</i>	<i>gevaaren</i>
VII	a) <i>hang</i>	<i>hing</i>	<i>hingen</i>	<i>gehangen</i>
	b) <i>val</i>	<i>viel</i>	<i>vielen</i>	<i>gefallen</i>
	c) <i>slaap</i>	<i>sliep</i>	<i>sliepen</i>	<i>geslapen</i>
	d) <i>loop</i>	<i>liep</i>	<i>liepen</i>	<i>gelopen</i>
	e) <i>roep</i>	<i>riep</i>	<i>riepen</i>	<i>geroepen</i>

§ 316. The Verbs of the **1st Class** have in the Present Tense *e* or *i* followed by two or more consonants; in the S. and Pl. of the Imp. and in the Past Part. they have short *o*.

To this class belong: *bederven* to spoil, *beginnen* to begin, *bergen* to hide, *bersten* to burst (also weak in the Imp.; in the P. P. *gebarsten* or *geborsten*), *binden* to bind, *blinken* to shine, *delcen* to dig, *dringen* to press, *drinken* to drink, *dwingen* to force, *gelden* to be worth, *glimmen* to glimmer, *glimpen* to shine faintly, *helpen* to help, *kerven* to carve, *klimmen* to climb, *klinken* to sound, *krimpen* to shrink, *melken* to milk, *ontginnen* to work (a mine), *schelden* to call names, *slinken* to shrink, *smelten* to melt, *spinnen* to spin, *springen* to spring, *sterven* to die, *stinken* to stink, *vechten* to fight, *vlechten* to twist, *verslinden* to devour, *verzwinden* to disappear, *vinden* to find, *werpen* to throw, *werven* to recruit, *worden* to become, *winden* to wind, *winnen* to win, *wringen* to wring, *zvelgen* to swallow, *zwellen* to swell, *zwemmen* to swim, *zweren* to roam, *zingen* to sing, *zinken* to sink.

The verbs *treffen* to hit and *schrikken* to startle (intr.) have passed from the 3<sup>rd</sup> class into the 1<sup>st</sup>. Of the obsolete verbs *belgen* and *gerinnen* the Participles *verbolgen* (angry) and *geronnen* (clotted) are left only.

The verbs *bederven*, *helpen*, *sterven*, *werpen*, *wervèn* and *zweren*, have now *ie* instead of *o* in the Past: *bedierf*, *bedierven* &c. As for *worden*, s. § 189.

§ 317. The Verbs of the **2nd Class** have in the Present Tense *ee* [*e*] followed by a liquid consonant or by *k*. The S. of the Imp. has *a* [*a*] the Pl. *a* [*a*], the P. P. has *o* [*o*].

To this class belong: *bevelen* to order, *breken* to break, *nemen* to take, *spreken* to speak, *steken* to sting, *stelen* to steal, *wreken* to revenge. Of the verbs *beren* and *helen* the P. P. only are left: *geboren* born, *verholen* concealed.

The verbs: *komen*: *kom*, *kam*, *kamen*, *gekomen* [*komən*: *kvm*, *kram*, *kramən*, *gəkomən*] to come, *zweren*: *zweer*, *zwoer*, *zwoeren*, *gezwoeren* to swear and *scheren*: *scheer*, *schoor*, *schoren*, *geschoren* to shave, deviate from the vowel-change of this class. *Wreken* has a weak Imp.

§ 318. The Verbs of the **3rd Class** have in the Present Tense and in the P. P. a long *e* followed by hard consonants (except *k*); in the S. of the Imp. a **short** and in the Pl. of the Imp. a **long a**.

To this class belong: *eten* (P. P. *gegeten*) to eat, *genezen* to cure, *geven* to give, *lezen* to read, *meten* to measure, *treden* to step, *vergeten* to forget, *vreten* to devour.

The following verbs are irregular: *bewegen* to move, and *wegen*: *weeg*, *woog*, *wogen*, *gewogen* to weigh; *plegen* to be accustomed = *pleeg*, *placht*, *plachten*. P. P. wanting; *plegen* = to commit and *verplegen* = to nurse, are weak. *Bidden* to pray, *liggen* to lie and *zitten* to sit have *i* in the Present Tense instead of *e*: *bid*, *lig*, *zit*, in the other tenses they follow the general rule. To this class belongs also the monosyllabic verb: *zich*, see § 305.

§ 319. The Verbs of the **4th Class** have in the Present Tense *ij*, in the S. of the Imp. *ee*, in the Pl. of the Imp. and in the P. P. *e*.

To this class belong: *belijden* to confess, *bezwijken* to yield, *bijten* to bite, *blijken* to appear, *blijven* to remain, *drijven* to float, *glijden* to glide, *grijpen* to catch, *hijschen* to hoist, *kijken* to look, *kijven* to wrangle, *knijpen* to pinch, *krijten* to weep, *kwijten* to acquit, *lijden* to suffer, *lijden* to avoid, *nijgen* to courtesy, *nijpen* to pinch, *overlijden* to die, *pijpen* to whistle, *prijzen* to praise, *rijden* to ride or to drive, *rijgen* to lace, *rijten* to tear, *rijven* to rake, *rijzen* to rise, *schijnen* to seem or to shine, *schrijden* to stride, *schrijven* to write, *slijpen* to grind, *slijten* to wear out, *snijten* to fling, *snijden* to cut, *splijten* to split, *stijgen* to mount, *strijden* to fight, *strijken* to stroke, *verdwijnen* to disappear, *wijken* to retreat, *wijten* to impute, *wrijven* to rub, *zijgen* to filter or to sink down, *zwijgen* to be silent.

(*Aan*)*tijgen* to accuse, *bezwijmen* to swoon, *grijnen* to fret, *krijgen* to get, *krijschen* to shriek are weak or strong. *Krijgen* = to war, *stijven* in a fig. sense (i. e. *in het kwaad stijven* to encourage, *pijpen* in *aanpijpen* to light a pipe, are weak.

§ 320. The Verbs of the **5th Class** have in the Present Tense *ie* or *ui*, in the S. of the Imp. *oo*, in the Pl. of the Imp. and in the P. P. *o*.

To this class belong: a) *bieden* to offer, *bedriegen* to cheat, *gieten* to pour, *genieten* to enjoy, *liegen* to lie, *schieten* to shoot, *verdrieten* to sadden, *vlieden* to flee, *vliegen* to fly, *clieten* to flow, *zieden* to seethe, and three verbs which change in the Past and in the P. P. *z* into *r*: *verkiezen* to elect, *verliezen* to lose, *vriezen* to freeze; b) *buigen* to bend, *druipen* to drip, *duiken* to dive, *kluiven* to pick, *kruipen* to creep, *luiken* to shut, *ontluiken* to open, *ruiken* to smell, *schuiven* to push, *sluipen* to sneak, *sluiten* to shut, *snuiten* to blow (one's nose) or to snuff (a candle), *snuiven* to take snuff, *spruiten* to sprout, *sputten* to spout, *stuiten* to fly, to be dusty, *zuigen* to suck, *zuipen* to drink (immoderately).

*Kruien* to wheel and *schuilen* to hide may be conjugated weak or strong.

*Brouwen* to brew has become weak, but besides *gebrouwd* the old P. P. *gebrouwen* still exists: the verb *tieën* to draw or to go, is lost now, but the Imp. *toog*—*togen* and the P. P. *getogen* are still used.

§ 321. The Verbs of the **6th Class** have in the Present Tense and in the P. P. a long *a*, in the Imp. S. and Pl. *u* (*oe*).

To this class belong: a) *dragen* to carry, *graven* to dig, *varen* to navigate; b) *lachen* to laugh, *laden* to load, and *malen* to grind which have a weak Past Tense: *laadde*, *lachte*, *maalde*; c) *zweren* to swear which has a long *o* in the P. P.: *gezworen*; d) the irregular verbs *slaan*, *staan* (s. § 305); e) the Past-forms *joeg*, *vroeg* and *woei* or *jaugde*, *vraagde*, *waaide* of the weak verbs *jagen* to hunt, *vragen* to ask, *waien* to blow.

§ 322. The Verbs of the **7th Class** have the same vowel in the Present Tense and in the P. P., in the Imp. they have *ī* or *ī* (*ī* — *ie*).

To this class belong:

- a) *hangen* to hang, *vangen* to catch and the Past-forms of the irr. verb *gaan*, s. § 305;
- b) *vallen* to fall, *wassen* to grow, *wasschen* to wash and the Imperfect forms *hieſ* — *hiecen*, *schiep* — *schiepen* of

- the verbs *heffen* to lift and *scheppen* to create: P. P.: *geheven, geschapen*; *scheppen* is conjugated weak in all other meanings i. e. *hij schepte water* he scooped water;
- c) *blazen* to blow, *laten* to let, *raden* to advise or to guess (Past *ried* and *raadde*), *slapen* to sleep;
- d) *houden* to hold (Past *hield*), *houwen* to hew (Past *hieuw*), *loopen* to run and *stooten* to push;
- e) *roepen* to call.

The verbs: *bakken* to bake, *bannen* to banish, *braden* to roast, *heeten* to call, *scheiden* to separate, *spannen* to stretch, *vouwen* to fold, *zouten* to salt, have become weak in the Imp., the strong P. P. is left only.

### Exercises.

#### 41.

Write down the 1<sup>st</sup> P. S. of the Present T., the 1<sup>st</sup> P. S. and Pl. of the Imp. Ind., the 1<sup>st</sup> P. S. of the Imp. Subj. and the P. P. of the verbs mentioned in the §§ 316—322.

Example: *ik delf, ik dolf, wij dolven, ik dolve, gedolven*.

#### 42.

Conjugate the Infinitives in brackets:

### De slimme poedel.

In een herberg (zijn) vier honden. Zoodra het in den winter avond (worden), (komen) zij na elkander in de gelagkamer en (gaan) om de kachel heen liggen. De eene hond echter, een poedel, (komen) gewoonlijk wat later dan de overigen. Dan (zijn) de beste plaatsen bij de kachel reeds bezet en hij (moeten) verder af gaan liggen. Op zekeren avond (zijn) het zeer koud en zijn plaats, die zoo ver van de kachel (zijn), (willen) hem volstrekt niet bevallen. Reeds had hij meermalen heen en weer (kijken) of er geen betere plaats voor hem (zijn), maar hij (vinden) er geen. Toen (loopen) hij plotseling uit de gelagkamer en (beginnen) bij de huisdeur geducht te blaffen. Gezwind (springen) de andere honden op, (loopen) naar buiten en (blaffen) insgelijks. Toen de poedel echter de andere keffers zoo naar buiten (lokken) had, (snellen) hij stil weer de deur in, (zoeken) voor zich de beste plaats uit, (gaan) bedaard liggen en (laten) zijne kameraden blaffen, zoolang als zij maar (willen). Zoo (leggen) hij 't later vaker (*frequently*) aan, wanneer de plaatsen om de kachel heen bezet (zijn), en de gasten in de kamer, die dat spoedig (merken), (hebben) er dan telkens vermaak in.

## 43.

**Dankbaarheid van een olifant.**

Een soldaat te Pondichery (hebben) de gewoonte<sup>1)</sup>, een olifant, telkens als hij zijn soldij<sup>2)</sup> (ontvangen), een zekere hoeveelheid<sup>3)</sup> arak te geven. Eens (zijn) deze soldaat dronken<sup>4)</sup>, en daar hij buitensporigheden<sup>5)</sup> (begaan), (zetten) de wacht hem na om hem te arresteeren. In zijn onbezonnenheid (nemen) hij zijn toevlucht tot den olifant, (gaan) onder hem liggen en (slapen) in. De wacht (beproeven)<sup>6)</sup> te vergeefs, hem er weg te trekken; de olifant (verdedigen) hem met zijn slurf!<sup>7)</sup> Toen de soldaat des anderen daags, na zijn roes te hebben (uitslapen)<sup>8)</sup>, (ontwaken) en (bemerken), dat hij onder het zware dier (liggen), (schrikken) hij hevig. Maar de olifant, die ongetwijfeld zijn schrik (bemerken), (benemen) hem zijn vrees door hem met zijn slurf te streelen!<sup>9)</sup>

1) to be accustomed. 2) *de soldij* (f.) pay. 3) quantity. 4) intoxicated. 5) extravagance. 6) to try. 7) trunk. 8) to sleep oneself sober. 9) to caress.

## 44.

**Gedenkteeken<sup>1)</sup>.**

De dichter Prior (zijn) in Frankrijk als secretaris<sup>2)</sup> van Bentinck, den gezant van Willem III. Toen hij het paleis te Versailles (zien) en (komen) was bij de een en twintig prachtige schilderijen<sup>3)</sup>, waarop Lebrun de heldendaden van Lodewijk XIV had (voorstellen), (blijven) hij daarbij zoo koel<sup>4)</sup>, dat het de aandacht<sup>5)</sup> (trekken) van den Franschman<sup>6)</sup> die hem (rondleiden)<sup>7)</sup>. Deze, die zijn handelwijze aan afgunst (toeschrijven), (willen) hem dit doen gevoelen en (vragen), of het paleis<sup>8)</sup> van Kensington ook op zulke schilderijen (kunnen) roemen? „Nee mijnheer”, (antwoorden) Prior, „de gedenkteeken der groote daden, die mijn meester (verrichten) heeft, zijn op vele plaatsen<sup>9)</sup> te zien, maar niet in zijn eigen huis.”

1) monuments. 2) secretary. 3) picture. 4) cool. 5) attention. 6) Frenchman, Pl. *de Franschen*. 7) *leiden* = to conduct is weak. 8) palace. 9) *de plaats* (f.) place.

**Twenty-first Lesson. Een en twintigste Les.**

*[eenentwintigste les.]*

**De leeuw en de muis.**

Eens lag de leeuw, vermoeid van de jacht, in de koele schaduw van een plataan; een diepe slaap had zijne oogleden

gesloten. Daar kwamen eenige muizen te voorschijn en speelden driest om den leeuw heen. Weldra werden zij stouter en stouter en zonder achtung voor den koning der dieren klouterden zij op zijnen rug en zetten het uitgelaten spel ook hier voort. Daar ontwaakte plotseling de koning der dieren. Schuw vloden de muizen naar alle zijden; maar ééne talmde wat en werd door den leeuw gevangen. Bevend bad zij om haar leven en herinnerde hem eraan, dat zij een zoo zwak schepsel was en de wraak van een zoo machtig heer onwaardig. De leeuw toonde zich edelmoedig en liet de muis loopen, die aanstands ontvluchtte.

Kort daarop liep de leeuw door een duister woud om buit te vangen; maar op eens zag hij zich in het net eens jagers gevangen. Hij begon verschrikkelijk te brullen, zoodat geen dier het waagde, zijn hol te verlaten. Daar kwam de muis; zij knaagde de knopen van het net door en vroolijk ging de leeuw verder door het woud. Hij had zijn leven aan zijne grootmoedigheid te danken.

*Leeuw* [leu] lion  
*jacht* [jæxt] hunting  
*schaduw* [sradju] (m.) shadow  
*plataan* [platan] (m.) plane-tree  
*slaap* [slap] (m.) sleep  
*achtung* [actij] respect, regard  
*rug* [rxr] (m.) back  
*het leven* [het levən] life  
*het schepsel* [het sɛpsəl] creature  
*wraak* [vrak] (f.) revenge  
*het woud* [het vout] wood, forest  
*buit* [bœyt] (f.) booty  
*het net* [het net] net  
*jager* [jagər] hunter  
*het hol* [het høl] den  
*knoop* [knop] (m.) knot  
*grootmoedigheid* [grotmudæxheit]  
 magnanimity  
*vermoeid* [vərmuīt] tired  
*diep* [diip] deep  
*driest, stout* [drist, stout] daring  
*uitgelaten* [œytgəlætən] frolick-  
 some  
*schuw* [sɛyu] shy  
*berend* [bevənt] trembling

*zwak* [zvæk] feeble  
*mchtig* [mæxtər] mighty  
*onwaardig* [uncardæx] unworthy  
*edelmoedig* [edəlmudæx] generous  
*duister* [dægstər] dark  
*verschrikkelijk* [vɛrsɛrikələk]  
 terrible  
*vroolijk* [vrələk] merry, gay  
*te voorschijn komen* [tə vɔrsɛɪn  
 komən] to appear  
*weldra* [vɛldra] soon  
*aanstands* [ɑnstənts] directly  
*kort daarop* [kɔrt darrɔp] a short  
 time afterwards  
*spelen* [spɛlən] to play  
*voortzatten* [vɔrtzɛtən] to continue  
*optuaken* [ɔutrəkən] to awake  
*herinneren* [hɛrinnərən] to re-  
 member  
*zich toonen* [z. tonən] to show  
 oneself  
*ontvluchten* [ɔntvlɛxtən] to es-  
 cape  
*brullen* [brɛlən] to roar  
*knaagen* [knagən] to gnaw

(!) *verdergaan* [vɛrdərgən] to go further

*te danken hebben aan* [tə dænkən hɛbən ɑn] to owe to.

### Conversation.

*Waar lag de vermoeide leeuw?*

*Welke dieren kwamen op eens te voorschijn en wat deden zij?*

*Wat deden zij, toen zij al stouter en stouter werden?*

*Wat gebeurde er, toen de koning der dieren ontwaakte?*  
*Waarvoor bad de gegangen muis?*  
*Waarvan herinnerde zij den leeuw?*  
*Voldeed deze aan haar verzoek?*  
*Wat overkwam den leeuw kort daarop?*  
*Waarom durfde geen dier zijn hol verlaten?*  
*Bleef de leeuw in het net?*  
*Waarvan had hij zijn leven te danken?*

### Verbs. (Continued.)

§ 323. Alphabetical list of the strong and the irregular Verbs.<sup>1</sup>

Infinitive.	Imperf. S.	Imperf. Pl.	Past Part.
<b>Bakken</b> (7) to bake	(bakte)	(bakten)	gebakken
<b>bannen</b> (7) to banish	(bande)	(banden)	gebannen
<b>bederren</b> (1) to spoil	bedierf	bedierven	bedorren
<b>bedriegen</b> (5) to cheat	bedroog	bedrogen	bedrogen
<b>beginnen</b> (1) to begin	begon	begonnen	begonnen
<b>belijden</b> (4) to confess	beleed	beleden	beleden
<b>bergen</b> (1) to hide	borg	borgen	geborgen
<b>bersten</b> (1) to burst	borst*	borsten*	geborsten, ge- barsten
<b>berelen</b> (2) to order	beral	bevalen	berolen
<b>bevegen</b> (3) to move	beuwoog	beuwoegen	beuwoegen
<b>bezwijken</b> (4) to succumb	bezwweek	bezwekten	bezwekten
<b>bezwijmen</b> * (4) to faint	bezwreem	bezwemen	bezwemen
<b>bidden</b> (3) to pray, to beg	bad	baden	gebeden
<b>bieden</b> (5) to offer	bood	boeden	geboden
<b>bijten</b> (4) to bite	heet	beten	gebeten
<b>binden</b> (1) to bind	bond	bonden	gebonden
<b>blazen</b> (7) to blow	blies	bliezen	geblazen
<b>blijken</b> (4) to appear	bleek	bleken	gebleken
<b>blijven</b> (4) to remain	bleef	bleven	gebleven
<b>blinken</b> (1) to shine, to glitter	blonk	blonken	geblonken
<b>braden</b> (7) to roast	(braadde)	(bruadden)	gebraden
<b>breken</b> (2) to break	brak	braken	gebroken
<b>brouwen</b> (5) to brew	(brouwde)	(brouaden)	gebrouwen*
<b>buigen</b> (5) to bend	boog	bogen	gebogen
<b>delven</b> (1) to dig	dolf	dolven	gedolven
<b>dingen</b> (1) to bargain	dong	dongen	gedongen
<b>doen</b> to do (§ 305)	deed	deden	gedaan
<b>dragen</b> (6) to carry	droeg	droegen	gedragen
<b>drijven</b> (4) to float	dreef	drezen	gedreven
<b>dringen</b> (1) to urge	drong	drongen	gedrongen

<sup>1</sup> Verbs or forms with a \* are also conjugated weak. Weak forms are put in brackets. Compound verbs must be looked for under their primitives. — The figures refer to the classes.



Infinitive.	Imperf. S.	Imperf. Pl.	Past Part.
<i>drinken</i> (1) to drink	<i>dronk</i>	<i>dronken</i>	<i>gedronken</i>
<i>druipen</i> (5) to drip	<i>droop</i>	<i>dropen</i>	<i>gedropen</i>
<i>duiken</i> (5) to dive	<i>dook</i>	<i>doken</i>	<i>gedoken</i>
<i>dwingen</i> (1) to force	<i>dwong</i>	<i>dwongen</i>	<i>gedwongen</i>
<i>eten</i> (3) to eat	<i>at</i>	<i>aten</i>	<i>gegeten</i>
<i>fluiten</i> (5) to whistle	<i>floot</i>	<i>floten</i>	<i>gefloten</i>
<i>gaan</i> (7) to go	<i>ging</i>	<i>gingen</i>	<i>gegaan</i>
<i>gelden</i> (1) to be worth	<i>gold</i>	<i>golden</i>	<i>gegouden</i>
<i>(ge)lijken</i> (4) to resemble	<i>(ge)leek</i>	<i>(ge)leken</i>	<i>geleken</i>
<i>genezen</i> (3) to cure, to re- cover	<i>genas</i>	<i>genazen</i>	<i>genezen</i>
<i>genieten</i> (5) to enjoy	<i>genoot</i>	<i>genoten</i>	<i>genoten</i>
<i>geven</i> (3) to give	<i>gaf</i>	<i>gaven</i>	<i>gegeven</i>
<i>gieten</i> (5) to pour	<i>goot</i>	<i>goten</i>	<i>gegoten</i>
<i>glijden</i> (4) to glide	<i>gleed</i>	<i>gleden</i>	<i>gegleden</i>
<i>glimmen</i> (1) to glow faintly	<i>glom</i>	<i>glommen</i>	<i>geglommen</i>
<i>graven</i> (6) to dig	<i>groef</i>	<i>groeven</i>	<i>gegraven</i>
<i>grienen*</i> (4) to weep	<i>green</i>	<i>greuen</i>	<i>gegreuen</i>
<i>grijpen</i> (4) to catch	<i>greep</i>	<i>grepen</i>	<i>gegrepen</i>
<i>hangen</i> (7) to hang	<i>hing</i>	<i>hingen</i>	<i>gehangen</i>
<i>heten</i> (7) to be called	<i>(heette)</i>	<i>(heetten)</i>	<i>geheeten</i>
<i>heffen</i> (7) to lift	<i>hief</i>	<i>hielen</i>	<i>geheven</i>
<i>helpen</i> (1) to help	<i>hielp</i>	<i>hielpen</i>	<i>geholpen</i>
<i>hijschen</i> (4) to hoist	<i>heesch</i>	<i>heschen</i>	<i>geheschen</i>
<i>houden</i> (7) to hold	<i>hield</i>	<i>hielden</i>	<i>gehouden</i>
<i>houwen</i> (7) to hew	<i>hieuw</i>	<i>hieuwen</i>	<i>gehouden</i>
<i>jagen*</i> to hunt	<i>joeg</i> (6)	<i>joegen</i> (6)	<i>(gejaagd)</i>
<i>kerven</i> (1) to carve	<i>korf</i>	<i>korven</i>	<i>gekorven</i>
<i>kieszen</i> (5) to choose	<i>koos</i>	<i>kozen</i>	<i>gekozen</i>
<i>kijken</i> (4) to look	<i>keek</i>	<i>keken</i>	<i>gekeken</i>
<i>kijven</i> (4) to wrangle	<i>keef</i>	<i>keren</i>	<i>gekeren</i>
<i>klimmen</i> (1) to climb	<i>klim</i>	<i>klimmen</i>	<i>geklommen</i>
<i>klinken</i> (1) to sound	<i>klonk</i>	<i>klonken</i>	<i>geklonken</i>
<i>kluiven</i> (5) to gnaw	<i>kloof</i>	<i>kloren</i>	<i>gekloren</i>
<i>knijpen</i> (4) to pinch	<i>kneep</i>	<i>knepen</i>	<i>geknepen</i>
<i>komen</i> (2) to come	<i>kwam</i>	<i>kwamen</i>	<i>gekomen</i>
<i>krijgen</i> (4) to get	<i>kreeg</i>	<i>kregen</i>	<i>gekregen</i>
<i>krijschen*</i> (4) to shriek	<i>kreesch</i>	<i>kreschen</i>	<i>gekreschen</i>
<i>krijten</i> (4) to weep	<i>kreet</i>	<i>kreten</i>	<i>gekreten</i>
<i>krimpen</i> (1) to shrink	<i>kromp</i>	<i>krompen</i>	<i>gekrompen</i>
<i>kruien*</i> (5) to wheel	<i>krooi</i>	<i>krooien</i>	<i>gekrooien</i>
<i>kruipen</i> (5) to creep	<i>kroop</i>	<i>kropen</i>	<i>gekropen</i>
<i>kwijten</i> (4) to acquit	<i>kweet</i>	<i>kweten</i>	<i>gekweeten</i>
<i>lachen</i> (6) to laugh	<i>(lachte)</i>	<i>(lachten)</i>	<i>gelachen</i>
<i>laden</i> (6) to load	<i>(laadde)</i>	<i>(laadden)</i>	<i>geladen</i>
<i>laten</i> (7) to let	<i>liet</i>	<i>lieten</i>	<i>gelaten</i>
<i>lezen</i> (3) to read	<i>las</i>	<i>lazen</i>	<i>gelezen</i>
<i>liegen</i> (5) to lie	<i>loog</i>	<i>logen</i>	<i>gelogen</i>
<i>liggen</i> (3) to lie	<i>lag</i>	<i>lagen</i>	<i>gelegen</i>
<i>lijden</i> (4) to suffer	<i>leed</i>	<i>leden</i>	<i>geleden</i>
<i>loopen</i> (7) to walk	<i>liep</i>	<i>liepen</i>	<i>gelopen</i>

Infinitive.	Imperf. S.	Imperf. Pl.	Past Part.
<i>malen</i> (6) to grind	<i>(maalde)</i>	<i>(maalden)</i>	<i>gemalen</i>
<i>melken</i> (1) to milk	<i>molkt</i>	<i>molken</i>	<i>gemolken</i>
<i>meten</i> (3) to measure	<i>mat</i>	<i>maten</i>	<i>gemeten</i>
<i>mijden</i> (4) to avoid	<i>meed</i>	<i>meden</i>	<i>gemeden</i>
<i>nemen</i> (2) to take	<i>nam</i>	<i>namen</i>	<i>genomen</i>
<i>nijgen</i> (4) to courtesy	<i>neeg</i>	<i>negen</i>	<i>genegen</i>
<i>nippen</i> (4) to pinch	<i>neep</i>	<i>nepen</i>	<i>genepen</i>
<i>ontbijten</i> (4) to breakfast	<i>ontbeet</i>	<i>ontbeten</i>	<i>ontbeten</i>
<i>ontginnen</i> (1) to work a mine	<i>ontgon</i>	<i>ontgonnen</i>	<i>ontgonnen</i>
<i>ontluiken</i> (5) to open	<i>ontlook</i>	<i>ontloken</i>	<i>ontloken</i>
<i>overlijden</i> (4) to die	<i>overleed</i>	<i>overleden</i>	<i>overleden</i>
<i>pijpen</i> (4) to whistle	<i>peep</i>	<i>pepen</i>	<i>gepepen</i>
<i>plegen</i> (3) to be accustomed	<i>placht</i>	<i>plachten</i>	<i>(gepleegd)</i>
<i>pluizen</i> (5) to pick (oakum)	<i>ploos</i>	<i>plozen</i>	<i>geplozen</i>
<i>prijzen</i> (4) to praise	<i>prees</i>	<i>prezen</i>	<i>geprezen</i>
<i>raden</i> (7) to advise, to guess	<i>ried*</i>	<i>rieden*</i>	<i>geraden</i>
<i>rijden</i> (4) to ride, to drive	<i>reed</i>	<i>reden</i>	<i>gereden</i>
<i>rijgen</i> (4) to lace	<i>reeg</i>	<i>regen</i>	<i>geregen</i>
<i>rijten</i> (4) to tear	<i>rect</i>	<i>reten</i>	<i>gereten</i>
<i>rijven</i> (4) to rake	<i>reef</i>	<i>reeren</i>	<i>gereren</i>
<i>rijzen</i> (4) to rise	<i>rees</i>	<i>rezen</i>	<i>gerezen</i>
<i>roepen</i> (7) to call	<i>riep</i>	<i>riepen</i>	<i>geroepen</i>
<i>ruiken</i> (5) to smell	<i>rook</i>	<i>roken</i>	<i>geroken</i>
<i>scheiden</i> (7) to separate	<i>(scheide)</i>	<i>(scheidden)</i>	<i>gescheiden</i>
<i>schelden</i> (1) to call names	<i>schold</i>	<i>scholden</i>	<i>gescholden</i>
<i>schenden</i> (1) to violate	<i>schond</i>	<i>schonden</i>	<i>geschonden</i>
<i>schenken</i> (1) to pour, to present	<i>schonk</i>	<i>schonken</i>	<i>geschonken</i>
<i>scheppen</i> (7) to create	<i>schiep</i>	<i>schiepen</i>	<i>geschapen</i>
<i>scheren</i> (2) to shave	<i>schoor</i>	<i>schoren</i>	<i>geschoren</i>
<i>schieten</i> (5) to shoot	<i>schoot</i>	<i>schoten</i>	<i>geschoten</i>
<i>schijnen</i> (4) to shine	<i>scheen</i>	<i>schenen</i>	<i>geschenen</i>
<i>schrijden</i> (4) to stride	<i>schreed</i>	<i>schreden</i>	<i>geschreden</i>
<i>schrijven</i> (4) to write	<i>schreef</i>	<i>schreven</i>	<i>geschreven</i>
<i>schrikken*</i> (1) (intr.) to startle	<i>schrok</i>	<i>schrokken</i>	<i>geschrokken</i>
<i>schuilen*</i> (5) to hide	<i>school</i>	<i>scholen</i>	<i>gescholen</i>
<i>schuiven</i> (5) to push	<i>schoof</i>	<i>schoven</i>	<i>geschoven</i>
<i>slaan</i> (6) to beat	<i>slorg</i>	<i>sloegen</i>	<i>geslagen</i>
<i>slapen</i> (7) to sleep	<i>sliep</i>	<i>sliepen</i>	<i>geslapen</i>
<i>slijpen</i> (4) to grind	<i>sleep</i>	<i>slepen</i>	<i>geslepen</i>
<i>slijten</i> (4) to wear out, to retail	<i>sleet</i>	<i>sliten</i>	<i>gesleten</i>
<i>slinken</i> (1) to shrink	<i>slonk</i>	<i>slonken</i>	<i>geslonken</i>
<i>sluiken</i> (5) to smuggle	<i>slook</i>	<i>sloken</i>	<i>gesloken</i>
<i>sluipen</i> (5) to slink	<i>sloop</i>	<i>slopen</i>	<i>geslopen</i>
<i>sluiten</i> (5) to shut	<i>sloot</i>	<i>sloten</i>	<i>gesloten</i>
<i>smelten</i> (1) to melt	<i>smolt</i>	<i>smolten</i>	<i>gesmolten</i>
<i>smijten</i> (4) to cast	<i>smeet</i>	<i>smeten</i>	<i>gesmeten</i>

Infinitive.	Imperf. S.	Imperf. Pl.	Past Part.
<i>snijden</i> (4) to cut	<i>sneed</i>	<i>sneden</i>	<i>gesneden</i>
<i>snuiten</i> (5) to blow, to snuff	<i>snoot</i>	<i>snoten</i>	<i>gesnoten</i>
<i>snuffen</i> (5) to take snuff	<i>snooft</i>	<i>snoven</i>	<i>gesnoven</i>
<i>spannen</i> (7) to stretch	<i>(spande)</i>	<i>(spanden)</i>	<i>gespannen</i>
<i>spijten</i> (4) to regret	<i>speet</i>	—	<i>gespeten</i>
<i>spinnen</i> (1) to spin	<i>spoon</i>	<i>spinnen</i>	<i>gesponnen</i>
<i>splijten</i> (4) to split	<i>spleet</i>	<i>splten</i>	<i>gespleten</i>
<i>spreken</i> (2) to speak	<i>sprak</i>	<i>spraken</i>	<i>gesproken</i>
<i>springen</i> (1) to spring	<i>sprong</i>	<i>sprongen</i>	<i>gesprongen</i>
<i>spruiten</i> (5) to sprout	<i>sproot</i>	<i>sproten</i>	<i>gesproten</i>
<i>spugen</i> (5) to spit	<i>spooft</i>	<i>spogen</i>	<i>gespogen</i>
<i>sputten</i> (5) to spout	<i>spoot</i>	<i>spoten</i>	<i>gespoten</i>
<i>staan</i> (6) to stand	<i>stond</i>	<i>stonden</i>	<i>gestaan</i>
<i>steken</i> (2) to sting, to put	<i>stak</i>	<i>staken</i>	<i>gestoken</i>
<i>stelen</i> (2) to steal	<i>stal</i>	<i>stalen</i>	<i>gestolen</i>
<i>sterren</i> (1) to die	<i>stierf</i>	<i>stierren</i>	<i>gestorven</i>
<i>stijgen</i> (4) to mount	<i>steeg</i>	<i>stegen</i>	<i>gestegen</i>
<i>stijven</i> (4) to starch	<i>steef</i>	<i>sterven</i>	<i>gesteven</i>
<i>stinken</i> (1) to stink	<i>stank</i>	<i>stonken</i>	<i>gestonken</i>
<i>stooten</i> (7) to push	<i>stiet</i>	<i>stieten</i>	<i>gestooten</i>
<i>strijden</i> (4) to fight	<i>streed</i>	<i>streden</i>	<i>gestreden</i>
<i>strijken</i> (4) to stroke	<i>streek</i>	<i>streken</i>	<i>gestreken</i>
<i>stuiven</i> (5) to be dusty	<i>stoof</i>	<i>stoven</i>	<i>gestoven</i>
<i>(tiefen)</i> (5) to draw, to go	<i>toog</i>	<i>togen</i>	<i>getogen</i>
<i>tijgen</i> (4) to accuse	<i>teeg</i>	<i>tegen</i>	<i>getegen</i>
<i>treden</i> (3) to tread	<i>trad</i>	<i>traden</i>	<i>getreden</i>
<i>treffen</i> (1) to hit	<i>trof</i>	<i>troffen</i>	<i>getroffen</i>
<i>trekken</i> (1) to draw	<i>trok</i>	<i>trokken</i>	<i>getrokken</i>
<i>vallen</i> (7) to fall	<i>viel</i>	<i>vielen</i>	<i>gevallen</i>
<i>vangen</i> (7) to catch	<i>ving</i>	<i>vingen</i>	<i>gevangen</i>
<i>varen</i> (6) to navigate	<i>voer</i>	<i>voeren</i>	<i>gevaaren</i>
<i>vechten</i> (1) to fight	<i>vocht</i>	<i>vochten</i>	<i>gevochten</i>
<i>verdrieten</i> (5) to vex	<i>verdroot</i>	<i>verdrotten</i>	<i>verdrotten</i>
<i>verdwijnen</i> (4) to disappear	<i>verduiceen</i>	<i>verduicnen</i>	<i>verduicnen</i>
<i>vergeten</i> (3) to forget	<i>vergat</i>	<i>vergeten</i>	<i>vergeten</i>
<i>verkiezen</i> (5) to prefer	<i>verkoos</i>	<i>verkozen</i>	<i>verkozen</i>
<i>verliezen</i> (5) to lose	<i>verloor</i>	<i>verloren</i>	<i>verloren</i>
<i>verslinden</i> (1) to devour	<i>verslond</i>	<i>verslonden</i>	<i>verslonden</i>
<i>verzuinden</i> (1) to disappear	<i>verzuond</i>	<i>verzuonden</i>	<i>verzuonden</i>
<i>vinden</i> (1) to find	<i>vond</i>	<i>vonden</i>	<i>geronden</i>
<i>vlechten</i> (1) to twist	<i>vlocht</i>	<i>vlochten</i>	<i>gerlochten</i>
<i>vlieden</i> (5) to flee	<i>vlood</i>	<i>vloten</i>	<i>gerloten</i>
<i>vliegen</i> (5) to fly	<i>vloog</i>	<i>vlogen</i>	<i>gevlogen</i>
<i>vlieten</i> (5) to flow	<i>vloot</i>	<i>vloten</i>	<i>gevloten</i>
<i>vouwen</i> (7) to fold	<i>(vouwde)</i>	<i>(vouwden)</i>	<i>gevouwen</i>
<i>vragen</i> to ask	<i>vroeg*</i> (6)	<i>vroegen*</i> (6)	<i>(gevraagd)</i>
<i>vreten</i> (3) to devour	<i>vrat</i>	<i>vraten</i>	<i>gevreten</i>
<i>vriezen</i> (5) to freeze	<i>vroor</i>	—	<i>(gevroren)</i>
<i>waaien</i> to blow	<i>woei*</i> (6)	<i>woeien*</i> (6)	<i>(gewaaid)</i>
<i>wasschen</i> (7) to wash	<i>wiesch*</i>	<i>wieschen*</i>	<i>gewasschen</i>

Indinitive.	Imperf. S.	Imperf. Pl.	Past Part.
<i>wassen</i> (7) to grow	<i>wies</i>	<i>wiesen</i>	<i>gewassen</i>
<i>wegen</i> (3) to weigh	<i>woog</i>	<i>wogen</i>	<i>gewogen</i>
<i>werpen</i> (1) to throw	<i>wierp</i>	<i>wierpen</i>	<i>geworpen</i>
<i>weren</i> (1) to recruit	<i>wierf</i>	<i>wierren</i>	<i>geworren</i>
<i>weten</i> to know	<i>wist</i>	<i>wisten</i>	<i>geweten</i>
<i>wezen</i> (3), cf. <i>zijn</i> to be	<i>was</i>	<i>waren</i>	<i>(ge)weest</i>
<i>wijken</i> (4) to retreat	<i>week</i>	<i>weken</i>	<i>geweken</i>
<i>wijten</i> (4) to impute	<i>weet</i>	<i>weten</i>	<i>geweten</i>
<i>wijzen</i> (4) to show	<i>wees</i>	<i>wezen</i>	<i>gewezen</i>
<i>winden</i> (1) to wind	<i>wond</i>	<i>wonden</i>	<i>gewonden</i>
<i>winnen</i> (1) to win	<i>won</i>	<i>wonnen</i>	<i>gewonnen</i>
<i>worden</i> (1) to become	<i>werd</i>	<i>werden</i>	<i>geworden</i>
<i>wreken</i> (2) to revenge	<i>(wreekte)</i>	<i>(wreekten)</i>	<i>gewroken</i>
<i>wrijven</i> (4) to rub	<i>wreef</i>	<i>wrezen</i>	<i>gewreven</i>
<i>wringen</i> (1) to wring	<i>wrong</i>	<i>wrongen</i>	<i>gewrongen</i>
<i>zenden</i> (1) to send	<i>zond</i>	<i>zonden</i>	<i>gezonden</i>
<i>zien</i> (5) to see	<i>zood</i>	<i>zoden</i>	<i>gezoden</i>
<i>zien</i> (3) to see	<i>zag</i>	<i>zagen</i>	<i>gezien</i>
<i>zinken</i> (4) to filter, to sink down	<i>zeeg</i>	<i>zegen</i>	<i>gezezen</i>
<i>zijn</i> to be	<i>was</i>	<i>waren</i>	<i>geweest</i>
<i>zingen</i> (1) to sing	<i>zong</i>	<i>zongen</i>	<i>gezongen</i>
<i>zinken</i> (1) to sink	<i>zonk</i>	<i>zonken</i>	<i>gezonken</i>
<i>zinnen</i> (1) to meditate	<i>zon</i>	<i>zonnen</i>	<i>gezonnen</i>
<i>zitten</i> (3) to sit	<i>zat</i>	<i>zaten</i>	<i>gezetten</i>
<i>zouten</i> (7) to salt	<i>(zoutte)</i>	<i>(zoutten)</i>	<i>gezouten</i>
<i>zuigen</i> (5) to suck	<i>zoog</i>	<i>zogen</i>	<i>gezogen</i>
<i>zuipen</i> (5) to drink	<i>zoop</i>	<i>zopen</i>	<i>gezopen</i>
<i>zwellen</i> (1) to swallow	<i>zwolg</i>	<i>zwolgen</i>	<i>gezwolgen</i>
<i>zwellen</i> (1) to swell	<i>zwol</i>	<i>zwollen</i>	<i>gezwollen</i>
<i>zommen</i> (1) to swim	<i>zwom</i>	<i>zwommen</i>	<i>gezwommen</i>
<i>zweren</i> (6) to swear	<i>zwoer</i>	<i>zwoeren</i>	<i>gezworen</i>
<i>zweren</i> (2) to fester	<i>zwoor</i>	<i>zworen</i>	<i>gezworen</i>
<i>zweren</i> (1) to roam	<i>zwierf</i>	<i>zwierren</i>	<i>gezworren</i>
<i>zuijen</i> (4) to be silent	<i>zweeg</i>	<i>zwezen</i>	<i>gezwegen</i>

## Exercises.

45.

Conjugate the verb in brackets.

**Het gebroken hoefijzer.<sup>1)</sup>**

Een boer (gaan) met zijn zoon, den kleinen Thomas, naar de naburige stad. „Zie“, (zeggen) hij onderweg tot hem, „daar (liggen) een stuk van een hoefijzer op den grond, beur het op<sup>2)</sup> en (steken) het in uw zak.“<sup>3)</sup> — „O,“ (antwoorden) Thomas. „het is niet de moeite waard, dat men zich daarvoor (bukken). De vader (antwoorden) daarop niets, (nemen) het ijer en (steken) het in zijn zak. In het eerstvolgende dorp

1) horse-shoe. 2) opbeuren or oprapen to pick up. 3) pocket.

(verkoopen) hij het aan den smid voor een halven stuiver<sup>4)</sup> en (koopen) daarvoor kersen.<sup>5)</sup>

Hierop (vervolgen) zij hun weg. De hitte was groot. Men (zien) wijd en zijd<sup>6)</sup> huis, noch woud, noch bron.<sup>7)</sup> Thomas (sterven) bijna van dorst en (kunnen) zijn vader nauwelijks volgen.

Toen (laten) de laatste, als bij toeval, eene kers vallen. Thomas beurde haar gretig<sup>8)</sup> op en (steken) haar in den mond. Eenige schreden verder (laten) de vader een tweede kers vallen, die Thomas met dezelfde begeerigheid<sup>9)</sup> (oprapen<sup>2)</sup>). Dat (duren) zoo voert, totdat hij ze alle opgebeurd had.

Toen hij de laatste (opeten) had, (wenden) de vader zich tot hem en (zeggen): „Zie, als gij een enkele maal hadt willen bukken,<sup>10)</sup> om het hoefijzer op te beuren, dan zoudt gij niet noodig gehad hebben u honderdmaal voor de kersen te bukken.

4) een halve stuiver a half penny. 5) cherries. 6) far and wide. 7) spring. 8) eagerly. 9) greediness. 10) to stoop.

## 46.

Translate:

### Byron and his physician.

The following conversation,<sup>11)</sup> as Lord Byron himself tells us, took place<sup>12)</sup> between him and a very vain<sup>13)</sup> Italian physician, while they were travelling<sup>14)</sup> on<sup>15)</sup> the Rhine.<sup>16)</sup> “What can you do, I should like to know, which I cannot?” said the physician. “Since<sup>17)</sup> you press<sup>18)</sup> me, answered the poet,” I will just tell you. “There are three things: I have swum across the Hellespont; I have blown out a candle<sup>19)</sup> at twenty yards with a pistol-shot<sup>20)</sup>; and I have written a poem, of which 14000 copies<sup>21)</sup> were sold in one day.”

11) *gesprek*. 12) *tr.*: had place. 13) *ijdel*; cf. *idle* *lui*. 14) *tr.*: they travelled. 15) *langs*. 16) *Rijn*. 17) *daar* or *aangezien*. 18) *dwingen*. 19) *kaars* (f.). 20) *pistoolschot* (n.). 21) *exemplaar*.

## 47.

### The lame<sup>22)</sup> dog.

A man one day took a walk<sup>23)</sup> in the town, and saw a poor dog who had hurt<sup>24)</sup> his leg<sup>25)</sup> and was lame. The man took the dog home<sup>26)</sup> with him in his arms, and tied up<sup>27)</sup> his leg, and kept him in his house for two days. He then

22) *lam*. 23) to take a walk *gaan wandelen*. 24) *bezeren*. 25) *poet* (m.), *been* (n.). 26) to take home (*mee*) naar huis nemen. 27) *verbinden*.

sent the dog out of his house to find his old home; for as it was not his own dog, he had no right<sup>28)</sup> to keep him; but each day the dog came back for this kind man to dress<sup>29)</sup> his leg; and this he did till it was quite well. In a few weeks the dog came back once more and with him came another dog who was lame.

The dog who had been lame, and was now cured, first gave the man a look,<sup>30)</sup> as much as to say: "You made my leg well,<sup>31)</sup> now, pray, do the same for this poor dog who is come with me."

28) to have no right *geen recht hebben*; cf. to be right *gelijk hebben*. 29) *kleeden*, here = *verbinden*. 30) tr.: looked at (*aanzien*) the man. 31) *in orde*.

## Twenty-second Lesson. Twee en twintigste Les.

[*twentvintarste les.*]

### Fabricius en Pyrrhus.

Omsreeks 280 v. Chr. (*pron.* voor Christus) ging uit Epirus, een landschap van Noord-Griekenland, een machtig koning over de zee: hij heette Pyrrhus en wilde den Romeinen den oorlog aandoen. In den eersten slag overwon hij hoofdzakelijk met behulp van zekere dieren, die de Romeinen met de hoogste verbazing beschouwden; want nog nooit hadden zij zulke dieren gezien. Het waren olifanten. Op den rug van deze monsterachtige dieren waren houten torentjes bevestigd, waaruit 16 soldaten lans en pijlen schoten. Ook de olifanten zelf, voornamelijk wanneer zij eerst door wonden getergd waren, paken met hun snuit vijandelijke soldaten, wierpen ze op den grond en verpletterden ze met hunne pooten. In weerwil van het ongewone gezicht en den heimelijken schrik voor dezen onbekenden vijand, hadden de Romeinen met groote dapperheid tegenstand geboden, en Pyrrhus riep vol bewondering uit: „Met zulke soldaten zou ik de gehele wereld kunnen veroveren“. Met zulk een vijand verlangde hij toch vrede te hebben en knoopte onderhandelingen aan. Maar de Romeinen, ofschoon overwonnen, verlangden vol trots, dat hij Italië zou ontruimen, anders kon er van vrede geen sprake zijn. En toen Pyrrhus zijn gezant vroeg, hoe hij Rome gevonden had, antwoordde deze: „Waarlijk, Rome kwam mij voor als een groote tempel en de senaat als eene verzameling van goden!“

<i>Landschap</i> [lantsxap] (n.) province	<i>houten</i> [houtən] wooden
<i>Noood-Griekenland</i> [nort-ɹrikenlant] North-Greece	<i>vijandelijk</i> [vɛiandələk] hostile, of the enemy
<i>zee</i> [zɛ] (f.) sea	<i>ongewoon</i> [ʊngəvɔn] uncommon
<i>Romein</i> [ro'mein] Roman	<i>heimelijk</i> [hɛimələk] secret
<i>oorlog</i> [orlɔx] (m.) war	<i>onbekend</i> [ʊnbəkɛnt] unknown
<i>dier</i> [dir] (n.) animal	<i>geheel</i> [gəhɛl] whole
<i>verbazing</i> [vərbazɪŋ] astonishment, surprise	<i>vol</i> [vɔl] full
<i>olifant</i> [o'lifant] elephant	<i>omstreeks</i> [ʊm'streks] about
<i>rug</i> [rʊx] (m.) back	<i>hoofdzakelijk</i> [hɔft'sakələk] chiefly
<i>torentje</i> [torəntjə] turret, small	<i>coornamelijk</i> [vor'namələk] especially
<i>lans</i> [lans] (f.) lance	<i>met behulp van</i> [mɛt bəɦrlɔp vən] with the aid of
<i>pijl</i> [pɛil] (m.) arrow	<i>in weerwil van</i> [ɪn vɛrvil vən] in spite of
<i>wonde</i> [vɔndə] (f.) wound	<i>ofschoon</i> [ʊfsxɔn] though
<i>snuif</i> [snœyt] (f.) trunk	<i>nooit</i> [noit] never
<i>grond</i> [grʊnt] (m.) ground, earth	<i>den oorlog aandoen</i> [dɛn ɔrlɔx andʊn] to make war against
<i>poot</i> [pɔt] (m.) foot, leg	<i>*overwinnen</i> [ʊvɛrrɪnən] to vanquish
<i>gezicht</i> [gɛzɪxt] (n.) sight	<i>beschouwen</i> [bɛsxɔvən] to regard
<i>schrik</i> [sxɪk] (m.) fright, terror	<i>bevestigen</i> [bɛvɛstəgən] to fasten
<i>vijand</i> [vɛiənt] enemy	<i>pakken</i> [pakən] to seize
<i>dapperheid</i> [dapərɦɛit] bravery	<i>verpletteren</i> [vɛrplɛtɛrən] to crush, to bruise
<i>verondering</i> [vɛrvʊndərɪŋ] astonishment	<i>tegenstand *bieden</i> [tɛgənstant bɪdən] to resist, to oppose
<i>wereld</i> [vɛrəlt] (f.) world	<i>veroveren</i> [vɛrɔvərən] to conquer
<i>vrede</i> [vrɛdə] (m.) peace	<i>aanknoopen</i> [anknɔpən] to enter into
<i>onderhandeling</i> [ʊndərɦandəlɪŋ] negotiation	<i>ontruimen</i> [ʊntrœymən] to leave
<i>trots</i> [trɔts] (m.) pride	<i>er kon geen sprake zijn</i> [ɛr kɔn gɛn sprakə zɛɪn] there could be no question
<i>Italië</i> [italiə] Italy	<i>*voorkomen</i> [vɔrkɔmən] to appear
<i>zijn (de) gezant</i> [zɛɪn (də) gɛzənt] his (the) ambassador	<i>het komt mij voor</i> [ɦɛt kɔmt mɛi vor] it seems to me.
<i>tempel</i> [tɛmpəl] (m.) temple	
<i>verzameling</i> [vɛrzaməlɪŋ] a) collection, b) meeting	
<i>senaat</i> [sənət] (m.) senate	
<i>zulke</i> [zʊlkə] such	
<i>monsterachtig</i> [mʊnstərəxtəx] <sup>1</sup> monstrous	

### Verbs. (End.)

Separable and Inseparable Compound Verbs. *Scheidbaar en onscheidbaar samengestelde ww. fscheidbaar en vnscheidbaar samengestelde v.*

§ 324. The Compound Verbs may be separable or inseparable according to the combination or the meaning.

<sup>1</sup> *Het monster*: a) monster, b) sample.

§ 325. **Inseparable** are the real combinations of a Verb with a substantive, adjective or adverb, such as: *gekscheren* to jest, *logenstraffen* to give the lie, *pluimstrijken* to flatter, *raadplegen* to consult, *raaskallen* to rave, *dwarsdrijven* to thwart, *dwarsboomen* to cross, *vrijwaren* to guarantee, *beeldhouwen* to sculpture, *waarschuwen* to warn, *doodvereen* to designate one for (an employment), *liefkozen* to caress, and all Compounds with *vol*: *voldoen* to satisfy, *volmaken* to perfect &c. These Verbs are all weak, even if the Verb itself should be strong; they admit of the syllable *ge* in the Past Part., except those with *vol*, as: *gegelscheerd*, *gelogenstraft*, *gepluimstrijkt*, *geraadpleegd*, *geraaskald*, *gedwarsdrijfd*, *gedwarsboomd*, *gevrijwaard*, *gebeeldhouwd*, *gewaarschuwd*, *gedoodverfd*, *geliefkoosd*, but *voldaan*, *volmaakt* &c.

§ 326. **Separable** are such Compound Verbs of which each part may be used in its original signification. The Verb has its **proper conjugation** and the syllable *ge* is put before the Verb: *weldoen* to do good (well), *ik doe wel*, *ik deed wel*, *ik heb welgedaan*; *rechtspreken* to give a verdict, *ik spreek recht*, *ik sprak recht*, *ik heb rechtgesproken*; *paardrijden* to ride on horseback, *ik rijd paard*, *ik reed paard*, *ik heb paardgereden*; *stuksnijden* to cut into pieces, *ik snijd stuk*, *ik sneed stuk*, *ik heb stukgesneden*; *goedendagzeggen* to greet, *schaatsenrijden* to skate, *waarnemen* to observe, *adcr laten* to bleed, *gadeslaan* to watch, *luijtraken* to lose, to get rid of, *gelijkstellen* to equalize, *hoogachten* to esteem, *goedkeuren* to approve of, *goedcinden* to approve, *prijsgeren* to abandon, *goedmaken* to repair, *gevangennemen* to take prisoner, *doodslaan* to slay, *schoonschrijven* (*schoonschrijver* calligrapher), *snelschrijven* (*snelschrijver* short-hand writer).

**Note 1.** *Schoonschrijven*, *snelschrijven*, *hardrijden* and *hardraven* to run a race, *hardzeilen* to sail whole wind, *kroegloopen* to frequent public-houses, *buikspreken* (*de buikspreekster* = the ventriloquist) and *koordedansen* to dance on a rope, are used in the Infinitive only, for the other forms another expression has to be chosen.

**Note 2.** Different from these compound verbs are expressions as: *acht geven* and *acht slaan* to pay attention to, *plaats grijpen* to take place, *prijs stellen* to appreciate, *hoog schatten* to value highly, *snel schrijven* to write quickly &c.



Such expressions may easily be distinguished from real compound verbs, as an adjective or a numeral may be put before the substantive, and the adjective or adverb admits of the degrees of comparison, i. e. *geen acht geven* or *slaan*, *hoogen prijs stellen*, *hooger schatten*, *sneller schrijven*; but we cannot say: *geen wel doen*, *beter keuren*.

§ 327. Of the Compound Verbs with **prefixes** some are always inseparable, others are always separable; a few are separable or inseparable according to their signification.

§ 328. **Inseparable** Compound Verbs with prefixes take the accent on the Verb; the Past Part. never has *ge*. Such are Verbs with

**be**: (originally *bij*) *beweenen* to mourn over, *behandelen* to treat, *bespotten* to mock at, *bevriezen* to freeze;

**er**: *erlangen* to get, *erkennen* to acknowledge, *ervaren* to experience, *erbarmen over* (= *ontfermen*) to have pity on;

**ge**: *gevoelen* to feel, *gebruiken* to use. *zich getroosten* to put up with, *gelukken* to succeed, *geraken* to attain, to arrive;

**her**: *herroepen* to recall, *herkrijgen* to recover, *herleven* to revive, *hernieuwen* to renew, *herzien* to revise.

**ont**: *ontmoeten* to meet, *ontkomen* to escape, *ontgaan* to forget, *ontknoopen* to unravel, *ontleden* to analyse, *ontspannen* to unbend, *zich ontspannen* to divert.

**ver**: *verdrijven* to drive away, *verjagen* to expel. *verdragen* to bear, *verbedden* to change beds, *verzetten* to remove, *verleenen* to grant, *verschenken* to pour out, *vertellen* to tell, *verdwalen* to lose one's way, *vergaan* to perish.

§ 329. The **separable** Compound Verbs with prefixes take in the Past Part. *ge* between the prefix and the Verb; the **chief accent** is on the separable prefix. a **semi-accent** on the root-vowel of the Verb.

Separable prefixes are:

<i>aan</i> at, to	<i>mede</i> with	<i>terug</i> back
<i>achter</i> behind	<i>om</i> on, about	<i>toe</i> to, up
<i>af</i> off	<i>onder</i> under	<i>uit</i> out
<i>bij</i> by	<i>op</i> on, upon	<i>voor</i> before
<i>door</i> through	<i>over</i> over	<i>weder</i> { again
<i>heen</i> away	<i>samen</i> together	<i>weer</i> }
<i>in</i> in	<i>tegen</i> against	<i>weg</i> away &c.

## Examples.

- \* *aanspreken* to address: *ik sprak aan, aang<sup>es</sup>proken*  
 \* *aanstooten* to push: *ik stiet aan, aang<sup>es</sup>tooten*  
*aantoonen* to show: *ik toonde aan, aang<sup>el</sup>oond*  
 \* *achterblijven* to remain behind: *ik bleef achter, achterge-  
bleven*  
 \* *achterhouden* to keep back: *ik hield achter, achtergehouden*  
 (!) *achterstaan* to be inferior: *ik stond achter, achtergestaan*  
 (!) *afdoen* to settle: *ik deed af, afgedaan*  
*afslanken* to dismiss: *ik dankte af, afgedankt*  
*afkeeren* to turn off: *ik keerde af, afgekeerd*  
 \* *bijdragen* to contribute: *ik droeg bij, bijgedragen*  
*bijmengen* to mix: *ik mengde bij, bijgemengd*  
 \* *bijspringen* to assist: *ik sprong bij, bijgesprongen*  
 (!) *doorbrengen* to pass: *ik bracht door, doorgebracht*  
*doorscheuren* to tear: *ik scheurde door, doorgescheurd*  
 \* *doorspringen* to leap through: *ik sprong door, doorge-  
sprongen*  
 (!) *heengaan* to go away: *ik ging heen, heengegaan*  
 \* *inbinden* to bind: *ik bond in, ingebonden*  
*inbrengen* to deliver in: *ik diende in, ingediend*  
 \* *inruimen* to take in: *ik nam in, ingenomen*  
*medeloopen* to walk with: *ik liep mede, medegeloopen*  
*medepraten* to have one's say: *ik praatte mede, medegepraat*  
*medewerken* to cooperate: *ik werkte mede, medegewerkt*  
 (!) *ombrengen* to pass, to kill: *ik bracht om, omgebracht*  
 \* *omkomen* to perish: *ik kwam om, omgekomen*  
 \* *omloopen* to run about: *ik liep om, omgelopen*  
 \* *onderliggen* to lie under: *ik lag onder, ondergelegen*  
*onderregenen* to inundate . . . with rain: *ondergeregend*  
*ondersneeuwen* to be oversnowed: *ondergesneeuwd*  
*opduiken* to appear: *ik daagde op, opgedaagd*  
*opvischen* to summon: *ik eischte op, opgeëischt*  
*opgeuren* to lay up: *ik gaarde op, opgegaard*  
 \* *overblijven* to remain: *ik bleef over, overgebleven*  
*overboeken* to enter . . . into another book: *ik boekte  
over, overgeboekt*  
*overmaken* to transmit: *ik maakte over, overgemaakt*  
 (!) *samen gaan* to go together: *ging(en) samen, samengegaan*  
 (!) *tegen gaan* to prevent: *ik ging tegen, tegengegaan*  
 \* *tegenhouden* to arrest: *ik hield tegen, tegengehouden*  
*tegenwerken* to thwart: *ik werkte tegen, tegengewerkt*  
 (!) *teruggaan* to go back: *ik ging terug, teruggegaan*  
*terugvischen* to claim: *ik eischte terug, teruggeëischt*  
*terugwijzen* to refer: *ik wies terug, teruggewezen*  
 \* *toeloopen* to run towards: *ik liep toe, toegeloopt*  
 \* *toespreken* to address: *ik sprak toe, toegesproken*

- \* **toetreden** to agree to: *ik trad toe, toegetreden*
- \* **uitcijferen** to calculate: *ik cijferde uit, uitgecijferd*
- \* **uitdeelen** to distribute: *ik deelde uit, uitgedeeld*
- \* **uitlachen** to laugh at: *ik lachte uit, uitgelachen*
- \* **voorbidden** to say grace: *ik bad voor, voorgebeden*
- (!) **voorgaan** to go in front: *ik ging voor, voorgegaan*
- \* **voorlezen** to read: *ik las voor, voorgelezen*
- \* **wederkomen** to return: *ik kwam weder, wedergekomen*
- \* **wedervinden** to find . . . back: *ik vond weder, wedergeconden*
- (!) **wederzien** to see again: *ik zag weder, wedergezien*
- \* **wegblijven** to stay away: *ik bleef weg, weggebleven*
- (\*) **wegjagen** to drive away: *ik joeg weg, weggejaagd*
- (\*) **wegwaaien** to be blown away: *ik woei weg, weggewaaid*.

§ 330. Compound Verbs with the prefixes **door**, **om**, **onder**, **voor** and **mis** are either separable, or inseparable. When these prefixes and the simple Verb composed with them are used in their **full and original meaning**, these Compound Verbs are **separable**: when these prefixes have lost their original meaning (and in that case also their accent) these verbs are **inseparable**. Examples: **doorreizen** to travel through: *de vorst reist hier door, doorreizen* to travel all over: *de vorst doorreist het land*; **doorsteken** to open: *de vijand stak de dijken* (dikes) **door**, **doorsteken** to pierce: *de soldaat doorstak zijn vijand*; **omspannen** to change horses: *de koetsier spande de paarden om*, **omspannen** to span: *de knapen konden den boom niet omspannen*; **ondergaan** to set: *de zon gaat onder*, **ondergaan** to undergo, to suffer: *straf ondergaan*; **onderhouden** to keep under: *hij hield den hond onder* (water), **onderhouden** to support: *de koning heeft die arme familie onderhouden*; **voorspellen** to spell first: *de onderwijzer spelt voor*, *de kinderen spelen na*, **voorspellen** to predict: *de sterrenwichelaar* (astrologer) **voorspelt** de toekomst uit de sterren; **voorzeggen** to prompt: *deze leerling heeft zijn vriend alles voorgezegd*, **voorzeggen** to foretell: *niemand kan voorzeggen wat de toekomst brengen zal*; **misdoen** to do wrong: *wij hebben dit misgedaan*, **misdoen** to offend: *wat heeft die man misdään?* — **misrekenen** to calculate wrong: *hij heeft misgerkend*, **misrekenen** to miscalculate: *hij heeft zich misrekend*.

**Note.** *Aan* in *aanbidelen* to adore, may be separated or not.

## Exercise.

48.

Write down the 1<sup>st</sup> P. Plural of the Present Tense, of the Past and of the Perfect Indicative of the following verbs:

aanbidden, afkeeren, afdoen, afdanken, aanschouwen, achterstaan, achterhouden, achterhalen, achterblijven, aantoonen, achtervolgen, austooten, aanspreken, aderlaten, be- weenen, bijmengen, beeldhouwen, bijspringen, behandelen, bijdragen, bevroezen, bespotten, doorbrengen, doodslaan, doorscheuren, dwarsdrijven, doodverven, dwarsboomen, doorreizen, erlangen, erbarmen, erkennen, ervaren, geraken, gekscheren, gelukken, gadeslaan, gebruiken, gelijkstellen, goedkeuren, gevoelen, gevangennemen, goedmaken, goed- vinden, goedendagzeggen, herroepen, herzien, hernieuwen, hoogachten, herkrijgen, herleven, inblinden, indienen, in- nemen, kwijtraken, logenstraffen, liefkozen, medewerken, medelopen, ontinoeten, overmaken, ombrengen, omkomen, ontkomen, omloopen, overblijven, ontgaan, opeischen, zich ontspannen, onderliggen, ontleden, prijsgeven, paardrijden, pluimstrijken, raadplegen, rechtspreken, raaskallen, samen- gaan, stuksnijden, schaatsenrijden, terugwijzen, toelopen, tegengaan, teruggeischen, tegenhouden, teruggaan, toetreden, tegenwerken, toespreken, uittlachen, uiteijferen, uitdeelen, voorbidden, verdrijven, vrijwaren, verjagen, voorgaan, ver- dragen, voldoen, voorlezen, verzetten, verleenen, volmaken, verdwalen, wederkomen, waarschuwen, wedervinden, weg- jagen, wederzien, waarnemen, wegblijven, weldoen.

## Gesprek.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| Is uw vertrek al bepaald?  | Ja, ik vertrek aanstaanden<br>( <i>abbreviation a.s.</i> ) Maandag.     |
| Gaat gij met een gewonen<br>trein of met een sneltrein?            | Met een sneltrein, ik heb<br>geen lust om lang onder<br>weg te blijven. |
| Hoe lang blijft gij weg?   | Ongeveer veertien dagen.  |
| Wilt gij mij een dienst be-<br>wijzen?                             | Zeer gaarne, als ik daartoe<br>in staat ben.                            |
| Neem dan dit pakje voor mij<br>mee; het is voor onzen<br>vriend N. | Zeer gaarne, ik zal hem<br>tevens uwe groeten over-<br>brengen.         |
| Gij weet immers in welke<br>straat hij thans woont.                | Ja, in de Kalverstraat, voor-<br>aan.                                   |
| Vaarwel! Aangename reis.   | Ik dank U. — Tot weerziens!   |

## Twenty-third Lesson. Drie en twintigste Les.

[driëntwintigste les].

### Fabricius en Pyrrhus. (Continued.)

Bij deze onderhandelingen kwam ook een Romein als afgezant in het leger van Pyrrhus, met name Fabricius, die zich door zijn rechtschapenheid de algemeene achting had verworven. Daar de koning wist, welk aanzien hij in Rome genoot, zocht hij hem te winnen, om door hem den verlangden vrede te bewerken. Hij liet hem daarom alleen tot zich komen en sprak tot hem: „Ik weet, waarde Fabricius, dat gij een in den krijg ervaren en deugdzaam man en nochtans arm zijt; dat spijt mij. Sta mij daarom toe, dat ik u van mijn schatten zooveel geef, dat gij rijker zijt dan de andere senatoren. Want dat is het beste gebruik, dat vorsten van hun rijkdommen kunnen maken, dat zij groote mannen daarmee te hulp komen. Ik verlang van u daarvoor niets onteerends, maar alleen, dat gij uw volk tot den vrede raadt. Ik heb een deugdzamen en trouwen vriend noodig, en gij een koning, die u door zijn mildheid in staat stelt, meer goeds dan tot nu toe te stichten.” Was dat niet keurig gezegd, en aangenaam om te hooren? En had de koning zijn doel, om Fabricius om te koopen, niet goed verborgen? En wat zei Fabricius daarop? Hij antwoordde: „Ik dank u, waarde koning, voor de goede meening, die gij van mij hebt, maar ik wensch ook, dat gij ze behoudt. Neem daarom uw geld terug. Gij hebt volkomen gelijk dat ik arm ben.”

*Rechtschapenheid* [rechtschapenheit] honesty

*achting* [achtig] esteem

*aanzien* [anzin] (n.) respect

*krijg* [kreik] = oorlog war

*senator* [senator] senator

*hulp* [hulp] (t.) help

*mildheid* [midtheit] liberality

*doel* [dul] (n.) aim

*meening* [menig] opinion

*daarom* [darcum] therefore

*aangenaam* [angenaam] agreeable

*onteerend* [unterant] discreditable

*keurig* [koreik] nice, exquisite

*verwerven* [verwervan] to gain

*zoeken* [zukan] to try

*bewerken* [bewerkon] to effect

*het spijt mij* [het spijt mi] I am sorry

(!) *toestaan* [tustan] to grant

*verlangen* [verlangon] to desire

*noodig* [nodik] hebben to want

*in staat stellen* [in stat stelen]

to enable

*stichten* [stichton] to cause, good-

[guts] *stichten* to do good

*te hulp komen* to assist

*aanzien genieten* [anzin geniten]

to be highly respected.

## Adverbs. *De bijwoorden* [*de beicorden*].

§ 331. Adverbs are words modifying verbs, adjectives or other adverbs: they denote **manner, place, time, order, motion, number, quantity, quality, affirmation, doubt, negation, interrogation.**

§ 332. **Qualifying Adverbs** are: a) adjectives used as adverbs, cf.: *zij is schoon, zij zingt schoon*: b) derived from substantives or adjectives and ending in *-lijk, -lijks, -lings, -ens, -s, -pjes, -jes, -tjes, -kens*.

### Examples.

<i>eigen</i> proper	<i>eigenlijk</i> properly
<i>krachtig</i> powerful	<i>krachtiglijk</i> powerfully
<i>open</i> open	<i>openlijk</i> openly
<i>oprecht</i> sincere	<i>oprechtelijk</i> sincerely
<i>strikt</i> strict	<i>striktelijk</i> strictly
<i>waar</i> true	<i>waarlijk</i> truly
<i>zeker</i> sure	<i>zekerlijk</i> surely
<i>dag</i> day	<i>dagelijks</i> daily
<i>jaar</i> year	<i>jaarlijks</i> yearly
<i>maand</i> month	<i>maandelijks</i> monthly
<i>week</i> week	<i>wekelijks</i> weekly
<i>blind</i> blind	<i>blindelings</i> blindly
<i>kort</i> short	<i>kortelings</i> shortly
<i>mond</i> mouth	<i>mondelings</i> verbally
<i>rug</i> back	<i>ruggelings</i> backwards
<i>zijde</i> side	<i>zijdelings</i> sideways
<i>hoogst</i> highest	<i>hoogstens</i> at (the) most (best)
<i>minst</i> least	<i>minstens</i> at (the) least
<i>recht</i> straight	<i>rechts</i> to the right
<i>link</i> left	<i>links</i> to the left
<i>ander</i> other	<i>anders</i> otherwise
<i>lang</i> long	<i>langs</i> along
<i>warm</i> warm	<i>warmpjes</i> warmly
<i>zoet</i> sweet, gentle	<i>zoetjes</i> gently
<i>stil</i> silent	<i>stilletjes</i> silently
<i>zacht</i> soft	<i>zachtkens</i> softly.

**Note 1.** Adjectives used as **qualifying adverbs** admit of degrees of comparison, see Lesson 13.

**Note 2.** Some words ending in *-lijk* are real adjectives and are used as adverbs without changing their form, such as: *eerlijk* honest, *gevaarlijk* dangerous, *goddelijk* divine, *heerlijk* delightful, *lichamelijk* corporal, *weekelijk* delicate, *zieklijk* ailing, sickly.

**Note 3.** Words ending in *-lijks* are adverbs, but those ending in *-lijksch* are adjectives, i. e.: *dagelijksch*, *jaarlijksch*, *maandelijksch* &c.

**Note 4.** To strengthen the adverbial meaning of words modifying adjectives we always use adverbs ending in *-lijk*: *hij spreekt waar*; *een waarlijk schoon gezeqde*.

**Note 5.** Adverbs of manner or of indefinite time are in English often placed before the verb; in Dutch they must always follow it:

My friend gladly accepted the offer.

*Mijn vriend nam het aanbod gaarne aan.*

He never reads newspapers.

*Hij leest nooit couranten.*

### § 333. Adverbs of place:

<i>achter</i> behind	<i>hier</i> here
<i>af</i> downwards	<i>links</i> to the left
<i>beneden</i> below, down-stairs	<i>na, nabij</i> near, close to
<i>binnen</i> inside	<i>nergens</i> nowhere
<i>buiten</i> outside, out of doors	<i>omhoog</i> aloft, on high
<i>boven</i> above, over	<i>onder</i> below, under
<i>daar</i> there	<i>op</i> upwards, up
<i>dicht bij</i> near	<i>overal</i> everywhere
<i>ergens</i> somewhere	<i>rondom</i> all around
<i>ginder</i> } yonder	<i>thuis</i> at home
<i>ginds</i> }	<i>ver</i> far, off, far off
<i>heen, henen</i> away	<i>waar</i> where
<i>heinde en ver</i> far and near	<i>wijd en zijd</i> far and wide.
<i>heen en weer</i> to and fro	

### § 334. Adverbs of time:

<i>aanstonds</i> directly	<i>lang</i> long, <i>op zijn langst</i> at the latest
<i>af en toe</i> now and then	<i>naderhand</i> afterwards
<i>allengs, allengskens</i> gradually	<i>nimmer</i> never
<i>altijd, altoos, steeds</i> always	<i>nog</i> still, yet
<i>dadelijk, terstond</i> immediately	<i>nooit</i> never
<i>dan</i> then	<i>nu, thans</i> now
<i>dikwijls, dikwerf, vaak, vaker</i> often	<i>nu en dan</i> now and then,
<i>doorgaans</i> generally	occasionally
<i>vergisteren</i> the day before	<i>onlangs</i> the other day
yesterday	<i>ooit</i> ever
<i>gedurig</i> continually	<i>overmorgen</i> the day after to-morrow
<i>gisteren</i> yesterday	<i>sedert</i> since [tomorrow
<i>heden</i> to-day	<i>soms, somtijds</i> sometimes
<i>immer</i> always	<i>spoedig</i> soon
<i>laat, later</i> late(r)	<i>straks, strakjes</i> by and by

<i>telkens</i> again and again	<i>coortdurend</i> continually
<i>tegelijk, tevens</i> at the same time	<i>wanneer?</i> when?
<i>toen, toenmaals</i> then	<i>weldra, dru</i> soon
<i>uiterlijk</i> outwardly	<i>weleer</i> formerly
<i>vervolgens</i> further	<i>zelden</i> seldom
<i>voorheen, vroeger</i> formerly	<i>zooeren</i> just now.

§ 335. Adverbs of quantity, comparison, negation, &c.:

<i>al te</i> too	<i>maar, slechts</i> only
<i>in 't algemeen</i> in general	<i>misschien</i> perhaps
<i>als, gelijk</i> as	<i>naauwelijks</i> scarcely
<i>als 't ware</i> as it were	<i>neen</i> no
<i>althans, ten minste</i> at least	<i>niet</i> not
<i>anders</i> else	<i>om niet, te vergeefs</i> in vain
<i>bijna, bijkans</i> nearly	<i>rondt</i> plainly
<i>bloot</i> only	<i>ruggelings</i> backwards
<i>eenigszins</i> somewhat	<i>soms</i> perhaps
<i>enkel, louter</i> only	<i>tanelijk, vrij</i> rather
<i>evenzoo</i> so, thus	<i>terloops</i> by the way
<i>fluks</i> quickly	<i>verreweg</i> by far
<i>gaarne</i> willingly	<i>volstrekt</i> absolutely
<i>geenszins</i> not at all	<i>volstrekt niet</i> by no means
<i>geheel en al, heelemaal</i> entirely	<i>wel is waar</i> it is true
<i>in 't geheel niet</i> not at all	<i>welzeker</i> surely
<i>grootelijks</i> greatly	<i>zeer, ten zeerste</i> much
<i>hoe?</i> how?	<i>zelfs</i> even
<i>hoe . . . hoe, hoe . . . des te</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>zoo (mogelijk)</i> if (possible)
<i>the . . . the</i>	<i>zoo (niet)</i> if (not)
<i>hoogstens</i> at most	<i>zoodanig</i> so, in such a manner.
<i>immers, ja</i> indeed, nay	

### Exercises.

#### 49.

Translate: We come to-morrow. You are always welcome.<sup>1)</sup> Come down, if you please!<sup>2)</sup> Where is our dog? It is outside; I can find it nowhere. This letter is beautifully written. I never go out. The horse goes slowly. I was not at home. Have you searched<sup>3)</sup> everywhere? Make yourself at home. Did you know him before? Yes, I have known him long. My brother will be here directly. He was often in the Netherlands. They have arrived sooner

1) *welkom*. 2) *als het u belieft*. 3) *zoeken*.

<sup>1</sup> *Hoe langer hoe beter* the longer the better. *Hoe eer hoe lier* the sooner the better. *Hoe langer hoe erger* worse and worse. *Hoe langer hoe meer* more and more. *Hoe rijker hoe gieriger* avarice increases with riches.



than I. My sister is to-day better than yesterday. Go away directly! My uncle will always be glad to see you. Could you not come earlier? No, the train was [too] late. Next time I shall be here in time.<sup>4)</sup> Have you seen our friend lately? Yes, I saw him the other day. I hope I shall see him again very soon. I see him now and then. The sooner you come the better it is for the children. The longer you stay with us the better it will be for our affairs.<sup>5)</sup> He gets worse and worse every day. The longer here, the later there. Go softly into the bed-room.<sup>6)</sup> Speak low, every one can hear us. Knock gently at his door, for he sleeps lightly. I go to Germany every year. He visits us every day. He notes the daily expenses.<sup>7)</sup>

4) *op tijd, bijtijds.* 5) *zaken.* 6) *slaapvertrek, slaapkamer.* 7) *uitgaven, onkosten.*

## 50.

Are you going upstairs already? My brother comes downstairs. In winter the sun rises late and sets early. My letter is written better than yours. Where is my stick? I can find it nowhere. You will find it there, in the corner.<sup>8)</sup> He comes the day after to-morrow. I like playing. Do you like dancing better? I like walking best. When will you come? To-day or to-morrow. He has been here at least three times. This house is beautiful indeed. He will by no means succeed. How much do you charge<sup>9)</sup> for it? It will cost you fifty guilders at the utmost (= at the highest). The next<sup>10)</sup> village is about ten miles off. It is not otherwise. Do you want anything else? No, Sir, I thank you, at present I want nothing else. At first I thought I knew him. I think he will not like to do it. Perhaps you had better not reject his proposal. He writes less correctly than his cousin. It is quite in vain to talk to<sup>11)</sup> such a fool.<sup>12)</sup> We were scarcely out of doors when it began to rain. He told me by the way that he had lost his purse. He declared plainly that he knew nothing about it.

8) *hoek (m.).* 9) *vragen.* 10) *volgende.* 11) *met.* 12) *gek.*

## Gesprek.

Hier zijn wij te Amsterdam.	Is u hier bekend?
Nee, Mijnheer. Zullen wij samen een hotel opzoeken?	Zeer gaarne. Men heeft mij het hotel X. aanbevolen.
Is het een duur hotel?	Dat geloof ik niet.
Hebt u koffers bij u?	Ja, als u het goedvindt, zullen wij een rijtuig nemen.
Zeer goed, ik zal een rijtuig bestellen.	Intusschen zal ik voor de koffers zorgen.

Koetsier, breng ons naar het hotel X.	Zeer goed, Mijnheer!
Flink doorrijden! Is het ver, waar wij moeten zijn?	Neen, Mijnheer, wij hebben geen tien minuten te rijden.
Koetsier, zet die koffers op het rijtuig!	Wilt u den kleinen koffer bij u houden?
Is dit het hotel?	Ja. (Mijne) Heeren.
Hoeveel moeten wij betalen?	Een gulden, als 't u belieft.

## Twenty-fourth Lesson. Vier en twintigste Les.

[*virātrmta.ests les.*]

### Fabricius en Pyrrhus. (Continued.)

„Ik heb een kleinen akker en een huisje en leef niet van renten en slavenarbeid; maar toch ben ik gelukkig, want ik word door mijn medeburgers geacht en ga met de rijksten en aanzienlijksten als mijns gelijken om. Mijn akker geeft mij het noodzakelijke. Iedere spijs smaakt mij, omdat de honger haar gekruid heeft, en na den arbeid beloont mij een geruste slaap. Wel is waar kan ik geen behoeftigen bijstaan; maar ik geef van het weinige, dat ik heb, gaarne zooveel als ik vermag. Ik heb dikwijls gelegenheid gehad, als consul rijkdommen te verzamelen, zonder misdadig te handelen; maar ik maakte liever mijn soldaten rijk en bleef zelf arm, omdat ik mij dan gelukkig gevoelde. Behoud dus uw geld, en ik wil mijn armoede en mijn goeden naam behouden.“ De koning hoorde niet zonder stille ergernis, maar toch ook niet zonder verwondering het manhaftige en trotsche antwoord. Hij besloot te probeeren, of vrees even weinig macht over dit Romeinsch karakter had als de prikkel van het goud. Den volgenden dag liet hij daarom zijn grootsten olifant achter een gordijn plaatsen en zorgde, dat Fabricius vlak daarvoor zijn plaats kreeg. Pyrrhus sprak luid en wrevelig; toen ging snel het gordijn op, en brullend stak de olifant zijn verbazenden kop met de groote slurf over Fabricius heen. Maar Fabricius keerde zich onverschrokken om, zag het dier van boven tot beneden aan en sprak toen bedaard: „Evenzoo weinig als mij gisteren uw geld heeft verleid, verschrikt mij heden uw olifant.“

Akker [*akər*] (m.) field

rente [*rentə*] rent

slavenarbeid [*slavənarbeit*] (m.)

slavery

medeburgers [*medəbɜrɜrs*] fellow-citizens

spijs [*speis*] (f.) food

slaap [*slap*] (m.) sleep

*gelegenheid* [gʲɛlɛgənɦeɪt] oppor-  
tunity  
*consul* [kɔnsʊl] (P. -s) consul  
*rijkdom* [rɛɪkhtɔm] riches  
*armoede* [armudə] poverty  
*ergernis* [ɛrgərnɪs] vexation  
*vrees* [vrɛs] f.) fear  
*karakter* [karaktər] (n.) character  
*prikkel* [prikəl] (m.) stimulation  
*gordijn* [gordɛɪn] (n.) curtain  
*slurf* [slɪrf] (f.) trunk  
*aanzienlijk* [anzɪnlɪk] distin-  
guished  
*noodzakelijk* [nod'zakəlɪk] ne-  
cessary  
*behoefstig* [bɛɦuɦftɪk] needy  
*misdadig* [mɪzdadɪk] criminal  
*vlak* (daarvoor) [vlak (darrɔr)]  
just

*luid* [lɔɛyt] loud(ly)  
*ireverelig* [ɪrɛvɛlɪk] peevish(ly)  
*verbazend* [vɛrbazənt] enormous  
*onverschrokken* [ɔnvrɛʃvɛrɦkən]  
undaunted  
*smaken* [smakən] to taste (well)  
*kruiden* [krɔɪdən] to season;  
*kruidenier* [krɔɪdənɪr] grocer  
*bijstaan* [bɛɪstɑn] to help  
*verzamelen* [vɛrɦzɑmɛlən] to meet,  
to collect  
*geroelen, zich* — [z. ɣərulən] to  
feel  
*behouden* [bɛɦoudən] to keep.  
to preserve  
*proberen* [prɔbərən] to try  
*omkeeren, zich* — [z. ɦmkerən]  
to turn.

### Prepositions. *De voorzetsels.*

§ 336. The most usual Prepositions are:

*aan* at, on, close to, to  
*achter* behind  
*behalve* except, besides  
*beneden* under  
*benevens* together with  
*bij* near, with, by  
*binnen* within  
*boven* over, above, across  
*buiten* except, without, outside  
*door* through, by  
*gedurende* during  
*in* in, into  
*ingerolge* on account of  
*jegens* towards, against, to  
*krachtens* in virtue of  
*langs* along  
*met* with  
*na* after  
*naar* to, according to  
*naast* near, by the side of  
*om* at, for, about, round

*omstreeks* about  
*omtrent* about  
*onder* under, among  
*op* on, upon  
*over* over, above, across  
 *rondom* round about  
*sedert* } since  
*sinds* }  
*tegen* against  
*te* to, at, on  
*tot* till, to  
*tijdens* during  
*trots or in spijt van, in weerwil*  
*van* in spite of  
*tusschen* between  
*uit* out of, from  
*van* of  
*volgens* according to  
*voor* for, *vóór* before  
*wegens* on account of  
*zonder* without.

§ 337. Almost all original Prepositions are used in the same form as adverbs. *Met*, *naar*, *te* or *tot* and *van* correspond to the adverbs *mede*, *nader*, *toe* and *af*.

§ 338. All Prepositions now govern the Accusative case, with the exception of *te*, which still takes the Dative after it.

## Examples.

*Hij stond aan de deur, aan het raam* he stood at the door, at the window.

*De jongen stond achter een boom* the boy stood behind a tree.

*Ik heb alle boeken behalve dit* I have all the books except this one.

*Beneden de twintig jaar zijn* to be under twenty.

*De vader benevens zijne kinderen* the father together with his children.

*Hij stond bij u* he stood near you.

*Binnen een jaar* within a year.

*Boven het huis* over the house.

*Het is koud buiten de kamer* it is cold outside the room.

*Wij wandelden door de stad* we walked through the town.

*Gedurende den oorlog* during the war.

*Zijt gij in de kamer; ga in de kamer* are you in the room, go into the room.

*Ingevolge de bevelen des konings* according to the orders of the king.

*Wees beleefl jegens iedereen* be polite to everyone!

*Krachtens de nieuwe wetten* in virtue of the new laws.

*Ga recht door langs de rivier* go straight on along the river!

*Met wien gaat gij om?* with whom do you converse?

*Na tafel gaan wij uit* after dinner we go out.

*Wij gaan naar de stad* we go to the city.

*Hij ging naast zijn vriend zitten* he sat down by the side of his friend.

*Allen zaten reeds om de tafel* all were already seated round the table.

*Omstreeks Kerstmis of Paschen* about Christmas or Easter.

*Zijne meening omtrent deze zaak is gunstig* his opinion about this affair is favourable.

*Wij stonden onder een boom* we stood under a tree.

*Het boek ligt op de tafel* the book lies on the table.

*Het paard sprong over de heg* the horse leaped over the hedge.

*De legers stonden rondom de vesting* the armies were round about the fortress.

*Salert een week, sinds dien dag* for a week, since that day.

*De gewonde leunde tegen een boom* the wounded man leaned against a tree.

*Hij is niet te huis* he is not at home.

*Ter zee; ter loops* at sea; in a hurry.

*Ten huize van* at the house of.

*Ten koste van* at the expense of.  
*Van dag tot dag* from day to day.  
*Tijdens den opstand* during the revolt.  
*Trots alle moeite* in spite of all pains.  
*Tusschen deze twee huizen* between these two houses.  
*Cit een glas drinken* to drink out of a glass.  
*De deur van de school* the door of the school.  
*Volgens zijnen raad* according to his advice.  
*Doe dit voor mij* please, do this for me.  
*Hij stond vóór mij* he stood before me.  
*Wegens den aanhoudenden regen* on account of the continual rain.  
*Regels zonder voorbeelden* rules without examples.

## Exercises.

51.

He laid his finger upon her mouth. The king travelled through the Netherlands to Hanover. He wished an egg for his breakfast. He put all upon one bill. The cricket applied to the ant. What have you done during the summer? The miser found a stone instead of his treasure. They quarrelled with a young nobleman. Go with me out of the house. The dog swam across a river. He saw the other dog without the meat. This book is for your brother. Do not swim against the stream. Who has taken my purse out of my pocket? I should like to go to France. He will depart within the next week. Take your umbrella instead of your stick. I went to Germany on account of my health. The Botanical gardens are outside the town. We obtained the permission by means of the influence of a general. He takes a walk notwithstanding the bad weather. He is still rich in spite of his great loss. Who knocks at the door? Put the flower-pot before my window. To whom did you write a letter? Who laid this book on my table? The boys stood at the door of the school and looked after the birds. This old man is above eighty years old. According to the emperor's command the troops must march. There is a foot-path along the river.

52.

## Letter.

Amsterdam, July 1<sup>st</sup> 1911.

My dear boy,

I am extremely glad that you are happy in your new school, for I must confess<sup>1)</sup> it was not without much hesitation<sup>2)</sup> that I indulged<sup>3)</sup> you in your wish to leave

1) *bekennen.* 2) *aarzeling.* 3) *bevredigen.*

the other school. I hope you will reward my kindness<sup>4)</sup> by constant<sup>5)</sup> attention to your studies, and by good behaviour. Recollect<sup>6)</sup> that it is necessary to submit<sup>7)</sup> to restraint,<sup>8)</sup> and we are all, both young and old, obliged to conform<sup>9)</sup> to many things that are disagreeable.

It gives me great pleasure to hear that you are getting on<sup>10)</sup> well with the languages, and I hope soon to hear your account confirmed by Dr. Z. With regard to the increase<sup>11)</sup> of your pocket money<sup>12)</sup> I must, for the present, decline acceding<sup>13)</sup> to your wishes. When I arranged with Dr. Z. what sum you were to have, he informed me that some older boys had more, but that many had less, and this latter fact you did not think proper<sup>14)</sup> to mention. Now, I am sure that it is equally wrong to attempt to mislead any one by concealing<sup>15)</sup> a part of the truth. I trust, however, that you had no serious intention of misleading me in this affair. Nor is it at all necessary that you should do exactly as the others do. You will have to earn your own living,<sup>16)</sup> and a good education is all that I can give you; it is, therefore, necessary that you should learn the value of money early in life.

But I do not wish to weary<sup>17)</sup> you, my dear boy, with a long sermon, and being willing to indulge you in all reasonable pleasures, I will allow you to have the fishing-rod<sup>18)</sup> at once, and if I continue to hear a favourable account of your diligence and good conduct, your pocket-money shall be raised from the 1<sup>st</sup> of January.

Mamma, sister, and Charley, all send best love.

Your affectionate father,

N. N.

4) *goedheid*. 5) *voortdurend*. 6) *onthouden*. 7) *zich onderwerpen*. 8) *bepierking, regel*. 9) *zich schikken (naar)*. 10) *vorderen, vooruitgaan*. 11) *vermeerdering*. 12) *zakgeld*. 13) *weigeren toe te geven*. 14) *het niet passend oordeelen*. 15) *verbergen*. 16) *zijn eigen kost verdienen, in zijn onderhoud voorzien*. 17) *vervelen*. 18) *hengelroede*.

### Gesprek.

Laat ons thans de stad eens bezien!	Waar wilt gij het eerst naar toe?
Mij dunkt wij moesten eerst naar het Rijksmuseum gaan.	Zeer goed, als gij er maar niet al te lang blijft.
Niet langer dan gij zelf goed- vindt, het moet altijd een uitspanning blijven.	Zoo denk ik er ook over en ik vind niets zoo vermoeiend als het bezoeken van mu- seums.
Waar zullen wij later naar toe gaan?	Liefst naar den Dierentuyn, daar is het koel.

Wij moeten zorgen vóór een      ik wist niet, dat wij aan  
 uur terug te zijn.      eenigen tijd gebonden  
    waren.  
 Hebt gij dan onze afspraak      O ja, nu herinner ik het mij.  
 van gisteren reeds ver-      N. zou om een uur aan ons  
 geten?      hotel zijn.

## Twenty-fifth Lesson.    Vijf en twintigste Les.

[*veifentwintigste les.*]

### Fabricius en Pyrrhus. (End.)

Fabricius was weer teruggekeerd. Daar ontving hij op zekeren dag van den lijfarts van Pyrrhus een brief, waarin deze aanbood, zijn heer te vergiffigen, wanneer de Romein hem daarvoor een goede belooning wilde geven. Fabricius ijsde van zulk een schandelijke daad. Hij zond daarom den brief aan Pyrrhus zelven, opdat deze zich in veiligheid zou stellen voor zulk een booswicht. Wie schildert de verbazing van Pyrrhus? Zulk een edelmoedigheid van een vijand? „Waarlijk!“ riep hij uit, „eer zal de zon van haar baan, dan Fabricius van het pad der deugd wijken!“ Den arts liet hij ter dood brengen, maar aan de Romeinen zond hij, om zijn dankbaarheid te bewijzen, de gevangenen zonder losgeld terug, en nogmaals deed hij vredesvoorslagen. De Romeinen zeiden: „Wij laten ons niet betalen voor de rechtvaardigheid, die wij den vijand verschuldigd zijn“, en zonden even zooveel krijgsgesvangenen terug; de vredesvoorslagen werden verworpen.

In een tweeden slag overwon Pyrrhus nogmaals door zijn olifanten, maar verloor zooveel soldaten, dat hij uitriep: „Nog zulk een overwinning en ik ben verloren!“

In den derden slag werd hij geslagen en vluchtte ontsteld naar zijn land terug. De Romeinen waren nu meester van geheel Italië.

Hun schoonste roem was echter de republikeinsche eenvoudigheid, de rechtschapenheid en liefde voor de deugd, waardoor juist hunne hoogste ambtenaren zich het meest onderscheidden.

*Lijfarts* [*leifarts*] physician in  
 ordinary  
*daad* [*dat*] (f.) deed  
*veiligheid* [*veilicheit*] safety,  
 security  
*booswicht* [*bozi:et*] wretch, villain

*edelmoedigheid* [*edelmudeicheit*]  
 generosity  
*baan* [*ban*] road, path  
*deugd* [*dort*] (f.) virtue  
*dankbaarheid* [*dankbarheit*] gra-  
 titude

<i>losgeld</i> [ <i>lɔsxɛlt</i> ] ransom	<i>juist</i> [ <i>jœyst</i> ] just
<i>vredesvoorslag</i> [ <i>vredəsvorˌslax</i> ]	<i>het meest</i> [ <i>het mest</i> ] most
(m.) proposition of peace	<i>vergiftigen, vergiften, vergeren</i>
<i>rechtvaardigheid</i> [ <i>rɛxtvɑrdɔxheit</i> ]	[ <i>vɔrgiftəgən, vɔrgiftən, vɔr-gerən</i> ] to poison
justice	<i>ijzen</i> [ <i>ɛizən</i> ] ( <i>ijsde, geijsd</i> ) to shiver
<i>overwinnig</i> [ <i>ovərɛnnɪŋ</i> ] victory	<i>wijken</i> [ <i>vɛikən</i> ] to deviate
<i>eenvoudigheid</i> [ <i>ɛnvʊdɔxheit</i> ]	<i>betalen</i> [ <i>bətələn</i> ] to pay
simplicity	<i>verwerpen</i> [ <i>vərɛrɐpən</i> ] to reject
<i>liefde</i> [ <i>lifdə</i> ] love	<i>vluchten</i> [ <i>vlyxtən</i> ] to fly
<i>ambtenaar</i> [ <i>amptənɑr</i> ] officer	<i>ontstellen</i> [ <i>ɔntstɛlən</i> ] to frighten,
<i>schandelijk</i> [ <i>sxandəlɛk</i> ] shameful	<i>ontsteld</i> [ <i>ɔntstɛlt</i> ] alarmed
<i>republikeins</i> [ <i>rɛpyblikɛɪns</i> ] republican	<i>zich onderscheiden</i> [ <i>zɪx ɔndər-sxɛidən</i> ] to distinguish one self.
<i>verschuldigd zijn</i> [ <i>vɛrsxɪldəxt zɛɪn</i> ] to owe	
<i>even zooveel</i> [ <i>ɛvən zʊvɛl</i> ] as much (many)	

### The Conjunctions. *De voegwoorden* [*də vʊɛrvʊrdən*].

§ 339. The Conjunctions may be divided into two classes: **Co-ordinate** *nevenschikkende* and **subordinate** *onderschikkende*. Co-ordinate Conjunctions join statements which are **independent** of each other: *en, ook maar, doch, evenwel* &c. Subordinate Conjunctions join statements one of which is **dependent** on the other: *als, daar, dat, indien, wanneer* &c.

The Conjunctions having a great influence upon the **position of the verb**, are arranged according to their value in this respect.

§ 340. **Co-ordinate Conjunctions**, which do not alter the construction:

<i>En</i> and	<i>of</i> or
<i>echter</i> but, however	<i>want</i> for
<i>maar</i> but	<i>zooveel — als</i> both and.

#### Examples.

*Ik moet thuis blijven, want ik ben ziek*

I must stay at home, for I am ill.

*Ik zal het u zeggen, maar gij moet zwijgen*

I shall tell it you, but you must keep silent.

**Note.** *Echter* is sometimes placed after the subject or even after the verb, without altering the sense:

*De zaken gaan slecht, echter mogen wij niet wanhopen.*

The affairs are in a bad way, but we must not despair.

*De zaken gaan slecht, wij mogen echter niet wanhopen.*



§ 341. The following **Adverbial Conjunctions** are treated like adverbs and require **inversion** (verb preceding nominative) after them if they begin a sentence :

<i>Anders</i> else, otherwise	<i>niet alleen</i> }	not only —
<i>behalve</i> besides	<i>niet slechts</i> }	— <i>maur</i> but also
<i>bijgevolg</i> consequently	<i>noch</i> nor	
<i>bovendien</i> }	<i>noch</i> — <i>noch</i> neither — nor	
<i>buitendien</i> } besides, moreover	<i>nochtans</i> yet, still	
<i>daarenboven</i> moreover	<i>nu</i> now, then	
<i>daarentegen</i> on the contrary	<i>of</i> — <i>of</i> either — or	
<i>daarom</i> therefore	<i>ook</i> also, too	
<i>deels</i> — <i>deels</i> partly — partly	<i>ook</i> — <i>niet</i> nor	
<i>desnietteenstaande</i> }	<i>ondertusschen</i> meanwhile	
<i>desniettemin</i> }	<i>overigens</i> as for the rest	
<i>niettemin</i> } never- theless	<i>toch</i> yet, still	
<i>dientengevolge</i> accordingly	<i>veeleer</i> rather	
<i>dus</i> thus, so	<i>verder</i> further	
<i>echter</i> however	<i>wel is waar</i> it is true	
<i>evenwel</i> however	<i>zoo</i> so, thus.	
<i>nauwelijks</i> scarcely		

#### Examples.

*Ik ben ziek, dus kan ik niet uitgaan*

I am ill, so I cannot go out.

*Nauwelijks had hij ons gezien, of hij liep weg*

scarcely had he seen us when he ran away.

*Zeg het hem duidelijk, anders begrijpt hij het niet*

tell it him plainly, else he does not understand it.

*Hij geeft altijd almoezen, toch is hij zelf niet rijk*

he always gives alms, yet he is not rich himself.

§ 342. All **Subordinate Conjunctions**, simple as well as compound, relegate the verb to the end of the clause.

#### § 343. Simple Subordinative Conjunctions:

<i>Aangezien</i> }	of if, whether
<i>daar</i> }	<i>ofschoon</i> although
	<i>omdat</i> because
<i>als</i> as, when	<i>opdat</i> that, in order that
<i>als of</i> as if	<i>sedert</i> }
<i>dat</i> that	<i>sinds</i> } since (time), from
<i>eer</i> }	<i>terwijl</i> while, whilst
<i>voordat</i> }	<i>tot</i> }
<i>hoe</i> how	<i>totdat</i> } until
<i>hoewel</i> though	
<i>indien</i> if	<i>zoodra (als)</i> as soon as
<i>nadat</i> after	<i>zoolang (als)</i> as long as.

## Examples.

*Het regende toen wij in het dorp kwamen*  
it was raining when we entered the village.

*Wacht, totdat ik de deur heb gesloten*  
wait till I have closed the door.

*Haast u, opdat gij niet te laat komt*  
make haste that you do not come too late.

§ 344. When the first **clause** of a compound sentence begins with one of the above Subordinate Conjunctions, the second (principal) clause begins **with the verb** and the subject follows it.

## Examples.

*Toen hij binnenkwam, stonden alle officieren op*  
when he entered, all the officers rose from their seats.

*Voordat de slag begon, zongen de soldaten vroolijk*  
before the battle began, the soldiers sang merrily.

*Ofschoon het waarschijnlijk is, is het toch niet waar*  
though it is probable, it is not true.

## § 345. Compound Subordinate Conjunctions:

*Aangenomen* {  
*gesteld* { — (dat) suppos-  
*verondersteld* { ing (that)

*al — nog* even if

*als — maar* provided (that)

*behalve — dat* besides

*hoe — hoe (des te) the — the*  
(with a comp.)

*hoe — ook* however (with an  
adj.)

*indien — al (ook)* even if

*indien — niet* unless

*ingeval* in case

*in plaats van* instead of

*in weerwil van* in spite of

*om — te* in order to

*opdat — niet* lest

*zelfs — als* even if

*zonder — dat* without

*zo — als* just as

*zo — dat* so that.

## Examples.

*Al heeft hij nog zooveel boeken, hij leest nooit.*  
though he has ever so many books, he never reads.

*Hoe meer gij leert, hoe meer gij weet*  
the more you learn, the more you know.

*Er vergaat geen uur, zonder dat ik hem zie*  
not an hour passes but I see him.

§ 346. **Relative Conjunctions.** All interrogative adverbs have in **indirect questions** the force of **Relative Conjunctions**; therefore they require the verb at the end of the clause:

*Hoe* how  
*hoelang* how long  
*hoeveel* how much  
*waar* where  
*waarom* why  
*wanneer* when  
*weshalve* wherefore

*waaraan* at what  
*waardoor* what  
*waarheen* where, whither  
*waarin* in what  
*waarmede* with what  
*waarop* on what  
 &c.

### Examples.

Direct questions.

*Hoe heeft hij dat gedaan?*

*Waarvandaan komt hij?*

*Hoelang is u nog gebleven?*

Indirect questions.

*Ik vroeg, hoe hij dat gedaan heeft.*

*Weet gij, waarvandaan hij komt?*

*Mag ik weten, hoelang u nog gebleven is?*

§ 347. Do not confound: *doch* but and *toch* all the same, notwithstanding; *nog* still (Adverb) and *noch* neither. Examples: *Hij zegt het wel, doch meent het niet* he says so, but he does not mean it. *Laat mij toch gaan* pray, let me go; *ik ben niet wel, toch wil ik uitgaan* I am unwell, yet I will go out. *Hoe lang blijft hij nog* how long will he still stay with us? *Ik heb geld noch vrienden* I have neither money nor friends.

### The Interjections. *De tusſchenwerpsels*

[*de tusschenwerpsels*].

§ 348. The Interjections may be divided into:

Imitations of sounds: *bom! plomp! krik! krek! pief! paf! poef! miaauw! bimbam! holderdebolder!*

Words of feeling and emotion:

a) of pleasure: *ha! heisa! hoc-zee! hoera! rivat!*

b) of pain or grief: *ach! ai! ou! och! helaas! o wee!*

c) of disgust: *aba! ba! foei!*

d) of doubt: *ei! ei ei! hm!*

e) of desire: *ei! eilieve!*

Exclamations and incitations: *he! hei! hm! huidaar! holla! pst! st!*

Note. Expressions as: *God helpe mij! Goede hemel! O God! weg! marsch! hoor eens! zachtjes! &c.* are no Interjections, they are shortened sentences or substantives in the Vocative.

## Exercises.

53.

Go home directly, or you will become wet; for it will soon rain. The reed<sup>1)</sup> bends, but [it] does not break. You ought to speak to your children, for they are very naughty. We wrote a long time ago, but we did not receive an answer. Did you see your friend to-day? Yes, but I could not speak to him. He wished to go to America, but his father would not let him go. Many soldiers are ill, consequently they cannot leave the fortress. Some one has done it, either you or your brother. This picture may be very beautiful, nevertheless it does not please me. I know neither him nor his wife. I did not expect to see you here, the greater is my pleasure to meet you. Not only the king was expected, but also the queen and the princess. When I arrived here, it was quite dark. As he does not work, I shall give him nothing. I want<sup>2)</sup> you to wait till I have written this letter. Since I have lost my parents, I am quite alone. After I had breakfasted, I took a walk, although it rained a little. As soon as the queen arrives, please to inform us.

1) *riet* (n.). 2) *wil hebben dat*.

54.

I do not know, whether he is rich or poor. Ask him if he will sell his horse! Why did you sleep so long? I slept so long because I was very tired. I will go with you, if you promise me to be more punctual in future. If you are poor, do not wish to seem rich! The master will not pardon him, until he improves.<sup>3)</sup> I do not know how he will get it. It seems to me as if I had seen you somewhere. In case you want my assistance, call me! Read it twice, lest you forget it! The merchant will sell much or little, according as the price is high or low. We shall not go, unless they invite us. Romulus disappeared without any one knowing<sup>4)</sup> how he had perished. Though you (should) have the best books, if you do not study well, you will never know the Dutch language. Ask him when he will come! I do not know why he has not yet written to me. Alas, what a poor man he is! Hurrah, long live the queen! Hah, what a huge animal lies there! Hollo! come and fetch us. Adieu<sup>5)</sup>, my dear friend, I wish you much pleasure and hope to see you soon back! Hush, keep silent there!

3) *zich verbeteren*. 4) *tr.:* without that any one knew. 5) *vaarwel!*

55.

G., May 1<sup>st</sup> 1912.

Dear William,

I write to tell you that we start to-morrow at 2 o'clock, instead of 3, as at first proposed. Robert says that we shall not be there too soon; for the distance is great, and the road very hilly. Yesterday evening, about an hour after you left us, a man was nearly drowned<sup>1)</sup> at the ferry<sup>2)</sup> here. It was just getting dark and being in a great hurry, he sprang out of the boat, before it had reached the landing place.<sup>3)</sup> Deceived probably by the darkness, he did not spring quite far enough, and losing his balance,<sup>4)</sup> fell backwards into the water. Great efforts were made to save him, but the stream on the side being strong, it carried him out of sight. Just, when he reappeared a lonely fisher who had cast out his nets, caught him with a long rope. It was a sad illustration of the proverb: "The more haste, the less speed." Let it be a warning to us all, as we shall have to cross the river in the same boat, and in<sup>5)</sup> all probability shall not return, till it is quite dark. With kind regards to all at home, believe me,

Yours sincerely  
N. N.

1) to be drowned *verdrinken*; — to drown oneself *zich verdrinken*. 2) *veer* (n.). 3) *aanlegplaats*. 4) *evenwicht*. 5) *volgens*.

### Gesprek.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| Hoe lang is u al met de studie van het Nederlandsch bezig? | Ik geloof ongeveer twee jaar.   |
| Vindt u de taal nog al lastig; is de taalkunde moeielijk?  | Ja, vooral het juist gebruik van sommige rededeelen en woorden.   |
| Zou dat niet van alle talen gezegd kunnen worden?          | In zekeren zin ja!  |
| Hoe bestudeert gij de taal? Hebt gij een goede taalkunde?  | De regels der taalkunde leer ik uit een taalboek; het taaleigen hoop ik vooral door veel lezen te leeren. |
| Hebt gij geen romans voor mij?                             | Ja, hier zijn de romans van Van Lennep.   |
| Hoe lang mag ik die boeken houden?                         | Zoo lang gij verkiest, er is volstrekt geen haast bij.  |

## Second Part.



## Third Book.

### Use of the Parts of Speech.

#### Twenty-sixth<sup>87</sup> Lesson. Zes en twintigste Les.

##### De veroveraar en de zeeroover.

De beruchte zeeroover Diomedes maakte zich ten tijde van Alexander den Grooten door zijne zeerooverijen wijd en zijd geducht. Eindelijk werd hij gevangen genomen en voor den Macedonischen koning gevoerd.

„Vermetele“, voert Alexander hem te gemoet, „hoe durft ge 't wagen, de geheele zee en de kusten der Middellandsche zee onveilig te maken en alles te rooven, wat u voorkomt?“ Zonder in 't minst verlegen te zijn, zegt de zeeroover: „Wel, machtige koning, ik doe het slechts om mijn voordeel. Daar ik echter maar één schip heb en mij dus slechts kleinigheden kan toeëigenen, heet ik zeeroover en wordt veracht en vervolgd. U echter, die eene geheele vloot tot uwe beschikking hebt en geheele koninkrijken vermeestert, u noemt men veroveraar en looft en roemt u. In het wezen der zaak echter verschilt ons beider handwerk niets.“ Dit stoute antwoord beviel den koning zoodanig, dat hij Diomedes in zijn dienst nam.

##### The Article.

###### I. Use of the Article.

§ 349. The Article is often used in Dutch where it is omitted in English, before common nouns as well as before proper names. As a rule the Article is but very seldom omitted in Dutch where it is used in English.

###### A. The Definite Article.

§ 350. The Definite Article is used in Dutch, but left out in English:

Before concrete ideas which represent a whole class, genus or species.



*De man is de beschermer der vrouw* man is the protector of woman.

*De mensch is sterfelijk* man is mortal.

*De stemmen der dieren zijn zeer verschillend* the voices of animals are very different.

Before abstract names and names of materials, taken in a general sense.

*Het leven is kort* life is short. *De tijd gaat snel voorbij* time quickly passes away.

*Het ijzer is een nuttig metaal* iron is a useful metal.

Before certain nouns denoting things unique in their kind which have more or less assumed the character of proper names.

*De adel* nobility

*het Congres* Congress

*het Christendom* Christianity

*de Christenheid* Christendom

*de Heilige Schrift(en)* Holy

Writ

*de hel* Hell

*de Hemel* Heaven

*het Jodendom* Judaism

*het Paradijs* Paradise

*het Parlement* Parliament

*de Regeering* Government

*het Vagevuur* Purgatory

*de Voorziening* Providence

*de Oude Geschiedenis* ancient history.

Note also:

*het avondeten* supper

*de dood* death

*de dorst* thirst

*het geluk* fortune, happiness

*de honger* hunger

*de kans* chance

*het leven* life

*de lieden* people

*de maatschappij* society

*de mensch* man, mankind

*de menschen* men, people

*het middageten* dinner

*de natuur* nature

*het noodlot* fate

*het ongeluk* misfortune

*het ontbijt* breakfast

*de oorlog* war

*de thee* tea

*de tijd* time

*de wet* law

*de zeden* } custom.

*het gebruik* }

Before the names of seasons.

*Het is zeer warm in den zomer* it is very hot in summer.

Before names of streets and mountains and before the words *meer* and *berg* followed by a proper name.

*Wij wonen in de Oranjestraat* we live in Orange-street.

*De Vesuvius* Vesuvius.

*Het Eriemeer* Lake Erie.

*De berg Etna* Mount Aetna.

Note also:

*De Elzas* Alsace, Alsatia.

*Den Bosch* or 's *Hertogenbosch* Bois-le-duc.

Before the names of buildings and places, named after persons or places.

*Het Nelson Plein* Nelson Square.

*De Hampstead Heide* Hampstead Heath.

*Het Hyde Park* Hyde Park.

*Het Victoria Station* Victoria Station.

*De Westminster Abdij* Westminster Abbey.

Before names of persons, places or countries when an adjective precedes.

*De heilige Petrus* Saint Peter. *De arme Willem* Poor William.

*Het oude Rome* Ancient Rome. *Het oude Engeland* Old England.

In most verbal and adverbial expressions.

*Het anker laten vallen* to drop anchor.

*Het anker lichten* to weigh anchor.

*Het (Zijn) geduld verliezen* to lose patience.

*In de gevangenis zetten* to put in prison.

*Iemand de hand geven* to shake hands with one.

*Iets ter harte nemen* to take a thing to heart.

*Naar het hof gaan* to go to court.

*Van het hof komen* to come from court.

*Aan het hof zijn* to be at court.

*Het huis (vaderland) verlaten* to leave home.

*Naar de kerk gaan* to go to church.

*In de medicijnen studeeren* to study medicine.

*Den moed verliezen* to lose courage, heart.

*Uit het oog (gezicht) verliezen* to lose sight of.

*Het oor leenen aan* to give ear to.

*Den oorlog verklaren aan* to declare war against.

*In den rouw zijn* to be in mourning.

*In de stad leven* to live in town.

*Op de vlucht gaan* to take to flight.

*Op de vlucht jagen* to put to flight.

*De wacht betrekken* to mount guard.

*De wacht (week) hebben* to be on duty.

*De wapenen opratten* to take up arms.

*Aan het werk zijn* to be at work.

*Ter eere van* in honour of.

*In het Engelsch geschreven* written in English.

*Van de hand in den tand* from hand to mouth.

*Van het hoofd tot de voeten* from head to foot.

*De meeste menschen* most men.

*In het Nederlandsch uitgesproken* pronounced in Dutch.

*Van het Oosten tot het Westen* from east to west.

*In het wit gekleed* dressed in white.  
*Met het zwaard in de hand* sword in hand.  
*Met den hoed in de hand* hat in hand.  
*Met de wapenen in de hand* arms in hand.

§ 351. The Definite Article is omitted in Dutch, but used in English:

After the words *alle* and *beide*.

*Alle knapen* all the boys. *Alle boeken* all the books.  
*Beide broeders* both the brothers. *Beide boeken* both the books.

Note. Sometimes the article is used with *beide*, in this case it must precede: *de beide broeders*, *de beide boeken*.

Before certain geographical names.

*Dekan* the Deccan. *Duins* the Downs.  
*Graucbunderland* the Grisons.  
*Morea* the Morea.  
*Nederland* the Netherlands (*het koninkrijk der Nederlanden*).  
*Oost- en West-Indië* the East and West Indies.  
*Texel* the Texel.

In some phrases as:

*Geheel Europa* the whole of Europe.  
*Gevaar loopen van* to run the risk of.  
*Op gevaar van* at the risk of.  
*Kans hebben* to stand the chance.  
*Op kosten van anderen* at the expense of others.  
*Lont ruiken* to take the alarm.  
*Mode worden* to become the fashion.  
*Piano spelen* to play the piano.

§ 352. The Definite Article is sometimes used in Dutch:

Where the Indefinite Article is used in English.

*Met het doel* with an intention.  
*Iemand voor den gek houden* to make a fool of one.  
*In de gelegenheid zijn* to have occasion to.  
*De koorts hebben* to have a fever.  
*Tot den laatsten man ontkomen* to be killed to a man.  
*Met het oog op* with a view to.  
*Met iets de proef nemen* to give a thing a trial.  
*In den regel* as a rule.  
*Onder het voorwendsel van* under a pretence of.  
*Den wensch uiten* to express a wish.  
*Van dezelfde grootte* of a size.

*Van denzelfden leeftijd* of an age.

*Terzelfder tijd* (tegelijk) at a time.

*Hij had de gewoonte mij aan te staren* he had a habit of staring at me.

*Hij drukte de hoop uit haar nog eens te zien* he expressed a hope to see her again.

Where a **Possessive Pronoun** is used in English.

*Hij redde mij het leven* he saved my life.

*Hij viel zich een gat in het hoofd* he broke his head.

*Hij brak zich het hoofd* he beat his brains.

*Hij sneed zich in den vinger* he cut his finger.

*Ik bezerde mij aan den arm* I hurt my arm.

*Hij wierp het mij voor de voeten* he cast it in my teeth. *teet*

*Hij schoot zich voor het hoofd* he blew out his brains.

### B. The Indefinite Article.

§ 353. **The Indefinite Article** is used in Dutch and omitted in English:

If *ooit*, *nooit* are followed by the subject of the sentence.

*Had ooit een dichter zooveel vertrouwen genoten?* Was ever poet so trusted before?

*Nooit had een meester een getrouwere bediende* never master had a more faithful servant.

Before the word *gedeelte* in the phrase *een gedeelte van*.

*Hij bracht een gedeelte van zijn leven in Pennsylvanië* door he spent part of his life in Pennsylvania.

If *wat* in an **exclamation** is followed by a singular.

*Wat een schoonheid in deze trekken!* What beauty in these features!

*Wat een volharding te midden der grootste moeilijkheden!* What perseverance under the greatest difficulties!

§ 354. **The Indefinite Article** is omitted in Dutch:

When a noun forming part of a predicate denotes a title, dignity, profession, calling or sect.

*Hij werd bevorderd tot kapitein* he was made a captain.

*Mijn broeder is boekhandelaar* my brother is a bookseller.

*Hij werd soldaat* he became a soldier.

*Shakespeare werd als dichter geboren* Sh. was born a poet.

*Zijn neef is Protestant* his cousin is a Protestant.

*Ik kom tot u niet als vijand maar als vriend* I come to you not as an enemy but as a friend.

Before titles of books.

*Inleiding tot de studie der Nederlandsche taal* an introduction to the Study of the Dutch Language.

*Maria Stuart, Treurspel in vijf bedrijven* Mary Stuart, a Tragedy in five Acts.

*Viator, Handleiding der Phonetiek* Viator, a Handbook of Phonetics.

After *menig* followed by a singular noun.

*Menig koning* many a king.

*Menig maal* or *menige keer* many a time.

**Note 1.** The expression no less a man is translated by *niemand minder dan*: He was no less a man than the emperor *hij (het) was niemand minder dan de keizer*.

**Note 2.** In such questions as: Is the book a good one? the indef. article a and one are both omitted. In Dutch we simply say: *Is het boek goed?*

**Note 3.** A or an before nouns denoting time, number, weight or measure is originally a preposition (old form an); it is rendered in Dutch by *per* or by the Def. Article.

*Vijf mijlen per dag* five miles a day.

*Twee gulden per (het) stuk* two florins a piece.

*Eens per maand* once a month.

*Zes shilling per (het) ons* six shillings an ounce.

*Dertig cents per (de) el* sixpence a yard.

Before *weinige*, *honderden*, *duizenden*, *millioenen*.

*Slechts weinige soldaten ontkwamen zonder letsel* a few soldiers only escaped without injury.

*Zij moeten nog duizenden woorden uitzoeken* they have still to select a thousand words.

In many verbal and adverbial phrases.

*Aanleg hebben voor* to have a turn for.

*Deelnemen aan, in* to take a part in.

*Iets doen met het doel* to do something with a view.

*Driftig worden* to fly into a passion.

*Driftig (woedend) zijn* to be in a passion (rage).

*Eetlust hebben* to have an appetite.

*Eetlust opwekken* to give an appetite.

*Geheim houden* to keep it a secret.

*Huast hebben* to be in a hurry.

*Halt houden* to make a stand.

*Het is jammer* it is a pity.  
*Lust (trek) hebben in* to have a mind to.  
*Ontzag voelen voor* to feel a regard for.  
*Pas op (Let op)* have a care.  
*Raden naar* to give a guess at.  
*Het is schande* it is a shame.  
*Een toertje maken* to take a drive.  
*Trotsch zijn op* to take a pride in.  
*In verlegenheid zijn* to be in a scrape.  
*In verlegenheid brengen* to draw into a scrape.  
*Zich zelf in verlegenheid brengen* to get oneself into a scrape.  
*Een wandeling maken* to take a walk.  
*Gaan zitten* to take a seat.  
*Zwak voor iets hebben* to have a weakness (a fancy) for.  
*Iemand voor het laatst vaarwel zeggen* to take a last farewell of one.  
*Achtereen* at a stretch.  
*Gemiddeld* on an average.  
*Op goed geluk af* at a venture.  
*Op groote schaal* on a large scale.  
*Boven pari* at a premium.  
*Plotseling* of a sudden.  
*Korten tijd daarna* a short time after.  
*Met verlies* at a discount.  
*Ik ben niet weinig verwonderd* I am not a little astonished.  
*Een hamer zonder steel* a hammer without a handle.  
*Een roman zonder held* a novel without a hero.

## II. Repetition and Place of the Article.

§ 355. In general the Article is repeated in Dutch where it is done in English.

*Een lepel, vork en mes* a spoon, fork and knife.

If, however, the Article has a special form for each gender it must be repeated.

*Hij heeft het huis en den tuin verkocht* he has sold the house and garden.

**Note.** *Wij schreven aan den Secretaris en den Penningmeester* and *wij schreven aan den Secretaris en Penningmeester* denote the same distinction as the English phrases: We wrote to the secretary and the treasurer (two different persons); — we wrote to the secretary and treasurer (one person holding two offices).

§ 356. In Dutch the Article is put before the adjective, also in such cases where it is placed in English between the adjective and the noun.

*Een generaal zóó groot als Napoleon* as great a general as Napoleon.

*Eene te groote verantwoording* too great a responsibility.

*Welk een kundig man hij ook zij* how clever a man he may be.

§ 357. As in English *al* precedes the Article.

*Al de soldaten waren in de stad* all the soldiers were in the city.

But: half the money = *het halve geld*; double the sum = *de dubbele som*.

**Note.** *Een halve gulden (flesch)* denotes as well half a guilder (bottle) as a half guilder (half-bottle). For the use of *de beide* = both the, see § 351; for the translation of many a, see § 354.

#### Exercises.

##### 56.

Poverty is the reward of idleness. The Earl of Leicester was one of the favourites of Queen Elizabeth. Mary Antoinette, the Archduchess of Austria, was daughter to the Emperor Francis I. Life is a dream. The Duke of Wellington is often called the hero of a hundred battles. The winter of this year has been very severe. The old Britons worshipped the sun and the moon. Sleep is a gift of nature. The mill of Potsdam, said King Frederic William IV., belongs to Prussian history. Lake Erie is more than three hundred feet higher than lake Ontario. I have no opportunity of sending you the novels we have spoken of. It is a pity that you have not brought your brother with you, I am at a loss now, for we do not know the way as well as he does. De Foe, the [well] known author of Robinson Crusoe, served his country for some years as a common soldier. After supper I'll come to fetch you and if you like we shall take a walk. It is a shame, that so many centuries had to pass before slavery was abolished, and the abominable trade in men came to an end. Never prince was in such a desperate state as William the Silent, as the first plans of himself and his brothers had miscarried. My uncle spent part of his life in the Dutch Colonies. Formerly his brother was a butcher, but now he is a merchant. After having resisted courageously, they were killed to a man. This young man went to America at a venture, he came

back a wiser and a happier man. "Was ever poet so trusted before?" Johnson exclaimed, when at Goldsmith's death it was found that his debts amounted to hundreds of pounds.

57.

Music is called the language of nature. He gladly promised to interest himself to procure his friend a good situation as a teacher. Many a poet has sung the praise of spring. Both the king and the minister visited the capital of Belgium. How clever a man he may be he was at a loss when he was bidden to translate this letter. A horrible railway-accident took place near Paris, only a few passengers escaped without injury. What a price you ask me for such a trifling thing, it is not worth half a guilder. We had a thousand things to do before we could leave town. It has often been said that the whole world is a theatre. Nearly all the houses of that town were burnt down, the large buildings as the church, the town-hall and the museum were saved however. Both the prisoners were sent to Siberia, they took a last farewell of their parents as they feared never to see them back. Once a year I go into a hilly country, the ascent of hills is fatiguing but gives an appetite. Do not make a fool of him, he knows more about this affair than you. He walked all over the country from north to south, but never more than six miles a day. I shall pay you double the sum if you go at once. There are few great personages in history, who have been more exposed to the calumny of enemies and the flattery of friends than Queen Elizabeth.

58.

X., January 10<sup>th</sup> 1912.

Dear Friend,

I am very glad that you intend at last to visit us, please come as soon as possible. This week a great feast will be given in honour of Admiral R., who has come back from Atjeh. If you come early enough you may have dinner with us and after tea we shall have plenty of time to visit the decorated streets and buildings. I hope Wednesday will suit you in any case, on this day a nice concert will be given in the great hall in the neighbourhood of Emma Park. I am in a position to get nice places for all the festivities which will be given.

Owing to the health of my wife who still has a fever I can invite you only; next time, I hope to be able to invite you with your friends at the same time.

If you come do not forget to bring me the books you spoke of in your last letter, especially the novels of van



Lennepe. I have a fancy for these works and should like to read them again. It is a pity that such good books are not more read, every one should know them. Have you also some modern novels for me?

Hoping to see you very soon and with many compliments to you and your friends,

truly yours  
N. N.

### Gesprek.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| Gaat gij mee wandelen?   | Gaarne, maar ik zal het eerst aan Mama zeggen.  |
| Welken weg zullen wij gaan?  | Laten wij naar N. gaan; ik zou gaarne Louise bezoeken, ik heb haar lang niet meer gezien. |
| Ik ga mee, als het niet te ver is.                                       | Het zal nauwelijks drie kwartier ver zijn.  |
| Het is verrukkelijk mooi weer; beter konden wij het niet verlangen.      | Ja, maar de lucht betreft; als wij maar geen onweer krijgen.                              |
| Zijt gij bang voor den bliksem?  | Sedert de bliksem in het huis van onzen buurman is ingeslagen, ben ik bang voor onweer.   |
| De lucht zal wel weer opklaren, in geval van nood nemen wij een rijtuig. | Neen, ik ga liever te voet; ik houd niet van rijden.                                      |
| Gij schijnt goed ter been te zijn.                                       | Ja, ik ben een goed wandelaarster.  |
| Loop ik ook soms te langzaam voor u?                                     | Toch niet, ik voeg mij gaarne naar u en wij hebben tijd genoeg.                           |

## Twenty-seventh Lesson. Zeven en twintigste Les.

### Goede raad van Esopus.

Esopus, de beroemde Grieksche fabeldichter, ging eens te voet naar een klein stadje.

Een wandelaar komt hem te gemoet, groet hem en vraagt: „Vriend, hoe lang moet ik nog loopen, voor ik het stadje, dat daar ginds ligt, bereikt heb?“ „Loop“, zegt Esopus. „Ja, ik weet wel“, antwoordde de andere, „dat ik loopen moet, wanneer ik verder komen wil, maar ik

wensch van u te weten, hoe lang ik loopen moet." „Loop“, is wederom 't antwoord van Esopus. „Die kerel is zeker gek“, zegt de andere en gaat brommende heen. Pas is hij eenige schreden gegaan of Esopus roept hem na: „Hé vriend, een woordje; in twee uren kunt gij in het stadje zijn.“ Verrast blijft de wandelaar staan. „Ei“, roept deze. „waarom zegt gij mij dat nu en niet zooeven, toen ik het u vroeg?“ „Wel man“, antwoordde Esopus, „hoe kon ik dat zeggen, daar ik u nog niet had zien loopen en dus niet weten kon, of uw gang snel of langzaam was.“

### Cases.

#### I. The Genetive and the Use of the Preposition *van*.

§ 358. The Genetive is used to denote origin or possession.

*De kinderen mijner tante* the children of my aunt.

*De boeken der leerlingen* the books of the pupils.

Besides this the Genetive may be used to denote a part of anything.

*Twee mijner boeken* two of my books.

*Het grootste deel des legers* the greater part of the army.

*Velen onzer, hunner* many of us, of them.

§ 359. After *alles*, *allerlei*, *iets*, *niets*, *veel*, *weinig*, *wat* and *wat voor* the Genetive of the neuter adjective used substantively follows.

*Alles goeds* everything good.

*Allerlei lekkers* all sorts of nice things.

*Iets moois, niets moois* something, nothing nice.

*Veel (weinig) moois* many (not many) beautiful things.

*Wat aangenaams* something agreeable.

*Wat voor nieuws hebt gij vernomen* what news have you heard?

§ 360. The Genetive used adjectively must be placed after the noun on which it depends.

*Het huis mijns vaders* wordt verkocht.

Masculine and neuter Genetives however may also be placed before the substantive they depend on.

*Mijns vaders huis* wordt verkocht.

**Note.** The possessive Genetive is generally rendered by *van*; in common and conversational style always.

*Het huis van mijn vader* is verkocht.

§ 361. Feminine nouns and names of family relations take the genitive ending of masculine nouns and are always placed before the substantive on which they depend.

*Maria's kamer* (room). *Moeders lieveling* (darling).

§ 362. The genitive of proper nouns **must** always precede.

*Frankrijks rijkdommen* the riches of France.

*Jezus' leven*, **not** *het leven Jezus'*.

**Note.** The word *God* and some bible names are excepted.

*Het rijk Gods op aarde* the kingdom of God on earth.

*De Spreuken Salomo's* the proverbs of Salomon.

*De Psalmen Davids* the psalms of David.

§ 363. The personal and indefinite pronouns or numerals always precede the substantive on which they depend.

*Ulieder huis* your (**Plural**) house.

*Niemands vriend* nobody's friend.

Also with **beide**: *beider ouders* the parents of both.

§ 364. After words denoting a weight, number or measure the Genitive was formerly used and may still be found in elevated style.

*Een bete broods* a bit of bread.

*Een teug (dronk) waters* a draught of water.

Such old genitives are out of use now and being considered as appositions they take the case of the preceding word.

*Een glas roode wijn verfrist* a glass of claret refreshes.

*Drink een glas rooden wijn* have a glass of claret.

§ 365. The Genitive of a substantive followed by an apposition is always rendered by means of *van*. Instead of: *De roem des Keizers, des grootsten veldheers zijner eeuw*, we should say: *De roem van den Keizer, den grootsten veldheer zijner eeuw* (century).

§ 366. The Genitive of collective nouns depending on pronouns or indefinite numerals and Genitives without an article depending on substantives **must** always be rendered by means of *van*.

*Niemand, velen, eenigen, wie van het leger* (not **des legers**).

*Een voorbeeld van geduld* an example of patience.

*Een staaltje van onbeschaamdheid* a proof of impudence.

*Eene soort van linnen* a sort of linen.

§ 367. The Norman Genitive may generally be translated literally into Dutch.

**Exceptions:** After words denoting **measure, weight, number, quantity**, s. § 364.

*Een glas wijn* a glass of wine.

*Een kilo (kilogram) boter* a kilo(gram) of butter.

*Tien kilo vleesch* ten kiloes of meat.

*Tien meter laken* ten meters of cloth.

*Een regiment soldaten* a regiment of soldiers.

*Een kudde schapen* a flock of sheep.

**Note.** When such substantives are qualified and defined by some pronoun, **of** must be translated.

*Een stuk brood*; — *een stuk van dit (zijn) brood*.

*Een kilo van zulk vleesch. Een glas van dezen wijn.*

When the names of **countries, towns, villages** and **months** are connected with common nouns.

*De stad Londen, Amsterdam* the city of London, Amsterdam.

*Het koninkrijk Nederland*; — *but het koninkrijk der Nederlanden* the kingdom of the Netherlands.

*De maand December* the month of December.

*(Op) den eersten Mei* on the first of May.

§ 368. Many substantives connected with another noun by means of the preposition **of**, are rendered in Dutch by **compound** substantives.

<i>Aardernucht</i> fruit of the soil	<i>Familiecapen</i> coat of arms of
<i>Bazuïngeschal</i> sound of trumpets	a family
<i>Bergrug</i> ridge of a mountain	<i>Gerechtszaal</i> court of justice
<i>Bloembéd</i> bed of flowers	<i>Haarvlecht</i> plait of hair
<i>Boomstam</i> trunk of a tree	<i>Kindergek</i> lover of children
<i>Dayorder</i> order of the day	<i>Menschenkennis</i> knowledge of man
<i>Drukpersvrijheid</i> liberty of the press	<i>Molenrad</i> wheel of a mill
<i>Engelengeduld</i> patience of an angel	<i>Spijkerkop</i> head of a nail
	<i>Waarheidsliefde</i> love of truth.

§ 369. **Of** preceded by substantives formed from verbs requiring a special preposition, is translated accordingly.

*De gedachte aan God* the thought of God.

*De vrees voor den dood* the fear of death.

*Uit gebrek aan geld* from want of money.

§ 370. **Van** or an **adjective** must be used when in English the Saxon Genetive is used to denote **time** or **distance**.

*Een afstand van twee mijlen* a two miles' distance.

*De tachtigjarige oorlog* the Eighty-Years' war.

§ 371. No Genetive is used in Dutch, when in English the words **house, shop, church, hotel, office** are omitted after the possessive Genetive.

*Ik zag hem bij mijn oom* I saw him at my uncle's.

*Wij gaan naar St. Paul* we are going to St. Paul's.

*Zij waren bij Krasnapolsky* they were at Krasnapolsky's (hotel).

§ 372. After **prèdicative** nouns expressing relations of **friendship, subordination, participation, &c.** the preposition **to** is used in English, whilst in Dutch the Genetive or **van** must be used.

*Hij was (de) een vriend der armen* he was a friend to the poor.

*Deze man is een slaaf zijner (van zijne) driften* this man is a slave to his passions.

*Hij werd een slachtoffer van ongelukkige omstandigheden* he became a victim to unhappy circumstances.

## II. The Dative and the Accusative and the Use of the Prepositions **aan** and **voor**.

§ 373. As a rule the Dative is put after the verb and before the Accusative; but if the D. is expressed by **aan** or **voor**, the Accusative may follow or precede the D.; the latter is more usual however.

*Ik geef mijnen broeder dit boek* I give my brother this book.

*Ik geef aan mijnen broeder dit boek* or *ik geef dit boek aan mijnen broeder*.

§ 374. When the indirect object is a person the Dative may be expressed by **aan**, except if the D. is a reflexive pronoun.

*Hij geeft zich de moeite naar alles te kijken* he gives himself the trouble of looking at all.

§ 375. If the Dative is a person in whose behalf something is done, it may be expressed by *voor*.

*Ik haal hem de courant* or *ik haal de courant voor hem*  
I go to fetch him the newspaper.

§ 376. In English the Dative is put last when emphasis is intended, or when a qualifying word is added to the D. In Dutch the D. stands before the A. and if necessary emphasis is expressed by the stress of the voice.

*Hij gaf den armen blinden bedelaar een stuiver* he gave  
a penny to the poor blind beggar.

Cf.: *zend haar dit boek* send this book to her, and *zend haar dit boek* send her this book.

§ 377. The Dutch Dative must sometimes be expressed by the Gen. or by prepositions in English:

By the possessive case (Saxon Genetive).

*Hij redde een soldaat het leven* he saved a soldier's life.  
*Alles viel den overwinnaar in handen* all fell into the  
hands of the victor.

(See also § 352).

By various prepositions.

*Hij verklaarde Frankrijk den oorlog* he declared war  
against France.

*De gezant viel den koning te voet* the ambassador fell  
on his knees before the king.

*Bismarck werd den titel van prins verleend* B. had the  
title of Prince conferred on him.

*Hij boezemde ons nieuwen moed in* he inspired us with  
fresh courage.

By *of* or *from* with an other construction.

*De dief ontstal mij een groote som* the thief robbed me  
of a large sum.

*Hij ontvluchtte mij* he fled from me.

*Hij ontnam het hem* he took it from him.

*Zij verheelde mij de zaak niet* she did not conceal the  
matter from me.

**Note.** As to the Adjectives and Verbs which are followed by a Dative, see §§ 392—393 and §§ 505—510.

### Exercises.

59.

I shall send you the best Dutch novels I possess. some of these works are translated into English. The children of

my friend came back from the country with all sorts of nice things. I have read with much pleasure the essays of Bacon the philosopher. The best portrait of Rembrandt is that painted by the artist himself. We left all to the care of the waiter. Although he travelled all over Europe he did not know a word of French or German. When we were in the city of Amsterdam we daily met [with] the parents of both our friends. Though they knew that we had watched their proceedings, they tried to conceal the matter from us. This nice book was given to me as a keepsake. The measures of the Dutch troops to hinder the enemy from crossing the river failed entirely. It appears to me that the advice which the minister gave to the king was not the right one. It was well-known to him that smoking is forbidden in such places. It was owing to the fog that all steamers were late. This is a very difficult question, if you had asked me, I could not have given you an answer either. Charles, the son of Charles the First, fled for his life and with the utmost trouble escaped the sad fate of his father. King Richard the Second rode boldly to meet the rebels.

## 60.

**Dialogue.**

We will drink tea out of doors this evening. Come, look sharp, fetch your hat and put your things together. — It is very pleasant. But here is no table. What must we do? — O, here is a large round stump of a tree, it will do very well for a table. — But there are no chairs either? — Here is a seat of turf, and a bank almost covered with violets; we shall sit here and you and William may lie on the carpet. — I see no carpet here. — Well I never! Don't you know that in our pleasure-garden the grass is our carpet. — Pretty green soft carpet! and it is very large, for it spreads very far, over all the fields as far as my eye can reach. — It is getting late now, the air is rather chilly, so we had better go home now. — You are right, the sun is already very low in the sky, it is near sunset.

## 61.

**Tale of a dog.**

A large dog was at sea in a ship: a storm came on and though the ship was not far from land, the sea was so rough and the waves so high that no boat could get safe to shore, or be sent from the shore to the ship; it was thought, if they could but get a rope from the ship to the shore they could then guide a boat, by the help of this rope, safe

through the great waves to the land. They gave a rope to the dog, who took it in his mouth, swam from the ship, through the rough waves to the beach, gave the rope to some men who were on shore, to lend what aid they could to the crew of the ship; and thus the boat was drawn safe to the land with the crew in it, whose lives would have been lost but for this brave dog.

### Gesprek.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| Gaat gij dezen zomer nog op reis?   | Dat weet ik nu nog niet, waarschijnlijk wel. En gij dan?                                    |
| Ik blijf dit jaar thuis; waarheen denkt gij te gaan?                      | Indien ik op reis ga, zal ik dit maal Italië bezoeken.                                      |
| Kent gij de taal van het land? Hebt gij Italiaansch geleerd?              | Ik ken geen enkel woord Italiaansch; maar hoop mij met Duitsch en Fransch te kunnen redden. |
| In de hotels kan dat zeker wel. Hoe lang denkt gij weg te blijven?        | Indien mijne bezigheden het veroorloven, blijf ik vier weken op reis.                       |
| Bezoekt gij dan ook nog eenige steden in Zwitserland?                     | Nee, ik ga regelrecht door naar Italië.   |
| Wanneer gij soms een reisgids wilt hebben, dan zal ik u den mijne leenen. | Zeer gaarne. Wilt gij hem mij toezenden of zal ik hem laten halen?                          |
| Ik zal hem u onmiddellijk toezenden.                                      | Ik dank u, gij zijt als altijd zeer vriendelijk.  |

## Twenty-eighth Lesson. Acht en twintigste Les.

### Koelbloedigheid.

Toen Karel XII, koning van Zweden, eens eene stad belegerde, liet hij op zekeren dag zijnen geheimschrijver eenen brief schrijven. De schrijver zat aan eenen lessenaar, en de koning wandelde met de handen op den rug de kamer op en neer, terwijl hij den ambtenaar den brief dicteerde. Plotseling viel er eene bom door het dak en kwam in de kamer naast het vertrek, waarin de koning werkte, terecht. De deur van die kamer stond open. Met een hevigen knal sprong de bom uiteen. Vreeselijk was de uitwerking: de glazen werden verbrijzeld en alle meubelen lagen aan splinters. Gelukkig voor den koning was zijn



vertrek van stevige muren voorzien, en maakte het een deel van een toren uit. De geheimschrijver begon over al zijne leden te trillen; zijn gelaat werd doodsbleek, en de pen ontviel aan zijne handen. „Hoe is het?“ vroeg de koning, die zijne wandeling geen oogenblik gestaakt had, „waarom gaat gij niet voort met schrijven?“ „Ach, Sire!“ was 't antwoord, „die bom!“ . . . en verder kon de arme man geen woord uitbrengen. „Welnu!“ hervatte de koning, „wat heeft de bom met den brief te maken, dien ik u dicteerde? Schrijf maar rustig door, en laat u door zoo'n kleinheid niet vervaard maken.“

## The Adjective.

### I. Use of the Adjective.

§ 378. Most Adjectives may be used attributively and predicatively.

*Het goede (slechte) boek; — het boek is goed (slecht).*

Some adjectives however are used attributively only:

Such as may be described by the Genitive of the noun they are derived from: *de vaderlandsche geschiedenis* = *de geschiedenis des vaderlands (van het vaderland)*.

Such as are formed by **en** or **sch** to denote materials: *een houten hut* (or *een hut van hout*) a wooden cottage, *een lakensche jas* a cloth coat.

Those which are formed from adverbs ending in **-lings**, **-lijks**, **-waarts**; i. e.: *ruggelingsch* backward, *jaarlijksch* yearly, *voorwaartsch* forward.

A few other adjectives, as: *linker* (to the) left, *rechter* (to the) right, *naburig* neighbouring, *verleden* past, *voormalig* former, &c.

§ 379. Sometimes adverbs are used as adjectives.

*Zij is goedsmoeds* = *welgemoed* she is in good spirits.

*De deur is toe* = *gesloten* the door is closed.

§ 380. Dutch adjectives used as nouns do not denote a whole class of persons only, but also individuals or a number of persons.

*De armen, de rijken, de blinden* the poor, the rich, the blind.

*Een arme, rijke, blinde* a poor, rich, blind man.

*Eene arme, rijke, blinde* a poor, rich, blind woman.

*Deze armen, rijken, blinden hebben veel geleden* these poor, rich, blind people have suffered much.

§ 381. Whereas in Dutch adjectives may be used as nouns, a substantive must be added in English.

*Al het oude* everything old.

*Het eerste wat ik zag* the first thing I saw.

*Het gekste van de zaak is, dat wij niet weten hoe te beginnen* the most curious thing about the matter is, that we do not know how to begin.

*Het gebeurde heeft volstrekt geen indruk gemaakt* the incident has produced no impression at all.

§ 382. If such adjectives are used to denote a quality in the abstract, they may as in English be preceded by a demonstrative, indefinite or possessive pronoun or by another adjective, see § 359.

§ 383. Adjectives denoting languages (see § 350) generally take the article.

*Hij spreekt Duitsch en Fransch* he speaks German and French.

*In het Duitsch, Fransch* in German, French.

*Het Duitsch is moeilijker dan het Nederlandsch* German is more difficult than Dutch.

§ 384. In English nouns are often used as adjectives; in Dutch they must be rendered by the corresponding adjectives, except geographical names in *er*, which remain unchanged.

*Een zijden kleed* a silk dress.

*Een ijzeren ring* an iron ring.

*Delftsch aardewerk* Delft pottery.

*Sheffieldsche messen* Sheffield knives.

*De Utrechtsche hoogeschool* the Utrecht University.

*De Deventer stoomboot* the Deventer steamer.

§ 385. The word **one** (**ones**) which is often used to avoid the repetition of a noun must be omitted in Dutch.

*Een groot huis en een klein* a large house and a small one.

*Groote huizen en kleine* large houses and small ones.

*De grooten dezer aarde* the great ones of the earth.

*De leeuwerik en hare jongen* the lark and her young ones.

*De Heilige* the Holy one. *De Booze* the Evil one.

**Note also:** *Ons contract was oud* our contract was an old one; *mijn verhaal is zeer kort* my story is a very short one.

## II. Place of the Adjective.

§ 386. Attribute adjectives as a rule stand before the noun. In a few standing expressions it stands behind, i. e.: *vaderlief* dear father, *moederlief* dear mother, *jongentief* dear boy, *God almachtig* God Almighty, *de gouverneur-generaal* the governor-general.

§ 387. The adjective must not be placed after the noun:

When it is accompanied by an adjunct.

*Een drie voet dikke muur* a wall three feet thick.

*Eene in het oog loopende onverschilligheid* an indifference sure to raise comment.

*Een naar verandering hunkend volk* a nation eager for change.

Note the following translations:

*Alle mogelijke middelen* all means possible.

*De aanwezige personen* the persons present.

*In lang vervlogen tijden* in times long past.<sup>1</sup>

*Alle denkbare samenvoegingen* all the combinations imaginable.

*De drie volgende dagen* the three days following.

*Den volgende Zondag* Sunday next.

*Sinds onheugelijke tijden* from time immemorial.

*De Koninklijke Prins* the prince royal.

*Het Koninklijke bloed* the blood royal.

*De regeerende Koningin* the queen regnant.

*De vermoedelijke troonopvolger* the heir apparent or presumptive.

*De gekroonde dichter* the Poet Laureate.

§ 388. Attributive participles are often placed after the noun in English, where they precede in Dutch.

*Een lijst van gedrukte boeken* a list of books printed.

*Het getal der geschreven brieven* the number of letters written.

*De afzonderlijk vermelde voorwerpen* the objects specified.

*De genoemde personen* the persons named.

*Nog levende personen* persons still living.

*De aan hem toevertrouwde post* the post entrusted to him.

*De door ons besproken zaak* the affair discussed by us.

§ 389. When an adjective (or an adverb) is connected with a verb it precedes.

<sup>1</sup> For several weeks past = *sinds verscheidende weken*.

*Oud worden* to grow old.  
*Boos worden* to get angry.  
*Ziek worden* to become (get, fall) ill.  
*Er aardig uitzien* to look pretty.  
*Toornig (boos) kijken* to look angry.  
*Geduldig voortgaan (met iets)* to continue patiently.  
*Gelukkig leven* to live happy.  
*Goed blijven* to keep good.

### III. The Government of Adjectives.

#### A. Adjectives governing the Genetive.

§ 390. Formerly many Dutch adjectives governed the Genetive<sup>1</sup>, nowadays most of them are used with the Accusative, the Genetive occurring in poetry and elevated style only.

*Verkwik u aan zijne zangen der liefde, vol gloeds*  
 (Potgieter) refresh yourself with his songs full of  
 fervour (glow).

*Zijne nieuwe jachtgezellen waren der streek onkundig*  
 (Van Lennep) his new hunting-companions were  
 unacquainted with the country.

*Was hij nog niet overtuigd, of deze zijner wel indachtig*  
*zoude zijn?* (Van Lennep) was he not yet convinced  
 that the latter would remember him?

*Hij alleen is uwer, gij zijt zijner waardig* (Beets)  
 he alone is worthy of you, you are worthy of him.

**Note also:** *desbevoegd* entitled thereto,  
*desbevoegd* having knowledge thereof,  
*deskundig* expert, *een deskundige* an expert.

§ 391. *Moe* and *schuldig* are used with the G. in a special meaning: *moe* = tired of; *zwervens* *moe(de)* tired of wandering; *schuldig* in the expression *des doods schuldig zijn* only, to have forfeited life. Else they are used with the Accusative.

*Moe van het wandelen* tired with walking.

*Een aanzienlijke som schuldig zijn* to owe a large sum.

*Aan een misdau schuldig zijn* to be guilty of a crime.

#### B. Adjectives with the Dative.

§ 392. The Adjectives which govern the Dative are:

<sup>1</sup> They were almost the same as the German adjectives which still govern the Gen.. see: Otto, German Conversation-Grammar, 29th ed.. p. 303. 4.

<i>Aangenaam</i> agreeable	<i>lief</i> dear
<i>onaangenaam</i> disagreeable	<i>nadeelig</i> prejudicial, hurtful
<i>dienslig</i> serviceable	<i>nuttig</i> useful
<i>eigen</i> peculiar	<i>trouw (getrouw)</i> faithful
<i>eigenaardig</i> peculiar, strange	<i>vijandig</i> hostile
<i>gelijk</i> like, equal	<i>voordeelig</i> advantageous
<i>ongelijk</i> unequal	<i>vreemd</i> strange
<i>genegen</i> inclined	<i>welgevallig</i> pleasing
<i>hatelijk</i> malicious	<i>welkom</i> welcome.

§ 393. The Dative of some of these Adjectives may be expressed by a preposition, i. e.: *eigen*, (*on*)*gelijk*, *welgevallig* **aan**; *dienslig*, *nadeelig*, *nuttig*, *voordeelig* **voor**.

### Exercises.

62.

Burke has written an essay about the sublime and the beautiful. The Swiss are as a rule tall, well formed, strong and industrious. The blind say that black feels rough and white smooth. There are some men who seem to believe that they are not bad, as there are others who are worse than they. The earliest literature in some of the original languages of the British Islands, of which some remains are still extant, seems to be the Irish. If we may believe popular tradition and the oldest chronicles extant, the Irish possessed an uninterrupted succession of Bards since their first settlement in the country; and the names of some among them, who are said to have flourished already as soon as the first century of our era, are still remembered. But the oldest bardic compositions that have been preserved are of the fifth century. Do liquids when heated become lighter or heavier? They become when heated specifically lighter because liquids expand themselves and take up more room, though they do not weigh any more. St. Domingo formerly consisted of two colonies, a French one which occupied the western part of the isle, and a Spanish one which was situated in the eastern part of it. The climate of the isle is not a healthy one; many Frenchmen, Englishmen and Dutchmen have perished in it.

63.

Have you ever read Wagenaar's History of our country? No, Sir, I have read a smaller book. At the fair I have bought some Sheffield knives and some Delft pottery. The first colony established by the whites in that part of North-America which is called at present the United States, was Virginia 1607; the next in New-York by the Dutch 1613; the next by the Puritans at Plymouth in Massachusetts

1620. In other parts of the country colonies were established shortly afterwards, especially by the emigrants from England; whilst colonies were established also by Swedes, Germans and Frenchmen. The whole country all along the Atlantic coast was peopled in this way. By degrees the colonists advanced more and more into the wilderness, till small and large towns rose up throughout the interior of the country. Good morning, Mr. B. Has your friend not yet come back from New-York? No, Sir, several weeks ago he wrote to me that he intended to visit some beautiful countries of the United States before leaving America. When he wrote last he was at Washington, from there he will go to Carlisle, a beautiful little town with nice scenery somewhat like that of Heidelberg, the well known old town on the river Neckar. Of the old ruin only a wall three feet thick remained. In times long past rich and wealthy men lived on the same spot where these stones are to be seen. It was not only disagreeable but also very hurtful to them that their brother in Italy became a bankrupt. Why do you not visit your friends in A.? You know that you are always welcome to them.

64.

### Winter in Russia.

The most severe cold we have is mild compared with that which the inhabitants of the Russian capital have to bear every winter. The cold season lasts more than seven months; during most of that time all is covered with ice and snow. The broad, clear river Neva so beautiful in summer, covered with the shipping of all nations, and dotted with gay pleasure-boats, is then a sheet of ice, and becomes the fashionable drive, the most crowded part of the whole city. For the greater part the days are cloudless during the severe season. The sun, in midwinter, shines for only a short time on the golden domes of the churches, and gilds the upper stories of the houses. Every horse is grey; for one does not see their real colour for the thick coating of hoar-frost which covers them, and every cabman looks like a venerable old man, with his frost-covered beard, from which icicles frequently hang.

### Gesprek.

Waarom zijt gij gisteren niet op het concert geweest?	Twee oude bekenden van mijn vader kwamen ons bezoeken.
Moest gij daarvoor thuis blij- ven?	Ja, de oude vrienden van mijn vader zijn ook mijne vrienden.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| Waren zij al eerder in Nederland geweest?  | Neen, zij kenden alleen het oostelijke gedeelte van ons land.   |
| Dan hadden ze zeker heel wat te kijken en te bezien!   | Dat kunt gij denken, onze groote waterwerken wekken altijd de bewondering der vreemden op.  |
| Hebt gij hen niet aan het IJ gebracht om het fraaie uitzicht te genieten?                    | Ja, wij zijn zelfs met een klein bootje tot aan IJmuiden geweest om Amsterdam bij de terugkomst ook van den waterkant te bezichtigen. |
| Blijven zij nog lang hier?   | Ik geloof tot het einde dezer week.   |
| Mocht gij morgen soms geen tijd hebben, dan zal ik gaarne met hen naar het Rijksmuseum gaan. | Zeer vriendelijk! Ik zal gaarne van uw aanbod gebruik maken, want ik heb in den voormiddag geen tijd.                                 |

## Twenty-ninth Lesson. Negen en twintigste Les.

### Peter de Groote op de werf der Oost-Indische Compagnie.

Peter kon den spijt niet verbergen, dat hij zijn oogmerk, in *Zuandam* onbekend en in stilte op eene werf te leven en te werken, had zien mislukken. Hij wilde zijn voornemen, zelf den scheepsbouw als timmerman practisch te leeren, niet opgeven. Daar Witsen destijds Bewindhebber der *Oost-Indische Compagnie* was, is de reden niet verre te zoeken, waarom hij te rade werd, heeren Bewindhebberen te verzoeken, dat men hem eene woning op hunne werf toestond, en door het beginnen en aftimmeren van een nieuw galjoet of fregat, hem gelegenheid zou geven, om alles, wat tot het bouwen van een schip vereischt wordt, te kunnen gadeslaan.

Reeds op den negen en twintigsten der maand Augustus, werd dit voorstel door den tolk van den Czaar, den Luitenant van der Hulst, uit naam van het groote Gezantschap, in eene buitengewone vergadering van Bewindhebberen gedaan en met de meeste heuschheid ingewilligd.

## Pronouns.

## I. Use of the Personal and Reflective Pronouns.

§ 394. **Het** answers to the English *it*.

*Het regent, sneeuwt* it is raining, snowing.

*Waar is uw potlood?* *Hier is het.* Where is your lead-pencil? Here it is.

§ 395. If **het** is used in reference to a person or thing, it may be used instead of **he, she, they**.

*Kent gij dien man?* **Het** is een van onze eerste kunstenaars.

Do you know that man? He is one of our first artists.

*Het is een jong meisje tusschen de vijftien en achttien jaar.*

She is a young lady between fifteen and eighteen.

*Kent gij die lieden (boeken)?* *Het zijn toneelspelers (romans).*

Do you know those men (books)? They are actors (novels).

§ 396. **Het (dat)** is often used where in English **so** stands after the verbs **to be, to do, to think, to tell, to say, to suppose, to believe, to hope**.

*Mijn broeder is gelukkig en verdient **het** (dat) te zijn.*

My brother is happy, and deserves to be so.

*Hij beloofde ons te bezoeken en ik hoop dat hij **het** zal doen.*

He promised to visit us, and I hope he will do so.

*Ik geloof **het** niet* I do not believe so.

§ 397. **It** used in reference to a thing, is translated by a pronoun agreeing in gender with the noun to which it refers.

*Waar is uw lepel?* *Hij is gevallen.*

Where is your spoon? It has fallen.

*Ik kan met deze pen niet schrijven, zij is slecht.*

I cannot write with this pen, it is a bad one.

§ 398. **Het** being the grammatical subject of a sentence has the verb in the plural, if the real subject stands in the plural.

*Het **waren** sommige rumoerige jongens op straat.*

It was some noisy boys in the street.

*Het **zijn** de veelvuldige regens die alles bederven.*

It is the frequent rains that spoil everything.

Observe the order in:

*Ik ben **het*** it is I

*zij is **het*** it is he

*zij is **het*** it is she

*wij zijn **het*** it is we

*gij zijt **het*** it is you

*zij zijn **het*** it is they.



§ 399. **Het** is used in Dutch instead of a verb after the auxiliaries *kunnen*, *mogen*, *moeten* &c.

*Ik kan niet schrijven met deze pen, probeer eens of gij **het** kunt.*

I cannot write with this pen, just try if you can.

*Mag ik dit lezen? Ja, gij moogt **het**.*

Do you allow me to read this? Yes, you may.

§ 400. **Het** is often used in Dutch with certain verbs, without reference to anything in particular.

*Zij schaterden **het** uit van het lachen* they roared with laughter.

*Ik ben **het** eens met u* I agree with you.

*Hij heeft **het** druk* he is very busy.

*Hij won **het** van mij* he beat me.

*Hij zal **het** wel laten* leave him alone to do it.

*Hij heeft **het** lang uitgehouden* he has held out long.

§ 401. **Er** = the weakened form of the adverb *daar*, answers to the English **there**, when it is followed by *zijn* or an equivalent verb. If **er** is followed by another verb, it is mostly omitted in English.

***Er** waren dieven in den tuin* there were thieves in the garden.

***Er** leefde eens een koning* once upon a time there lived a king.

***Er** schijnt geen reden voor te zijn* there seems to be no reason for it.

***Er** gebeurde een ongeluk* an accident happened.

***Er** brak een brand uit* a fire broke out.

§ 402. **Er** = *daarvan* (French **en**) referring to a preceding noun is not used in English.

*Hoeverl woordenboeken hebt gij? Ik heb **er** maar drie.*

How many dictionaries have you? I have only three.

***Er** zijn **er** velen, die dat niet weten.*

There are many who do not know that, (cf. the French: **il y en a beaucoup** &c.).

*Deze kersen zien **er** goed uit, geef mij **er** eenige.*

These cherries look nice, give me some.

§ 403. If **er** stands for the grammatical subject of a passive verb, the logical subject being a following infinitive or dependent clause, this **er** answers to the English **it**.

***Er** werd besloten de zaak uit te stellen* it was resolved to postpone the matter.

*Er werd voorgesteld hem ook uit te noodigen* it was proposed to invite him too.

*Er werd opgemerkt dat sommige boeken ontbraken* it was observed that some books were missing.

*Er werd gepraat* somebody was talking.

§ 404. The Pers. Pronouns are often omitted after *mede*, where they must be used in English.

*Ga je mee (= mede)?* Will you come with us?

*Wij gaan naar C., ga je mee?* We are going to C.; will you make one?

*Hij nam alles mee*<sup>1</sup> he took everything with him.

§ 405. The expressions *wij waren met ons tien*, *tiwaalf*, *zij waren met hun vijven*, *zes* &c. run in English: there were ten or twelve of us, they were five, six &c.

§ 406. **Self** when used as a noun = one's own person is translated by *ik*.

Scrooge fancied he saw his former self *S. dacht zijn vroeger ik te zien*.

A true friend is another self *een trouwe vriend is een tweede ik*.

The love of self *de liefde voor zijn ik*.

**Note.** If **self** is used in the sense of selfishness or instead of itself, herself it is translated by *zelf*, *zelve*.

*Zelf is een welsprekend advocaat* self is an eloquent advocate.

*Niet bewust van hare schoonheid, was zij de schoonheid zelve* thoughtless of beauty, she was beauty's self.

§ 407. After prepositions the Pers. Pronouns of the 3<sup>d</sup> Person are used in English but not in Dutch.

*Hij sloot de deur achter zich toe* he locked the door behind him.

*Zij kijken altijd vóór zich* they always look before them.

**Note.** When **self** (**selves**) is added to the pronoun, the same reflectives are used in Dutch.

*Hij is buiten zich zelf* he is beside himself.

*Die arme menschen zijn zich zelf tot last* those poor men are a burden to themselves.

<sup>1</sup> *Medebrengen (meebrengen)* = to bring; *Wat hebt gij ons meegebracht van de kermis?* What have you brought us from the fair? *Breng nu Deutsche spraakkunst mee* bring your German Grammar.

§ 408. As a rule the word **self** is not added to the Dutch reflective pronouns with reflective verbs.

*Ik heb mij bezeerd* I have hurt myself.

*Zij leggen zich toe op het Duitsch* they apply themselves to German.

## II. Use of the Possessive Pronouns.

§ 409. The Possessive Pronoun is often used in English where in Dutch the definite article is used, or may be used, see § 352.

*Hij stak de beurs in den zak* he put the purse in his pocket.

*De oude vrouw schudde het hoofd* the old woman shook her head.

*Ik heb mij den* (or *mijn*) *voet bezeerd* I have hurt my foot.

§ 410. When the Possessive Pronoun is used as a predicate it is always preceded by the article.

*Deze pen is de mijne* (or *van mij*) this pen is mine.

*Dat boek is het uwe* (or *van u*) that book is yours.

§ 411. If **mine**, **ours**, **yours** &c. are preceded by **of**, a Pers. Pronoun must be used in Dutch.

*Een vriend van mij, ons, u* a friend of mine, ours, yours.

*Een huis van hen* a house of theirs.

§ 412. The Dutch phrase *uw en mijn tuin* may indicate one garden but also two gardens, it answers as well to **your and my garden** as to **your garden and mine**.

§ 413. In some expressions the Poss. Pronoun is used without reference to any noun or pronoun.

*De mijnen, zijnen* &c. my, his family.

*Al het mijne* my whole property.

*Kom ten mijnen* come to my house.

*Wij waren ten uwen* we were at your house.

## Exercises.

65.

I cannot read this letter, just try if you can. Do you allow me to read it? Yes, you may; it is a letter from our friend William. It is not I who have told you such nasty things. Do you believe all he has told us? No, Sir, I do not. I agree with you, he ought to have visited us long before, but you know very well that he is very busy. Do

you know that tall man? Yes, Sir, he is one of our first actors. Why does he not play any more at our theatre? I cannot tell you, there seems to be no reason for it. It was the frequent rains that spoiled every thing last summer. Where is your pen? Here it is. Is it a good one? No, it is a very bad one. Is it yours? No, it is not mine, my pens are much better. We were at your house, when the fire broke out at the market. They roared with laughter, when they heard all these nonsensical tales about their family. You have promised us already twice to visit us at our villa, I hope you will do so now. The old man shook his head when he heard these dangerous theories. A house and garden of theirs was sold last week. How many Dutch grammars have you now? I have only one, I should think one will do. I quite agree with you, especially if it is a good one. A friend of mine will show you the book we have used with much success.

## 66.

The way was such that it was scarcely possible to be distinguished in [the] twilight. Even if I am very busy, I can always find some time for taking a walk. Take your operaglass with you, for you are rather far from the stage there. He seldom ventured to go out unattended. He still lived to see the greater part of his native country fall into the hands of the enemy. I have brought you something from Amsterdam, which will doubtlessly be very welcome to you. It was rumoured that the accident was to be ascribed to malice prepense. He did not like to judge a man from his outward appearance only. He insisted upon the affair being sifted thoroughly. He had made, as they said, a great blunder. If he could have seen at that time his future self, I am sure he would have shrunk back with horror from that repulsive image. Your interest as well as mine would be seriously injured by a forced sale of the stock on hand. Where there is nothing, the emperor loses his right. It was determined that every one of the members should engage himself to hand over a sum of fifty pounds to the treasurer within the term of three months. There are many things which it would be foolish to try to understand. This work, as may be imagined, took them several months.

**Gesprek.**

Wat dunkt u, zal het concert Ik denk het wel, het weer is  
van avond doorgaan? immers uitstekend.

Zijt gij van plan er heen te gaan?

Als gij gaat, mag ik u dan vergezellen? Ik ga niet graag alleen.

Wij zullen wel bijtijds moeten gaan, want het zal verbazend vol zijn.

Wel neen, de lucht is weer heel helder, het zal heden niet meer regenen.

Nu tot van avond dan. Ik zal vroeg genoeg bij u zijn.

Volstrekt niet, al zou het mij ook erg spijten.

Ik zou wel gaarne willen, maar weet nog niet of mijne bezigheden het veroorloven.

Het zal mij zeer aangenaam zijn; wilt gij mij komen afhalen?

Dat denk ik ook. Zouden wij ook een overjas of paraplu mee moeten nemen?

Nu ik mag het lijdën: het zou niet prettig zijn door een regenbui overvallen te worden.

Mocht ik soms verhinderd zijn, dan moet gij mij zulks niet ten kwade duiden.

Tot ziens! Naar ik hoop tot van avond!

## Thirtieth Lesson. Dertigste Les.

### Peter de Groote op de werf der Oost-Indische Compagnie. (Vervolg.)

Peter vond de woning op de werf zeer naar genoegen en betrok haar met een klein gevolg, waaronder zekere Prins Bagration was, en vermoedelijk ook Graaf Peter Apraxin, later Opper-Admiraal van Rusland. De eerste maakte zich bijzonder bemind door zich in alle deelen naar de begeerte van den Czaar te schikken. Hij was zeer nauwlettend op alles, wat hij zag of hoorde, zoodat hij al de kunsttermen van scheepsbouw en zeevaart weldra van buiten kende. Ook aan boord van den boeier was hij eerlang een kundig en handig schipper.

In het eerst werd de tafel van den Czaar door den kastelein van het Heeren-logement bediend, dan, Peter verdroot dit spoedig, en hij hield zijn eigen huishouding. Gewoon vroeg op te staan, had hij voor het middagmaal geen vasten tijd, maar at, wanneer hij honger had; hij stookte dan zelf zijn vuurtje en kookte zelf den pot. In alles leefde hij aldaar als scheepstimmerman en verkoos *Pieter Timmerman van Zaandam* genoeind te worden. In het jaar 1754 leefde er nog een geloofwaardig commandeur, die verhaalde, dat hij den Czaar meermalen, als werkman gekleed, aan den arbeid gezien had. Kwam er iemand om hem te spreken, dan ging hij wel, met de bijl tusschen de beenen, op de kromhouten zitten.

### Pronouns. (End.)

#### III. The Demonstrative Pronouns.

§ 414. When *dit*, *dat* are used as predicatives they may refer to a plural too.

*Dat zijn mooie boeken* those are nice books.

*Wat mooie boeken waren dat* what nice books those were.

*Dit zijn mijne broeders* these are my brothers.

§ 415. *Deze*, *die*, *dat* may be used instead of a personal pronoun, when a noun has been mentioned before.

*Hij riep zijn vriend, maar deze hoorde hem niet* he called his friend, but he did not hear him.

*Wij schreef van den secretaris der vereeniging, maar die antwoorde niet* we wrote to the secretary of the club, but he did not answer.

§ 416. *Deze* and *die* or *gene* may refer to two things as well as to two persons already mentioned.

*Cesar en Alexander waren beiden groote generaals; gene (de eerste) veroverde Gallië, deze (de laatste) Azië*  
Caesar and Alexander were both great generals; the former conquered Gaul, the latter Asia.

§ 417. *This*, *these* cannot be rendered by *dit*. *deze*:

In the expression *by this*: I believe they are ready by this *ik geloof dat zij nu wel klaar zijn*.

Before nouns expressing a time immediately preceding or following the present moment:

I have not seen him these two months *ik heb hem in geen twee maanden gezien*.

I shall not be ready this half hour yet *ik zal nog in geen half uur klaar zijn*.

**Note.** If *this* is used for *this place* a noun must be added in Dutch or an adverb of place must be used.

I will go away from this *ik zal deze plaats verlaten*.

You shall leave this to-morrow *gij zult hier morgen vandaan moeten*.

#### IV. Relative Pronouns.

§ 418. In Dutch the Relative Pronouns are never omitted, as is sometimes the case in English.

*Het geld, dat stom is, maakt recht wat krom is* it's money makes the mare go.

*De man, dien ik gezien heb* the man I have seen.  
*Het boek, dat ik verloren heb* the book I have lost.

§ 419. As a rule **welke** is used in elevated style only; sometimes however it is also used in common style:

Instead of **die, wie**, when the preceding principal clause begins with the Demonstrative Pr. **die**.

*Die beuizen, welke gij aanvoert, waren reeds bekend*  
 such proofs as you give were known already.

In one of the two relative clauses, when one depends on the other.

*De jongen, die (welke) de boeken vergeten heeft, welke (die) hij had moeten meebrengen, is gestraft geworden*  
 the boy who has forgotten the books which he ought to have brought has been punished.

§ 420. If the Relative Pr. refers to a Pers. Pr., **die** must be used (never **welke**).

*Ik, die het gezien heb* I who have seen it.  
*Gij, die het zelf gelezen hebt* you who have read it yourself.

§ 421. **Wat** or **hetgeen** (**'tgeen**) must be used when the Relative Pronoun refers to a whole sentence.

*Hij weet niets van onze afspraak, wat (or hetgeen) mij zeer verwondert* he knows nothing of our agreement which astonishes me very much.

*De rivier was buiten hare oevers getreden, hetgeen ons noodzaakte terug te keeren* the river had overflowed its banks which forced us to return.

§ 422. Instead of the Relative Pronoun preceded by a preposition, the pronominal adverbs **waarvan**, **waardoor**, **waarmede**, **waarin** &c. are often used for persons as well as for things.

*De generaal waarvan hij spreekt* the general of whom he speaks.

*Onze buurman heeft drie jongens, waarvan de oudste mijn vriend is* our neighbour has three boys, the eldest of whom is my friend. (Note the place of *waarvan*)!

*De pen, waarmede ik schrijf is slecht* the pen I write with is a bad one.

## V. Interrogative Pronouns.

§ 423. **Wie?** answers to the English **who** and **which** (asking after persons).

*Wie komen daar* who comes there?

*Wie van u riep mij* which of you called me?

**Which?** asking after things is rendered by *welk(e)*?

*Welk huis is verkocht* which house has been sold?

§ 424. The Genetive of *wie* = *wiens* is often expressed by *van wien*.

*Wiens tuin is dit?*

*Van wien is deze tuin?*

*Van onzen buurman* our neighbour's.

} Whose garden is this?

§ 425. **Wat?** answers to **what?** but if the latter is used adjectively with the names of persons or things *welk* or *wat voor een?* must be used.

*Welke moeder was ooit zoo gelukkig* what mother was ever so happy?

*Welk (wat voor een) boek hebt gij gekocht* what book have you bought?

*Wie riep mij? Een knecht. Welke?* Who called me?

A man-servant. Which?

**Note.** **What** is often used in exclamations, where in Dutch *wat voor een* or *wat een* (which are separable) must be used: What a lazy fellow he is! *Wat voor een luië bengel is hij* or *wat is hij toch een luië bengel!* What a hot day is this *wat een heete dag is dit!*

§ 426. Instead of *wat* preceded by a preposition the pronominal adverbs *waarran?* &c. (see § 422) are often used.

*Van wat* or *waarran* spreekt gij what are you talking of?

*Met wat* or *waarmede* schrijft gij what are you writing with?

*Over wat* or *waarover* lacht gij what are you laughing at?

§ 427. In some phrases **what** answers to the Dutch *hoe*.

*Hoe is uw naam* what is your name?

*Hoe noemt gij dit in het Engelsch* what do you call this in E.?

*Hoe laat is het* what o'clock is it?

Of.: *De hoeveelste is het* what day of the month is it?

## VI. Indefinite Pronouns.

§ 428. *Al, alle, allen, alles* = all.

*Alle menschen zijn sterfelijk* all men are mortal.



*Alle soldaten van dit regiment zijn ongekomen* all the soldiers of this regiment have perished.

*Het is niet alles goud wat blinkt* all is not gold that glitters.

*Al wat ik weet, heb ik u geschreven* I have written you all I know.

**Note.** All (the) is often used where it must be rendered in Dutch by the adjective *geheel* or *gansch*.

*Den geheelen dag* all day      *Het geheele jaar* all the year

*De gansche natuur* all nature      *Gansch Engeland* all England

*Geheel Afrika* all Africa      *Geheel het land* all the country.

*Zijne boeken lagen door het geheele (heele) vertrek heen*  
his books were lying all about the room.

**Note also.**

*Dit alles is waar* all this is true.

*Alle dagen, weken, jaren* every day, week, year.

*Ik zal u alles schrijven* I shall write you everything.

*De soldaat moet in alles gehoorzamen* the soldier must obey in everything.

§ 429. *Beide* = both; but *een van beide* = one of the two.

*Beide kinderen waren hier* both children were here.

*Beiden zeiden dat zij het gezien hadden* both said that they had seen it.

*Wij beiden* both of us. *Voor ons beiden* for both of us.

§ 430. *Geen van beide* or *geen* = neither, not either, not any.

*Geen van mijne beide kinderen* neither of my children.

*Aan geen van beide kanten* on neither side.

*Ik ken geen van beiden* I do not know either of them.

*Hebt gij appels? Neen, wij hebben er geen gehad.* Have you any apples? No, we have not had any.

**Note.** None is often to be rendered by *niet*, *niets*, *niemand*.

*Uw stem is niet van de sterkste* your voice is none of the strongest.

*En weinig geld is beter dan niets* some money is better than none.

*Niemand van ons heeft het gezien* none of us has seen it.

§ 431. *Ander*, *andere(n)* = other, others; *een ander* = another.

*Laat anderen slim zijn* let others be wise.

*Geef mij een ander boek* give me another book.

**Note.** If **another** signifies a second, a third, a fourth &c. thing of the same kind, it is rendered in Dutch by **nog een** :

*Neem nog een stukje ham* take another piece of ham.

*Wilt gij nog een kopje koffie* will you have another cup of coffee?

**Note also:** the other day = *onlangs*,  
not another word = *geen woord meer*,  
some day or other = *de een of andere dag*.

§ 432. *Nog (eenige)* = any, some, more; *geen meer* = no more; else = *anders*. Note the place of **meer** and **anders**!

*Hebt gij nog huizen* have you any houses?

*De koning heeft nog vijf kinderen* the king has five more children.

*Neem nog eenige stukjes* take some more pieces!

*Wij hadden geen geld meer* we had no money more.

*De jongen heeft geen ouders meer* the boy has lost his parents.

*Wat zal ik anders geven* what else shall I give?

*Wat kon ik anders doen* what else could I do?

§ 433. **Men** like the French **on** is used much more than the English **one**: it stands often where in English **we**, **you**, **they**, **people**, **a man** or a **passive** construction is used.

*Men ziet de gebreken van een ander eerder dan zijn eigen*  
we see other men's faults sooner than our own.

*Als men de stad nadert, ziet men dadelijk de torens* as  
you approach the town, you see the towers immediately.

*Men zegt dat alle regimenten verslagen zijn* they say all  
the regiments have been beaten.

*Men kan rijk zijn zonder gelukkig te zijn* a man may  
be rich without being happy.

*Men stond verbaasd over dit nieuwe tooneel* people were  
amazed at this new scene.

*Men sloeg het oude paard* the old horse was beaten.

*Men lachte hem uit* he was laughed at.

*Men zegt dat hij geleerd is* he is said to be a learned  
man.

*Men verwachtte dat alles gereed was* everything was  
expected to be ready.

### Exercises.

67.

Who are these gentlemen? Those are my cousins, shall I introduce you? I believe they are ready by this. He was

a man whom we all knew to be worthy of such a reward. He was neither overexalted by prosperity, nor too much depressed by misfortune; which marks a great mind. It is not all gold that glitters. Nothing is grander than a large range of lofty mountains, the summits of which, covered with eternal snows, rise up to the clouds. A large piece of coral-rock, which was brought up with a fish-hook from the bottom of the sea, was remarkable for the great variety and abundance of the animals that lived on it. These are my old friends, on whom I can rely. I have heard of several cases, in which payment of this tax was flatly refused. There are in your immediate neighbourhood men enough who would willingly undertake that task; why should you therefore look anywhere else? Nothing more natural than that we entertain a sentiment of respect and love towards those great poets, such as Shakespeare and Goethe whose works will remain instructive and delightful to mankind until the most distant periods, and with whose spirit we can daily hold communion. What was the party of King Charles the First of England called, and what were the supporters of Parliament called? Such noble, disinterested minds are very rare, that is to say in real life; behind the foot-lights they form a very necessary element on the boards which represent the world. He was supposed to be the cause of all her misery. Neurenberg which Gustave Adolph called the apple of his eye, and which he defended with so much exertion against Wallenstein's threatening sword, resolved to erect a statue to his benefactor.

## 68.

Have you lately met our friend N.? No, Sir, I have not seen him these three months. I am told<sup>1</sup>, he will leave this place. I do not believe so, I rather think he has been ill. I am going to ask him whether he will go with us to Belgium to visit the Ardennes. Or do you prefer a trip to the Semois-valley? Both parts of Belgium are beautiful. I do not know either of them. Then let us go to our friend and ask him which he prefers. What o'clock is it? It is just half past two. Please go by yourself, I am very busy just now. I hope you will be kind enough to tell me as soon as possible all you have agreed with our friend. Have you any guides to Belgium? No, I have none. I wrote to the bookseller in A., but he has not yet answered. They say<sup>2</sup> that your bookseller is a very lazy man, write to Mr. B.,

<sup>1</sup> Translate: *mij wordt . . .*

<sup>2</sup> " " *men zegt . . .*

the other day he sent me the books I ordered within three days. Will you have another glass of beer before you leave me? No, thank you, I must go home, perhaps they are waiting for me in the office. Have another cigar then. Thank you. What a hot day this is! Yes, it is almost a summer day. I hope we shall have such fine weather next month. I hope so too, but they<sup>1</sup> say we are going to have a wet summer. Goodbye, [my] dear friend, I must go now.

### Recapitulatory Exercises.

69.

#### North, East, West, South.

What o'clock is it, Henry? It is twelve o'clock. It is noon. Come to the garden then. Now, where is the sun? Turn your face towards it. Look at the sun. That is South. Always when it is twelve o'clock, and you look at the sun, your face is towards the South.

Now turn to your left. Look forward. That is East. In the morning, when it is going to be light, you must look just there, and you will see the sun rise. Always in the morning look there for the sun; for it rises in the East.

70.

#### The kettle and its friends.

I am a kettle. You have often seen me at work boiling water for your breakfast, dinner or tea. Do you know what I am made of? I will tell you. I am made of iron; because iron will bear a great heat.

Here is my friend the coffee-pot. Do you know what he is made of? No. Then I will tell you. My friend the coffee-pot is made of tin. He sometimes sits beside me on the hob. I often pour water into him hot enough to scald him, if he could only feel it.

Now you shall see a family of my friends. Without them I should not be so useful as I am.

Here they are. In the middle you see the tea-pot, and all around her the cups and saucers, just like a hen and her chickens. The coffee-pot and the tea-pot are my two greatest friends.

I have not so much to do with the cups and saucers as my two friends have. But I often see them, and I know of what they are made.

Cups and saucers are made of clay, and are baked in an oven to make them hard.

<sup>1</sup> Translate: *men zegt . . .*

I must bid you good afternoon, as I am wanted to boil the water for the tea.

## 71.

**Light-houses.**

What is a light-house? — A light-house is a house in the shape of a tall pillar or tower. At the top there is a little room, with windows all around, in which a light is kept burning all night.

Who keeps the light burning? — A man lives in the light-house, whose work it is to keep the lamps clean and bright. His wife and family often live there with him, and help him in his work.

Sometimes the sea is so stormy that these people cannot go on land for weeks together. Neither can any one on land go to them.

## Thirty-first Lesson. Een en dertigste Les.

### Peter de Groote op de werf der Oost-Indische Compagnie. (Slot.)

Doch dit moest niet te lang duren, of hij maakte hieraan een einde, om het hem toevertrouwde hout naar het mal of model te bewerken. Een zeer aanzienlijk man wenschte hem eens onbemerkt te zien arbeiden en vervoege zich daartoe bij den baas. Deze beloofde, den Czaar door het noemen van zijn naam te zullen aanwijzen, en het duurde niet lang, of eenig werkvolk, een zwaar stuk hout dragende, ging hen voorbij. De baas vroeg: „Pieter Timmerman van Zaandam, waarom helpt gij die mannen niet?” Hij gehoorzaamde aanstonds, zette er zijn schouder mede onder en bracht het stuk hout, waar het wezen moest.

Men bracht hem hier zoowel als te *Zaandam* in een goede luim, wanneer men hem eenvoudig *Pieterbaas* noemde. Hij keerde hun den rug toe, die hem *Uwe Majesteit* of *Mijnheer* noemden, wanneer hij als scheepstimmerman gekleed was.

In de eerste dagen, dat hij op deze werf was, ontving hij een brief van den Patriarch van Rusland; hij antwoordde dezen onder anderen, dat hij te Amsterdam het woord Gods, tot Adam gesproken, volgde: „In het zweet uws aangezichts zult gij uw brood eten.”

(Jac. Scheltema.)

## Verbs.

## I. Concord.

§ 434. In Dutch a verb always agrees with its subject in number and person, and a **collective noun** is followed by a singular verb.

*De vergadering was eenstemmig* the committee were of one mind.

*De vijand vluchtte naar alle kanten* the enemy were flying in every direction.

*Het vee graast in de duinen* the cattle are grazing on the downs.

## II. Transitive and Intransitive Verbs.

§ 435. The verbs **to appoint, to elect, to make, to name, to proclaim** which have an object in English require a connecting word (*als* or *tot*) in Dutch.

People appointed, elected, made, proclaimed him king  
*het volk benoemde, koos, maakte, riep hem uit tot koning.*

The general named him captain *de generaal benoemde hem tot kapitein.*

**Note.** When the word added qualifies the subject instead of the object, *als* is used in Dutch.

*Hij keerde terug als een oud man* he returned an old man.

§ 436. Some verbs are transitive in English whereas they are intransitive in Dutch:

to become <i>passen, betamen</i>	to prefer <i>de voorkeur geven (aan)</i>
to displease <i>mishagen</i>	to please <i>behagen, bevallen</i>
to oppose <i>zich verzetten tegen</i>	to resemble <i>gelijken (op)</i>
to indulge <i>zich overgeven (aan)</i>	to resist <i>weerstand bieden</i>
to obey <i>gehoorzamen (aan)</i>	( <i>aan</i> ).

*Ik geef aan bier de voorkeur boven wijn* I prefer beer to wine.

*Hij verzette zich tegen den wensch van zijn vader* he opposed his father's wish.

*Gehoorzamen aan een wachtwoord* to obey a watchword.

§ 437. When English intransitive verbs are used in a causative sense they must be rendered in Dutch by another verb or by a verb with a preposition.

*Een vlieger oplaten (laten opgaan)* to fly a kite.

*Hij liet het hoofd hangen* he hung his head.

*Hij zwom met zijn paard over de rivier* he swam his horse across the river.

## III. Impersonal Verbs.

§ 438. Some verbs are impersonal in Dutch, but personal in English.

*Het berouwt mij* I repent.

*Het bevalt mij* I like it, I am pleased with it.

*Het gelukt mij* I succeed.

*Het heugt mij* I remember.

*Het ontbreekt mij (aan)* I am wanting in.

*Het spijt mij* I am sorry.

*Het verheugt mij* I rejoice.

*Het verwondert mij* I wonder, I am surprised.

*Het walgt mij* I am disgusted.

Cf.: *Het dunkt, dacht mij* or *methinks, methought* or  
*mij dunkt, dacht* \ *it seems, seemed to me.*

§ 439. Some impersonal expressions are rendered by personal verbs.

*Hoe gaat het* how are you?

*Het gaat hem goed* he is doing well.

*Zoo gaat het in de wereld* so the world runs.

*Het is slecht reizen met een leege beurs* it is bad travelling with an empty purse.

*Het is niet waarschijnlijk dat gij zult slagen* you are not likely to succeed.

*Het staat u vrij* you are free.

*Het is tot uw dienst* you are welcome to it.

*Het gebeurde, dat ik thuis was* \ I happened to be at  
*Ik was toevallig thuis* \ home.

## IV. Reflexive Verbs.

§ 440. The following reflexive verbs are rendered in English by a passive verb.

*Zich bedroeven over* to be grieved at.

*Zich ergeren over* to be vexed at.

*Zich schamen over* to be ashamed of.

*Zich verbazen over* to be astonished at.

*Zich vergissen* to be mistaken.

**Note.** *Druk in de weer zijn* to bestir, to busy oneself.

§ 441. The following verbs are reflexive in Dutch and intransitive or (very few) transitive in English.

*Zich aanmatigen* to assume

*Zich baden* to bathe

*Zich aantrekken* to take to heart

*Zich begeven naar* to repair to

*Zich afgeven* to mix, to associate

• *Zich beklagen over* to complain of  
*Zich bekommeren om* to care for

*Zich bemoeien met* { to mind, to  
 meddle with  
*Zich beroemen op* to boast of  
*Zich beroepen op* to appeal to  
*Zich bewegen* to move  
*Zich buigen* to bend  
*Zich erbarmen* to have mercy  
*Zich gedragen* to behave  
*Zich moeite geven* to take pains  
*Zich gevoelen* to feel  
*Zich haasten* to hasten  
*Zich herinneren* to remember  
*Zich herstellen* to recover  
*Zich inschepen* to embark  
*Zich kleeden* to dress  
*Zich koesteren* to bask  
*Zich gereed maken* to get ready  
*Zich van kant maken* to commit  
 suicide  
*Zich meester maken van* to  
 seize upon  
*Zich neerleggen* to lie down  
*Zich neerzetten* { to sit down  
 } or to settle  
*Zich oefenen in* to practise  
*Zich omkeeren* to turn round  
*Zich onderhouden* to converse  
*Zich onderstaan* to presume  
*Zich onderwerpen* to submit  
*Zich onthouden van* to abstain  
 from  
*Zich openen* to open  
*Zich oplossen* to dissolve  
*Zich overgeven* to surrender  
*Zich richten naar* to conform  
 to  
*Zich voor den geest roepen* to  
 call to mind  
*Zich scheren* to shave.  
*Zich schikken naar* to comply  
 with  
*Zich sluiten* to shut  
*Zich storen aan* to care about  
*Zich terugtrekken* to retire  
*Zich toebereiden* to prepare  
*Zich toerusten* { to prepare  
 } or to equip

*Zich uitstrekken* to extend  
*Zich verbazen over* to wonder  
 at  
*Zich verbeelden* to fancy  
*Zich verbreiden* to spread  
*Zich vereenigen* to unite  
*Zich vergewissen* to ascertain  
*Zich vergissen* to be mistaken  
*Zich verheugen* to rejoice  
*Zich verkneuteren in* to revel  
 in  
*Zich verlaten op* to rely on  
*Zich verlustigen* to delight  
*Zich vermengen* to mix  
*Zich verrekenen* to miscal-  
 culate  
*Zich verschaffen* to procure  
*Zich verschrijven* to make a  
 slip in writing  
*Zich verspreiden* { to disperse  
 } or to spread  
*Zich verspreken* to make a slip  
 in speaking  
*Zich verstouten* to make bold  
*Zich verstrooien* to disperse  
*Zich verwaaldigen* to con-  
 descend  
*Zich verwijderen* to withdraw  
*Zich verwonderen over* to  
 wonder at  
*Zich verzamelen* to assemble  
*Zich verzetten tegen* to oppose  
*Zich vestigen* to settle  
*Zich voeden met* to feed on,  
 to live on  
*Zich voegen bij* to join  
*Zich roornemen* to make up  
 one's mind  
*Zich wachten voor* to beware  
 of  
*Zich wagen* to venture  
*Zich wasschen* to wash  
*Zich laten welgevalen* to put  
 up with  
*Zich wenden tot* { to turn to,  
 } to apply to  
*Zich wikkelen* to engage.



**Note 1.** *Elkander ontmoeten* = to meet. *Wanneer hebt gij elkander (elkaar) het laatst ontmoet* when did you meet last?

**Note 2.** Very few verbs are reflexive in English and intransitive (transitive) in Dutch: to avail oneself *te baat nemen*, to betake oneself *zijne toelucht nemen tot*, to pride oneself on *roem dragen op*.

### Use of the Passive Voice.

§ 442. An active construction is made passive in the same manner as in English. However the indirect object (Dative) does not change into the subject of the passive sentence.

A. *Ik onderwees hem de Nederlandsche taal* I taught him the Dutch language.

P. *De Nederl. taal werd hem (door mij) onderwezen* the D. language was taught him or he was taught &c.

A. *Ik vertelde hem de geschiedenis* I told him the story.

P. *De geschiedenis werd hem (door mij) verteld* the story was told him or he was told the story.

Emphatically we may say: *hem* (not to another) *werd de geschiedenis door mij verteld*. *Mij wordt verteld* I am told.

**Note also:** A. *Zij zorgden voor hem* they took care of him. P. *Voor hem werd gezorgd* he was taken care of.

§ 443. *Er wordt (werd)* may be translated in different ways. Cf. also the translation of *men*, § 433.

When in Dutch the sentence has no subject *er* is translated by **there**.

*Er wordt aan de deur geklopt* there's a knock at the door.

*Er wordt gescheld* there's the bell.

*Er werd veel gepraat* there was a great deal of talking.

When the subject of the sentence is a whole clause, *er* is translated by **it**.

*Er werd besloten om het huis te verkoopen* it was resolved to sell the house.

*Er wordt vermoed dat hij omgekomen is* it is supposed that he has perished.

*Er* is not translated into English, when the subject of the sentence is a noun.

*Er werd eene bijeenkomst gehouden* a meeting was held.

*Er werd een huis verkocht* a house was sold.

§ 444. After the verb *zijn* an **active infinitive** is often used, where a **passive infinitive** is used in Engl.

*Zulke menschen zijn te beklagen* such men are to be pitied.

*Mijn boeken waren nergens te vinden* my books were nowhere to be found.

*Het is te vreezen, te verwachten* it is to be feared, expected.

**Note.** *Zijn* is sometimes replaced by *blijven*, *staan*, *vallen*.

*Dit staat te bewijzen* this is to be proved.

*Het valt niet te ontkennen* it is not to be denied.

*Het blijft te bewijzen* it remains to be proved.

§ 445. The progressive form of the passive voice as used in English does not exist in Dutch.

*Hij wordt geschoren* he is being shaved.

*Dit boek wordt geprezen* this book is being praised.

*Het huis wordt gebouwd* the house is building.

*Het veld wordt beploegd* the field is ploughing.

*De koeien worden gemolken* the cows are milking.

§ 446. If *worden* is followed by a substantive or adjective it does not express the passive voice; in that case it is a copula, answering to the French *devenir* and to the Engl. verbs *to become*, *to get*, *to grow*, *to turn*, &c.

*Hij werd timmerman* he became a carpenter.

*Hij werd in eens rijk* he became rich at once.

*Het wordt duister* it is getting dark.

*Groot, oud worden* to grow tall, old.

*Bleek worden* to turn pale.

*De melk werd zuur* the milk turned sour.

*Ziek worden* to fall ill.

*Onwel worden* to be taken unwell.

*Kranksinnig worden* to go mad.

### Exercises.

72.

The chief food of the horse are oats and hay. The only clothing of the ancient Britons were the skins of beasts. I cannot blame you for going to sleep, who am myself tired to death. Neither the emperor nor his generals were convinced. One of the sailors had disappeared; he had mixed among the crowd, without anybody perceiving it. The health of James the Second of England had been declining for some years: and at last, on Good Friday 1701,

he had a shock from which he never recovered. While attending the ceremonial service of the day in his chapel, he sank down, and remained senseless for some time. The illness of the king seemed to be an attack of paralytic apoplexy. Carnot was elected President of the French Republic some years ago. Yesterday my uncle came back from the United States, he returned quite an old man. I do not remember in what year he left us, do you? I am sorry but I do not. Is he doing well? I thank you, he enjoyed good health all the time we did not see him. Will you kindly ask him when I can visit him? You may rely on my writing to him as soon as possible. It will depend on circumstances, where and when we assemble. All at once the natives rose against the colonists; a war broke out and spread to the neighbouring provinces. Whilst the troops were embarking for Egypt, the commander-in-chief prepared to reach the scene of war by way of France and Italy. As we must prepare for a hard winter, I have resolved on having a thick overcoat made. Before I ventured into the enemy's country, I should first practise for some time the handling of fire arms. He has applied himself with great zeal to a special branch of architecture, which he likes very much, viz. the building of castles in the air. If this is the case he is not likely to succeed.

## 73.

The town-hall of B. will be a very fine building, it was still building, when I passed it three weeks ago. By its insular seclusion England is secured from all attacks of a foreign enemy. The ship was freighted with corn, after the damage suffered had been repaired. While it was being loaded, the captain got leave to visit his relations. After having thrown herself with a body of soldiers into the city of Compiegne, which was then besieged by the Duke of Burgundy, Joan of Arc was taken prisoner in 1430 in a sally she headed against the enemy, while the commander of the city shut the gates behind her. The Duke of Bedford had scarcely been informed of her being taken prisoner, when he bought her from Count Vendome, who had made her a prisoner, and commanded her to be committed to close confinement. My friend left this country six years ago and has been living since then in Pennsylvania. John Huss was burnt alive in 1415 at Constance for heresy. This strange story was told him, but he took no great interest in it. There was a great deal of talking when we entered the concert-room. A meeting was held there, before the concert began. Have you read anything about the

Austrian duke who left his country last year? No, Sir, they know nothing about him, it is suspected that he has perished with all who were with him.

## 74.

## Dialogue.

Well, dear boy, I am glad to meet you in Paris. How long have you been here? And you have been enjoying yourself, I think? — Very much, indeed. Paris, the capital of France, the centre of the world, is magnificent. I have been here these six months, and I am bound to say, not a single day too many. Time does not weigh heavily on a pleasure-loving man's hands. All the time has been an uninterrupted series of amusements and instructive scenes. Are you in Paris for the first time? — Yes, and I trust it will not be my last visit. This is only a flying visit. Are you quite alone? — At first I was, but by this time I have made some acquaintances, and not long ago I had the good luck to meet a former college-friend of mine who is staying now at the same hotel as myself. He is of studious habits and is fond of attending scientific meetings and waiting on learned men. — My only aim is to enjoy myself as much as can be done in a fortnight's absence from home.

## Gesprek.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| Zijn wij hier al in Amsterdam?  | Neen, Mijnheer, dit is Haarlem.  |
| Kunt u mij een goed hotel aanbevelen voor Amsterdam?                                    | Zeker, als u maar met mij mee wilt gaan; ik ben te Amsterdam zeer goed bekend.       |
| Is het hotel X. goed?   | Ja wel, maar vrij duur.  |
| En het hotel Q. dan?  | Dat ligt te ver van het midden der stad.   |
| Welk hotel bezoekt u dan?   | Een klein hotel in de Kalverstraat, zeer aangenaam gelegen en gemakkelijk te vinden. |
| Het laatste is veel waard voor een vreemdeling. Dit is de eerste maal dat ik A. bezoek. | Dan zult u zeker heel wat te zien hebben. A. is een eigenaardige stad.               |
| De trein houdt stil; na zijn wij er zeker.  | Ja, Mijnheer, dit is Amsterdam. Wilt u mij maar volgen!                              |

Zeer gaarne, maar ik moet eerst voor mijn koffer zorgen.

Dat gaat zeer gemakkelijk, heb ik nu voor niets te zorgen?

Wat een prachtig station, is het nog nieuw?

Wilt u maar voorgaan, ik weet niet waar de uitgang is.

Is de weg in A. gemakkelijk te vinden?

Hoe heet deze straat, waar wij nu door gaan? Moeten wij nog ver loopen naar ons hotel?

Hier staat een knecht van het hotel, geef uw bewijs maar.

Volstrekt niet, als wij in het hotel komen is uw koffer er al.

Ja, Mijnheer, het is nog slechts een paar jaren in gebruik.

Hier, langs deze trap naar beneden en dan links om.

O ja, als men maar eens een beetje georiënteerd is, gaat het vrij wel.

Dit is het Damrak, zoo dadelijk komen wij op het Plein en van daar zijn wij in weinige minuten bij ons hotel.

## Thirty-second Lesson. Twee en dertigste Les.

### Van Amsterdam naar Batavia.

Beste Vriend!

Eerst gisteren aan wal gestapt, haast ik mij toch mijn gegeven woord gestand te doen en u een verslag te zenden van mijn reis. Daar ik het gaarne nog per eerstvertrekkende mailboot verzenden wil, zal ik niet zeer uitvoerig kunnen wezen.

Zaterdag, den 6<sup>ten</sup> October ging ik 's morgens tegen tien uren te Amsterdam aan boord van de mailboot *Hollandia*. Het was een fraai ijzeren schroefstoomschip, twee duizend achthonderd ton metende, met eene machine van vijfhonderd paardenkracht nominaal. Als een der snelvarendste booten der Maatschappij, had deze reeds tal van gelukkige reizen gedaan. De kapitein, een bevaren zeeman, was een allergezelligst mensch.

Na eenige minuten van heen-en weergeloop, verward gedruis en beweging, werden de kabels, die ons aan den oever hielden, losgegooid en onder het spelen van de muziek, wendde het stoomschip den steven westwaarts om het IJ op te varen.

Links lag daar de stad, met hare kaden vol koopmansgoederen, haar talrijke steigers, haar massa's huizen. Een menigte kleine stoombooten en schepen passeerden ons en het water bood een allerlevendigst schouwspel aan. Maar

spoedig gingen we het kanaal in en de stad verdween uit ons oog. De reizigers waren vrij talrijk aan boord. De meesten bleven op het dek om het schilderachtig gezicht op de stad te genieten.

### I. Use of the Auxiliaries: *Hebben* and *zijn*.

§ 447. Most intransitive verbs (governing a genitive, dative or a case with a preposition) are conjugated with *zijn*, see § 311.

*Het kind is weggelopen* the child has run away.

*Zij zijn teruggekomen* they have come back.

§ 448. The following intransitive verbs usually take *zijn*, in English to have:

<i>Aankomen</i> to arrive	<i>Overeenkomen</i> to agree
<i>Afwijken</i> to deviate	<i>Overlijden</i> to expire
<i>Afstijgen</i> to descend	<i>Reizen</i> to travel
<i>Blijven</i> to remain	<i>Rennen</i> <sup>2</sup> to run
<i>Bersten</i> to burst	<i>Rijden</i> <sup>4</sup> to ride, to drive
<i>Doordringen</i> to penetrate	<i>Rijzen</i> to rise
<i>Doorgaan</i> to continue	<i>Rosten</i> to rust
<i>Gaan</i> to go	<i>Rollen</i> <sup>4</sup> to roll [start
<i>Gelukken</i> to succeed	<i>Schrikken</i> to be frightened, to
<i>Genezen</i> <sup>1</sup> to recover	<i>Sluipen</i> ( <i>in</i> ) to sneak, to steal
<i>Geraken</i> to get (into)	(into)
<i>Geschieden</i> to happen	<i>Smelten</i> <sup>5</sup> to melt
<i>Inslapen</i> to fall asleep	<i>Springen</i> <sup>4</sup> to leap or to burst
<i>Klimmen</i> to climb	<i>Sterven</i> to die
<i>Komen</i> to come	<i>Stijgen</i> <sup>4</sup> to mount
<i>Landen</i> to land	<i>Storten</i> to fall
<i>Loopen</i> <sup>2</sup> to run, to walk	<i>Teruggaan</i> to go back
<i>Marcheerden</i> <sup>2</sup> to march	<i>Terugkeeren</i> to return
<i>Omkomen</i> to perish	<i>Terugkomen</i> to come back
<i>Ondergaan</i> to perish or to set	<i>Trekken</i> <sup>4</sup> to wander
<i>Ontgaan</i> <sup>3</sup> to forget	<i>Uitglipen</i> to slip
<i>Ontkomen</i> to escape	<i>Vallen</i> to fall
<i>Ontloopen</i> to run away from	<i>Varen</i> to navigate
<i>Ontwaken</i> to awake	<i>Verbasteren</i> to degenerate
<i>Opgaan</i> to rise	<i>Verbleeken</i> to turn pale
<i>Opstaan</i> to get up	<i>Verdrinken</i> <sup>5</sup> to be drowned

<sup>1</sup> *Genezen* with *hebben* means to cure.

<sup>2</sup> *Ik heb lang geloopt*, *gemarcheerd*, *gerend* denotes an action.

<sup>3</sup> *Het is mij ontgaan* = I forget, in D. also: *ik ben vergeten*; cf.: *ik heb vergeten* = I have forgotten.

<sup>4</sup> If this verb is used with *hebben*, it denotes action.

<sup>5</sup> Transitive with *hebben*.

<i>Verdorren</i> to wither	<i>Fluchten</i> to flee
<i>Verdwijnen</i> to disappear	<i>Volgen</i> <sup>2</sup> to follow
<i>Verloopen</i> to expire (of time)	<i>Wassen</i> to grow
<i>Verrotten</i> to rot	<i>Wegloopen</i> to run away
<i>Verschiijnen</i> to appear	<i>Wijken</i> to yield
<i>Vertrekken</i> to depart	<i>Worden</i> to become
<i>Verwelken</i> to wither	<i>Zijn</i> to be
<i>Vlieden</i> to flee	<i>Zinken</i> to sink
<i>Vliegen</i> <sup>1</sup> to fly	<i>Zwemmen</i> <sup>1</sup> to swim.

§ 449. In some expressions **hebben** is used where in English **to be** may be found.

*Dorst hebben* to be thirsty.  
*Gebrek hebben* to be in want.  
*Gelijk hebben* to be right.  
*Huist hebben* to be in a hurry.  
*Honger hebben* to be hungry.  
*Ongeleijk hebben* to be wrong.  
*Tijd hebben* to be at leisure.

§ 450. In many expressions **to be** is used, where it must be rendered in another way in Dutch.

To be about *op het punt zijn (staan)*.  
 To be at one's wit's end *ten einde raad zijn*.  
 To be at stake *op het spel staan*.  
 To be early *vroeg komen*.  
 To be going *op het punt zijn*.  
 To be in time *bij tijds komen*.  
 To be late *laat komen*.  
 To be on good terms *op (een) goeden voet staan*.  
 To be under the necessity *in de noodzakelijkheid verkeerén*.  
 My father is to start to-day *mijn vader vertrekt heden*.

§ 451. Sometimes **to be** and **to have** in English correspond to the Dutch verb **moeten**, cf. § 457 and § 458.

In the expressions **had better** (best, rather) the verb **doen** is used in Dutch.

*Ik deed beter met onmiddellijk te vertrekken* I had better depart at once.  
*Mij dunkt dat gij beter deelt thuis te blijven* I think you had better stay at home.  
*Ik zou liever alleen gaan* I had rather go by myself.

<sup>1</sup> See note 4, pag. 303.

<sup>2</sup> As to *opvolgen*, see § 311, Note.

## II. The Defective verbs.

§ 452. They are not only used in the Present and Past tenses like in English, but also in the Infinitive and in the Compound tenses.

§ 453. The Dutch Infinitive is often used, where we find in English another verb, i. e.:

*kunnen* = to be able, to have the power of;

*niet kunnen* = to be unable, to fail to;

*willen* = to want, to be willing, to wish, to desire, to intend;

*niet willen* = to refuse, to object, not to consent to, to decline;

*gaarne willen* = to like, to choose, to have a mind;

*moeten* (= *behooren*) = should, ought to;

*moeten* (= *gedwongen zijn*) = to be obliged, forced, to have to;

*mogen* = to be allowed, permitted, to be free to. to have permission.

§ 454. The Dutch Future is usually rendered in English by the Present tense; the Dutch Perfect by the Past tense.

*Ik zal morgen niet kunnen komen* I cannot come to-morrow.

*Waarom heeft hij het niet willen doen?* Why would he not do it?

§ 455. **Kunnen** denotes:

A physical possibility, being able to do something:

*Kan hij al weer wandelen* can he walk again?

A possibility granted by the speaker:

*Kan ik naar huis gaan* may I go home?

*Dat kan wel waar zijn* that may be true.

**Note 1.** *Zou kunnen* = could, might; *zou hebben kunnen* or *had kunnen* + Infinitive = could have or might have + Past Part.

*Hij had het kunnen weten* he might have known it.

*Wij hadden het kunnen doen* we could have done it.

*Men had het kunnen verwachten*

*Men kon het verwacht hebben*

*Men zou het hebben kunnen verwachten*

| it might have  
| been expected.

**Note 2.** *Ik kan niet nalaten* = I cannot help or forbear.

*Ik kon niet nalaten te lachen* I could not forbear laughing.



§ 456. **Mogen** expresses:

The will of another person. Sometimes in a general sense = to dare, venture.

*Gij moogt heden uitgaan* you are allowed to go out to-day.

*Men mag niet alles zeggen wat men weet* people dare not say all they know.

The will of the speaker.

*Ik mag zulke boeken niet lezen* I do not like to read such books.

A possibility granted by the speaker.

*Het mag waar zijn* it may be true.

*Mocht dat waar zijn, wees dan voorzichtig* should that be true, be prudent.

A wish.

*Moge hij steeds gelukkig zijn* may he always be happy!

A condition.

*Mocht hij komen, roep mij dan even* should he come, just call me then.

**Note 1.** *Zou hebben mogen* or *had mogen* + Infinitive = might have + Past Part. or would have been allowed + Inf.

*Als ik dit geweten had, had hij niet mogen uitgaan* if I had known this, he might not have gone out.

**Note 2.** *Mag niet* sometimes answers to the English must not.

*Je mag hier niet rooken* you must not smoke here.

*Daar mag je niet binnengaan* you must not go in there.

§ 457. **Moeten** denotes:

Necessity, duty or moral obligation, certainty = cannot but.

*Wij moeten ons aan de wetten onderwerpen* we must submit to the laws.

*Hij moet zeker nu al thuis zijn* he surely must have arrived by this time.

A report or supposition.

*Hij moet naar Londen gegaan zijn* he is said to have gone to London.

**Note 1.** *Moeten* may denote a duty that is not done, it then answers to ought.

*Ik had een brief moeten schrijven* I ought to have written a letter.

**Note 2.** *Moest* denoting obligation = had or was obliged to.

*Ik moet het doen* I must do it.

*Ik moest het doen* I had to do it, I was obliged to do it.

*Je moest beter schrijven* you should write better.

§ 458. *Willen* in its proper sense, denoting a will or a determination, answers to the verb **will**.

*Willen* expressing a wish, a want answers to the verbs to like, to want, to wish.

*Wat wilt gij* what do you want (like)?

*Doe in alles zooals gij wilt* do as you like in every thing.

*Willen* may also mean **to be going, to be about**.

*Hij wilde (wou) juist vertrekken* he was just going to depart.

*Ik wilde juist antwoorden* I was about to reply.

Expressing an assertion it answers to the verbs **to pretend, to say**.

*Willem wil het op straat gezien hebben* William pretends to have seen it in the street.

*Men wil dat de winter streng zal worden* it is said we are going to have a severe winter.

**Note 1.** *Zou willen* = would. *Zou hebben willen* or *had willen* + Inf. = would have + Past Part.

*Ik had het hem willen opdragen* I would have charged him with it.

**Note 2.** The Infinitive *willen* is usually left untranslated if another Inf. follows:

*Zoudt gij dit voor mij willen overschrijven* would you kindly copy this for me.

**Note 3.** *Zou graag willen* = I should like to: *Ik zou het kindje graag willen zien* I should like to see the baby.

§ 459. *Zullen* followed by another Infinitive is not used in English.

*Hij beloofde het te zullen zenden* he promised to send it.

*Ik hoop u spoedig te zullen zien* I hope to see you soon.

**Note.** *Zal* = shall or will: *zou(dt)* = should or would.

*Ik zal zorg dragen, dat hij zijn deel zal krijgen* I will take care that he shall have his share.

*Zoudt gij berispt worden, indien gij gingt* would (should) you be blamed if you went?

*Gij zeydet, dat gij morgen in de stad zoudt zijn* you said you would be in town to-morrow.

§ 460. **Laten** is often used as an auxiliary, when joined to another verb; it requires the following Inf. without **te**.

It is used to form an Imperative Mood.

*Laat ik het eens probeeren* let me try it!

*Laat ons wat wandelen* let us take a walk!

It signifies **to let, to permit, to suffer.**

*Ik laat hem gaan* I let him go.

*Hij laat zich beledigen* he suffers himself to be insulted.

It answers to the verbs **to cause, to get, to have, to make.**

*Hij liet het huis herstellen* he caused the house to be repaired.

*Waar laat gij uw boeken inbinden* where do you have your books bound.

*Ik zal mijn vriend wel het werk voor mij laten doen* I'll get my friend to do the work for me.

*Ik zal hem het werk over laten maken* I will make him do the work again.

It signifies **to bid, to command, to desire, to order, to tell.**

*Laat mijnheer binnenkomen* bid the gentleman come in.

*Hij liet den koetsier buiten wachten* he told the coachman to wait outside.

*De rechter liet den dief aanhouden* the judge ordered the thief to be arrested.

Sometimes it signifies **to leave, to let.**

*Laat mij met rust* leave (let) me alone.

*Laat dat liggen* leave that alone.

*Laat dat (= houd op)* leave off.

*Hij liet zijn paraplu in de gang staan* he left his umbrella in the hall.

*Hij liet den brief op tafel liggen* he left the letter on the table.

With the reflexive pronoun **zich**, it involves the idea of it can be, it may be.

*Dat laat zich wel hooren* it may be imagined.

*Dat laat zich gemakkelijk verklaren* this may easily be explained.

*Dat laat zich beter gevoelen dan beschrijven* this may be better felt than described.

In some expressions it is rendered by various verbs; see also § 437.

*Iets laten doen* to have a thing done.

*Een portret laten maken* to have a portrait taken.

*Binnen laten* to let, to show in, to show into the room.

*Laten halen* to send for.

*Laten vallen* to drop.

*Laten wachten* to keep waiting.

*Laten weten* or *zeggen* to write (send) word, to let know.

*Laten zien* to show.

*Laat u raden* be advised.

*Achterlaten* to leave behind.

*Een groot vermogen nalaten* to leave a large fortune.

*Laat dat toch* don't or have done!

### Exercises.

#### 75.

If you would have a thing done well, do it yourself. If you should have done a thing well, never mind what the world says. The youth said he should be of age next month, but his father told him he would not derive much benefit from that, and added that he should take precious good care that the property should remain in the family. It is not truth, says Lessing, which makes man happy, but the aiming at truth. If God held in His right hand every truth and in His left the one inner impulse to search the truth, though on condition that I should err for ever, and bade me choose — I would humbly incline to His left, saying: "Oh Father, give me this; pure truth is for thee only." No man except one who felt a real love of truth, could have said that; nobody but a man of a truly struggling spirit of activity, could have pronounced such an idea. Here's a fine situation! to be obliged to wait so long and not to be able to do anything! Sigismund of Sweden lost a crown, which he might have saved, if he would have given up the catholic faith. The king restored on the throne (Charles the Second of England), was better liked by the people than any of his predecessors had ever been. The calamities of his house, the fatal death of his father, his own long sufferings and his romantic adventures, had made him the object of universal interest. Numa Pompilius, the second king of Rome, is said to have been very peaceable.

#### 76.

Do not suffer yourself to be deceived by appearances. I have ordered the said number of the Graphic, but the

picture was wanting. After this exhortation he'll take precious good care not to do it. You need not take the trouble of posting the letters yourself. We must not suffer ourselves to be deluded into the belief that the past was better than the present. We gave orders to be taken over to the other side, to see Amsterdam at a distance. I shall have the advertisement inserted in the Daily News. He had a house built for his son. The old German Emperor was not the man to allow such an opportunity to slip by. William the Conqueror was a very despotic ruler. He bereft even the mightiest of his subjects of great treasures of gold and silver, and compelled all to defend themselves against his oppressions by building castles. He ordered every one to have his eyes put out, who caught a deer or a boar, as if he were the father of the wild animals; and to make fresh woodland for huntingfields and game-preserves, he ordered the villages and churches to be pulled down and the inhabitants to be expelled. In his absence he had himself represented by Normans; though their vehemence and rapacity were pretty well known to him. There is no denying the fact, that the Danes have generally fought very courageously. Henry the Eighth allowed the great German painter Holbein to paint his portrait. Henry the Eighth had his portrait painted by the great German painter Holbein.

## 77.

**Proverbs.**

In for a penny, in for a pound. He who is afraid of leaves must not come into a wood. Better to die a beggar than to go a stealing. Often the deceiver is deceived. Do not sell the bear's skin before you have caught the animal. Set a thief to catch a thief. The bow cannot always be bent. Remove an old tree, and it shall wither to death. Rich people can make a great show. A man cannot serve two masters. If you want the end, you must not stick at the means. Say nothing but good of the dead. Much would have more. Goslings lead the geese to water. A fool may ask more questions in an hour than a wise man can answer in seven years. You must not look a gift horse in the mouth. Never put off till to-morrow what you can do to-day. Let sleeping dogs lie! A staff is quickly found to beat a dog. He who will not hear advice must suffer. Strike the iron while it is hot. If youth had experience and old age ability. It early pricks, that will be thorn. The left hand shall not know, what the right one does. One must do the one and not leave the other undone. That does not help to make

the pot boil. A friend's friend is well met. All truths are not to be told. Where there's a will, there's a way. Nobody can feed on air. One must do at Rome as Romans do. Early sow, early mow. Seek and you will find. Foxes, when they cannot reach the grapes, say they are not ripe. The most important is the most pressing.

78.

Rotterdam, April 12<sup>th</sup>, 1912.

Messrs. M. &amp; S., Frankfurt o. M.

Gentlemen, — It is not without sorrow that we observe that there has been a long pause in our correspondence formerly so active; we cannot account for that fact, in as far as we are not aware of having given you any occasion to be dissatisfied.

We, therefore, beg leave to bring ourselves to your remembrance transmitting you our last price-current, the perusal of which, we hope, will engage you to give us an order; you may be sure that we shall take care of executing it most punctually.

It is in particular a very beautiful Java Coffee distinguishing itself by its fine blue colour to which we want to call your attention; we herewith send a small sample of that coffee, which, in consequence of an advantageous purchase, we can let you have at the exceptional price of M. 1.40.

Hoping this little incitation will be sufficient to revive our correspondence, and in expectation of your orders, we remain, Gentlemen,

Yours faithfully  
B. & S.

**Gesprek.**

Wel, ben je heden nacht ook  
bij den brand geweest?

Bij den brand vraag je? Ik  
heb van geen brand ge-  
hoord.

Mijn hemel, hoe is dat moge-  
lijk? Heb je dan de klokken  
niet hooren luiden?

Wanneer ik eenmaal vast in  
slaap ben, word ik van zoo  
iets niet wakker.

De brandspuiten waren ge-  
lukkig spoedig ter plaatse.

Maar waar dan toch? Vertel  
mij dat eerst eens.

Vlak over de groote kerk, in  
het meubelmagazijn van X.

Dat zal zeker een flinke  
brand geweest zijn?

Betrekkelijk niet. Door het  
flinke optreden der brand-  
weer is er veel gered.

Is de brand dan niet in het  
magazijn begonnen? Zijn  
de meubels niet verbrand?

- Neen, de brand is op zolder begonnen en daar is dan ook alles verbrand; beneden is alleen wat waterschade geleden.
- Hoe is dat mogelijk op zolder, daar zal toch wel niet gewerkt worden?
- Dat niet, maar er liggen veel spaanders en krullen.
- O, dan is er zeker weer een onvoorzichtigheid in het spel.
- De oorzaak is alsnog onbekend, men vermoedt echter onvoorzichtigheid van een der knechts, die daarboven gerookt heeft.
- Zie je, ik dacht het al. Het rooken moest echter op zoo'n plaats ten strengste worden verboden.
- Gelukkig zijn er geen ongelukken te betreuren en was alles verzekerd.
- Dat is ten minste nog een geluk bij het ongeluk.

## Thirty-third Lesson. Drie en dertigste Les.

### Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Vervolg.)

Na te IJmuiden geschut te zijn, kozen wij 's middags het ruime sop, en weldra vloog de boot met volle kracht over de Noordzee, zoodat het niet lang duurde, of wij verloren de vaderlandsche kust uit het gezicht. Gelijk de meeste reizigers begaf ik mij nu naar mijn hut. 's Anderendaags ankerden wij op de reede van Southampton, van waar wij den 10<sup>den</sup> weer vertrokken na de Indische mail aan boord genomen te hebben. Daar dit gedeelte van mijn reis weinig bijzonders aanbood, zal ik u alleen maar vertellen, dat we den 14<sup>den</sup> kaap St. Vincent omvoeren en den 18<sup>den</sup> te Marseille aankwamen. We bleven er net lang genoeg om eenige reizigers aan boord te nemen, die dit gedeelte van hun overtocht over land hadden gedaan om zich in die stad bij ons aan te sluiten.

Den 24<sup>sten</sup> October waren wij eindelijk op de hoogte van Port-Saïd, aan den ingang van het groote Suezkanaal. Dit grootsche gewrocht van Ferdinand de Lesseps is, wat er ook de gebreken van mogen zijn, van onberekenbaar belang voor de Europeesche handelsvolken, want het 160 kilometers lange kanaal verkort den vroegeren weg van Europa naar Indië om de Kaap de Goede Hoop met de helft. De geheele lengte van het kanaal en zijne wijkplaatsen, de reede en de invaart worden goed bevaarbaar en op de behoorlijke diepte gehouden door op

bepaalde tijden vastgestelde uitbaggering en thans is men ijverig bezig met aan de verbetering te arbeiden. Het blijkt niettemin, dat het kanaal niet meer aan de behoeften van de scheepvaart en den wereldhandel, die een steeds aanzienlijker uitbreiding verkrijgen, voldoet. Men denkt er dan ook ernstig over een tweeden zeeweg van de eene naar de andere zee te graven.

### Use of the Infinitive Mood.

#### I. The Infinitive used as a Substantive or an Adjective.

§ 461. The Inf. is sometimes used substantively, where in English a gerund is used.

*Het dansen is een aangename beweging* dancing is an agreeable exercise.

*Het zwemmen is een nuttige kunst* swimming is a useful art.

Compare: *Het opgaan der zon* } sunrise.  
*Zonsopgang* }

*Het ondergaan der zon* } sunset.  
*Zonsondergang* }

*Het opvoeden der kinderen* } the education of  
*De opvoeding der kinderen* } children.

Of such double forms the first denotes the action, the latter the fact itself.

§ 462. The Inf. is used adjectively:

As a Predicate with the verb *zijn*.

*Dit boek is te lezen* (= *leesbaar*) this book is legible.

*Dit is gemakkelijk te verklaren* this is easy to explain.

**Note 1.** *Het is niet te vinden* it is not to be found.

*Het is op een afstand te zien* it is to be seen from a distance.

**Note 2.** Sometimes *staan* and *vallen* are used in the sense of *zijn*.

*Dat zal te bezien staan* it remains to be seen.

*Het valt niet te ontkennen* it is not to be denied.

Attributively as a gerund.

*De te lezen boeken* the books that are to be read.

*De te verruchten gasten* the guests that are to be expected.

*Een gemakkelijk te vervullen wensch* a wish which may easily be fulfilled.

**Note.** The Infinitive of transitive verbs only may be used in this way.



II. Use of the Infinitive without *te*.

§ 463. The Infinitive without *te* is used in connection with the verbs *gaan*, *komen*, *loopen*, *blijven*.

*Ga de courant halen* go and fetch the newspaper.

*Hij kwam mij bezoeken* he came to visit me.

*Dat loop ik gauw vertellen* I'll go quickly to tell this.

*Hij bleef mij aankijken* he kept looking at me.

**Note 1.** *Blijven* may also be used as an auxiliary.

*Ik blijf werken tot gij komt* I'll stay at work till you come.

*Ik bleef eten tot hij kwam* I kept eating till he came

**Note 2.** *Komen* may also be used in the sense of to get into another state or condition.

*Hij kwam te sterven, te overlijden, te vallen* he died, he lost his life, he fell.

*Hij kwam alles te weten* he found it all out.

*Komen* is sometimes followed by an Inf. instead of a Past Part.

*Zij kwamen naar ons toeloopen* they came running to us.

*Er kwam een vogel aanvliegen* a bird came flying towards us.

§ 464. The verbs *kunnen*, *moeten*, *mogen*, *willen*, *zullen*, *durven* and *laten* are always followed by an Inf. without *te*.

*Gij moogt hier niet spreken* you must not talk here.

*Hij durft dat niet doen* he dare not do that.

§ 465. An Inf. without *te* is used instead of the Present Part. with the verbs: *blijven*, *doen*, *gaan*, *hebben*, *hooren*, *houden*, *laten*, *vinden*, *voelen*, *zien*.

*Zij bleven staan, zitten, praten* they stopped, they kept their seat, they kept talking.

*Hij heeft mij niets doen weten* he has not sent me word.

*Wij gaan wandelen, jagen, rijden* we go out walking, hunting, riding; *wij gaan slapen* we are going to sleep.

*Ik heb hier wat geld liggen* I have some money lying here.

*Hoort gij hem nog niet komen* do you not hear him come yet?

*Iemand staan houden* to stop one.

*Iemand iets laten zien* to show one something.

*Wij vonden dit op straat liggen* we found this lying in the street.

*Iederen voelde den storm aankomen* every one felt the storm approaching.

*De rechter zag hem blozen en verbleeken* the judge saw him blush and turn pale.

§ 466. An Inf. without *te* is used instead of the Past Part. in the compound tenses of the verbs: *kunnen, moeten, mogen, laten, durven, willen; blijven, doen, leeren, helpen, wezen, gaan, komen, loopen, staan, zitten, liggen, vinden, zien, hooren, voelen.*

*De onderwijzer heeft ons leeren werken* the teacher taught us how to work.

*Ik heb mijn knecht doen roepen* I ordered my man-servant to be called.

*Gij hebt lang zitten praten* you have been talking a long time.

*Wat hebt gij daar staan kijken* why did you stand looking there?

*Ik heb dit hooren voorlezen* I have heard this read.

*De dokter heeft zijn pols nog voelen slaan* the physician still felt his pulse beat.

### III. Use of the Infinitive with *te*.

§ 467. The Inf. with *te* is used:

After some transitive verbs.

*Aansporen* to encourage

*Beletten* to hinder

*Bewegen* to persuade

*Dwingen* to force

*Hebben* to have

*Noodzaken* to compel

*Overhalen* to persuade

*Verhinderen* to prevent

*Veroordeelen* to condemn.

*Wij beletten (verhinderden) de jongens binnen te komen*  
we prevented the boys to enter.

*Hij heeft u iets te zeggen* he has something to tell you.

After some reflexive verbs.

*Zich bedroeren* to be sorry

*Zich beklagen* to complain

*Zich beroemen* to boast

*Zich gewennen* to accustom  
oneself

*Zich haasten* to hasten

*Zich schamen* to be ashamed

*Zich verbazen* to be surprised

*Zich verheugen* to rejoice

*Zich verwonderen* to wonder

*Zich vleien* to flatter oneself

*Zich wachten* to be upon one's  
guard.

*Ik haast mij u dit mede te deelen* I hasten to communicate this to you.

*Hij wacht zich wel het te zeggen* he is upon his guard to say it.

After some intransitive verbs.

<i>Aarzelen</i> }	to hesitate	<i>Schroomen</i>	to dread
<i>Dralen</i> }		<i>Voortgaan</i>	to continue
<i>Ophouden</i>	to cease	<i>Leeren</i>	= to learn by experience.

Sometimes after *komen*, see § 463, Note 2.

§ 468. The Inf. with *te* is used with the verbs *liggen, loopen, staan, zitten* to denote a simultaneous action.

*Het kind ligt te slapen* the child lies sleeping.

*Hij loopt te zingen* he walks and sings.

*Wat staat gij daar te kijken* what are you staring at?

*Wij zaten gezellig te spelen* we had a nice game together.

**Note.** In the compound tenses the Inf. is used instead of the Past Part., cf. § 471.

§ 469. The Inf. with *te* may be connected with another verb by the words: *door, met, na, om, van, zonder, alvorens, in plaats (or in stede) van, ten einde.*

*Hij waarschuwde ons door hard te schreeuwen* he warned us by crying very loud.

*De koopman begon met zich te verontschuldigen* the merchant began with excusing himself.

*Na ons gegroet te hebben, ging hij weg* after saluting us, he went away.

*Klop aan alvorens binnen te komen* knock at the door before you enter.

**Note.** In English the gerund must always be used after prepositions; in Dutch however this gerund is translated by an Inf. + *te*. The preposition which has become an adverb is preceded by *er*.

*Hij denkt er aan te gaan reizen* he thinks of making a journey.

*De soldaten zagen er geen kwaad in alles te vernielen* the soldiers did not scruple at destroying everything.

§ 470. After the following adjectives the Inf. is generally used with *te*.

<i>Bedacht</i>	mindful	<i>Verbaasd</i>	astonished
<i>Beust</i>	conscious, aware	<i>Versteld</i>	amazed
<i>Bezig</i>	busy	<i>Waard</i>	worth
<i>Getroost</i>	consoled	<i>Wardig</i>	worthy
<i>Gevoon</i>	accustomed	<i>Zeker</i>	sure.

*Ik ben verbaasd u hier te zien* I am astonished at seeing you here.

*Mijn broeder was bezig brieven te schrijven* my brother was busy writing letters.

**Note 1.** In a few cases *met te* or *om te* is used after these adjectives: *Wij waren bezig met alles in te pakken* we were occupied with packing up everything. *Vader is gewoon om alles alleen te doen* my father is accustomed to do everything alone.

**Note 2.** After adjectives preceded by the adverb *zoo*, the Inf. with *te* is used: *Wees zoo goed mij de boeken te zenden* be so kind as to send me the books.

§ 471. After the following verbs the Inf. with *te* is used: a) in the simple tenses and b) in the compound tenses, instead of the Past Part.

*Begeeren* to desire

*Behoeven* to need

*Behooren* ought to

*Beproeven* to try

*Denken* to think

*Dienen* to serve, to suit

*Gelieven* to please

*Meenen* to think

*Pogen* to endeavour

*Trachten* to try

*Verkiezen* to choose

*Verlangen* to desire

*Vermogen* to be able

*Wagen* to venture

*Wenschen* to wish

*Weten* to know

*Zien* to see

*Zoeken* to seek, to try.

*Gij behoort beter te schrijven.*

You should write better.

*Men behoefde het mij niet tweemaal te zeggen.*

I needed no second bidding.

*De soldaten wagen niet de vesting te bestormen.*

The soldiers do not venture to assault the fortress.

*De soldaten zullen niet wagen de vesting te bestormen.*

*Tracht (zoek, beproef) hem gunstig te stemmen.*

Try to get him well (favourably) disposed.

*Gij moet nu eens trachten (zoeken, beproeven) hem gunstig te stemmen.*

**Note.** With the verbs *pogen* and *trachten* the Past Part. may be used in the compound tenses as well as the Inf.

*Wij hebben alles in het werk pogen, trachten te stellen*  
or *wij hebben gepoogd, getracht alles in het werk te stellen* we have tried to do everything.

#### IV. Use of the Infinitive with *om te*.

§ 472. Generally an Inf. with *om te* (in order to) is used to denote an end or a purpose.

*Ik kom om u af te halen* I come to fetch you.

*Dit dient om u alles duidelijk te maken* this serves to explain everything to you.

§ 473. The Inf. with *om te* is also used:

After some adjectives, see § 470.

After adjectives or adverbs preceded by *te* or followed by *genoeg*.

*Het is te laat om uit te gaan* it is too late to go out.

*Hij is te jong om alleen op reis te gaan* he is too young to travel by himself.

*Het is warm genoeg om te gaan wandelen* it is warm enough to go for a walk.

*Zij is oud genoeg om te weten wat zij doet* she is old enough to know what she is about.

### V. The Infinitive in English.

§ 474. The Inf. in English may take the place of a dependent clause which must generally be expressed in Dutch.

He was the first to tell me this *hij was de eerste, die het mij vertelde*.

§ 475. The Inf. with *to* takes the place of a conditional clause in sentences as:

To hear you, one would think him a learned man *als men u hoort, zou men denken, dat hij een geleerd man is*.

I shudder but to think of it *ik ril al, als ik er slechts aan denk*.

§ 476. It takes the place of a dependent clause beginning with *that* after *so . . . as*, *such . . . as*:

There is scarcely any evil so great as not to be rendered tolerable by patience *er is nauwelijks eenig ongeluk dat niet dragelijk gemaakt wordt door geduld*.

His interest with popular instruction was such, as to render competition with him almost impossible *zijn belangstelling voor het volksonderwijs was zoo groot dat het bijna onmogelijk was met hem te wedijveren*.

§ 477. The Inf. with an **Accusative** used after the verbs *to desire*, *to know*, *to mean*, *to wish* &c. must be changed in Dutch into a subordinate clause with *dat*. I know him to be in Amsterdam is translated as if it ran: I know that he is in Amsterdam.

I wish him to do the work alone *ik wensch, dat hij zijn werk alleen maakt*.

I knew the master to be a good pedagogue *ik wist, dat de onderwijzer een goed opvoedkundige was.*

They will deny it to be natural *zij zullen ontkennen, dat het natuurlijk is.*

§ 478. After the verbs to believe, to fancy, to hope, to know, to think, to wish &c. the objective sentence may follow in English without a conjunction, in Dutch *dat* is used.

I know he will do it for me *ik weet, dat hij het voor mij zal doen.*

I think his brother ought to go *mij dunkt, dat zijn broeder moest gaan.*

We believed all was lost *wij geloofden, dat alles verloren was.*

§ 479. The Inf. after the words how, what, where must be completed in Dutch with a subject and an auxiliary:

The poor boy does not know, where to sleep *de arme jongen weet niet waar hij slapen moet (zal).*

He does not know how to fire the gun *hij weet niet hoe hij het geweer moet afschieten.*

Teach him how to do it *leer hem hoe hij het moet doen.*

### Participles.

§ 480. The Past Part. of some verbs are used as substantives.

*De (een) afgevaardigde* the (a) deputy.

*De (een) bekende* the (an) acquaintance.

*De (een) beminde* the (a) lover.

*De (een) beschonkene* the (a) drunken man.

*De (een) eerstgeborene* the (a) first-born.

*De (een) geduigde* the (a) defendant.

*De (een) oudgeleide* the (a) veteran.

*Het gegeven* (Pl. *de gegevenen*) the information.

*De (een) gelustigde* the (a) mandatory.

*De (een) geleerde* the (a) learned man.

*De (een) geliefde* the (a) beloved.

*De (een) gevangene* the (a) prisoner.

*De (een) gezworene* the (a) jury-man.

*De saamgezworenen* (Pl.) the conspirators.

*De (een) uitgewekene* the (an) emigrant.

*De (een) uitverkorene* the (an) elected.

*De (een) vertrouwde* the (a) confident.

§ 481. A Present Part. is but very seldom used as a substantive, i. e. *de (een) razende* the (a) madman.

§ 482. Participles are also used as adjectives, if the idea of a remaining quality has replaced that of time or action. They may be used:

Predicatively, ending in *end*, if they are used instead of an adjective, in *ende* if used instead of a Present Tense.

*Dit boek is vervelend* this book is tedious.

*Hij is bekrompen in zijn oordeel* he is narrow-minded.

*Deze tekening is uitstekend*<sup>1</sup> this drawing is excellent.

*Zijn broeder is erg bijziende* his brother is very near-sighted.

*Zij zijn herstellende* they are recovering.

*Het water is rassende, vallende* the water is rising, falling.

*Wij waren slapende* we were sleeping.

Attributively, with the endings of an adjective.

*Een betoverend gezicht* a charming view.

*Loopend water* running water.

*Stilstaand water* stagnant water.

*Een beslissende slag* a decisive battle.

**Note 1.** Such Participles may also be used with the prefix *on*: *onbekrompen* liberal, *ongedwongen* unconstrained, *onoplettend* inattentive; some of them are even used as adjectives only: *ondeugend* mischievous, naughty, *onwetend* ignorant, *onbeduidend* or *onbeteekenend* insignificant, *onbehouwen* unmannerly.

**Note 2.** Compound Participles are used very seldom especially in prose or conversational language:

*Blindgeboren* blindborn. *Hemelschreiend* crying to heaven.

*Hemeltergend* most revolting. *Jongstleden* last, past.

§ 483. The Present Part. is sometimes wrongly used as an adjective with a passive meaning.

*Brekende* (instead of *breekbare*) *waren* fragile wares.

*Roerende goederen* movables.

*Onroerende goederen* immovables.

*Illende koorts* brain-fever.

*De vallende ziekte* epilepsy.

*Een zittend leven* a sedentary life.

*Eene stilzicgende voorwaarde* an implied, a tacit condition.

§ 484. In the same way the Past Part. is sometimes wrongly used with an active meaning.

<sup>1</sup> As to the accent see § 126.

*Een godvergeten (eervergeten) schurk* a wicked scoundrel.

*Een gestudeerd man* a learned man.

*Een bevaren matroos* an experienced sailor.

*Een bereden genlarm* a mounted policeman.

*Een (on)beleefd mensch* a polite (an impolite) man.

*Een dronken soldaat* a drunken soldier.

§ 485. In the rules given §§ 461—479 we have already seen that the Inf. is often used instead of a Participle. Very seldom a Part. is used instead of an Inf., properly speaking in old proverbs or proverbial sayings only.

*Het is boter aan de galg gesmeerd* it is labour lost.

*Het is aan eens dooven mans deur geklopt* it is preaching to the deaf.

*Het is den moriaan geschuurd* it is washing a black-amoor white.

**Note.** Such Participles may be used as a subject of a sentence.

*Beter hard geblazen dan den mond verbrand* great talkers are always the least doers.

*Beter ten halve gekeerd, dan ten heele gedwaald* the shortest errors are the best.

§ 486. Participles immediately preceding a substantive are treated as adjectives.

The Present Part. preceding a masculine substantive has in the Nom. Sing. *e*, in the Acc. *en*.

The Past Part. preceding a neuter noun is always used without *e* in the Nom. and Acc. Sing.

Participles used predicatively have no inflexion at all.

*Zijn broeder was een boven allen uitstekende man* his brother was a superior man.

*Wij zagen eenen boven allen uitstekenden man.*

*Uw pas gebouwd huis. — Uw huis is pas gebouwd.*

§ 487. In adverbial clauses and participial constructions the Present Part. may be used unchanged, but generally it has the *e* of the weak inflexion; the Past Part. is uninflected.

*Huilende en schreeuwende ging hij naar huis* weeping and crying he went home.

*Dit gezegd hebbende, verwijderde hij zich* having said this he withdrew.

*Ontwaakt deelde hij zijnen makkers alles mede* when awaked he communicated all to his comrades.



§ 488. The elliptical Past Part. has no inflexion.

*Dit vooropgesteld* presupposing this.

*Van een anderen kant beschouwd* considered from another point of view.

*Alles bij elkaar genomen* taking all together.

*Eigenlijk gezegd* properly speaking.

*Toegestaan dat dit waar is* granting this to be true.

*In het algemeen genomen* generally speaking.

*Globaal berekend* calculating roughly.

### Exercises.

79.

Nothing is so bad as not to be good for anything. Richard Cromwell, whom all Europe believed to be firmly established on the chair of state, disappeared at once from the scene. The circumstances were not so desperate as to justify this violent remedy. It is not to be expected, it is true, that anybody knows something without having learned it, but on the other hand one must have a sort of natural turn for every branch of study, if one wants to make some progress worth mentioning. Worthless flatterers, whom Charles the Second knew to be destitute of any affection for him, and to be undeserving of his confidence, could easily wheedle him out of titles, posts, estates, secrets of state and remissions of guilt. He must needs have a long spoon, who would eat with the devil. I believe he would have done better by giving up the affair. His resolution was too firm to be shaken by a slight opposition. After many experiments the marquess of Worcester succeeded in constructing a rude steam-engine, which he called a fire waterwork and which he pronounced to be an admirable and most forcible instrument of propulsion. But the marquess was taken for a lunatic, and therefore his invention did not meet with a favourable reception. The crusades opened a more extensive intercourse between the East and the West, by their leading great masses of men from every corner of Europe into Asia. It was not the desire of the Romans of enlarging their trade, but the necessity of opposing their most formidable rivals, the Carthaginians, which first prompted them to aim at maritime power.

80.

Several months passed, without our having even an opportunity of seeing him in the street. Though that quality of the magnet by which it draws iron, was known to the ancients, its more interesting and surprising virtue of direct-

ing to the poles had entirely escaped their observation. Joseph the Second of Austria was earnestly intent on exterminating root and branch a number of abuses, but he was not understood by his subjects. The enemy was prevented from occupying the heights. Julius Caesar made war on Gaul, and he succeeded in conquering the whole country. The defence of his empire having been provided for, king Alfred devoted himself to govern it wisely. This point being thoroughly discussed some time ago, there is no occasion for making it once more a subject for debate. William of Normandy declared, that he came to demand the crown as his right, on account of its being bequeathed to him by Edward the Confessor. Properly speaking, we had not expected this opposition from that side. I remember having often heard this song in my youth, but remember the first two lines only. Defending a bad cause is as disgraceful as the cause itself. Sir Humphrey, after having begun his life as a chemist's apprentice, was at an age of forty-two President of the Royal Society and the greatest of English chemists. Whatever I said, the artist kept on painting without condescending to favour me with a single look. On hearing the book praised by every one, I could not forbear ordering it from my bookseller. The manner of living of the old Germans was very plain, their food consisting in roasted corn, wild fruit, berries and roots, and the meat of tame or wild animals.

## 81.

**Sailing the boat.**

John has come down to the pond to sail his new boat. He calls it the "Blue Bell", because it is painted blue, and has a little blue flag.

Look! the wind is filling its sails. It will soon cross to the other side of the pond.

Then John will run round and start it again, so that it will keep sailing from side to side.

This is nice fun for a boy when he is careful not to slip into the water and get wet.

Once John came to grief in this pond. Let me tell you how it was, that you may learn a lesson from his mistake.

One holiday afternoon his cousin Fred came to pay him a visit. They went to play near this pond.

John saw a pretty white lily so close to the edge of the pond that he felt sure he could get it.

"You must not try", said his cousin Fred. "The pond is very deep, and you may fall into it."

But John would have his own way. Taking hold of a branch, he stretched out his hand to get the flower.

The branch broke, and John got a ducking. But it did him good, for it taught him to be more careful.

82.

### **My own head fits best.**

Henry VIII., having quarrelled with Francis I., King of France, resolved to send an ambassador to him with a very haughty and threatening message. For that purpose he made choice of Bishop Bonner, in whom he placed great confidence. The Bishop told him that his life would be in great danger, if he used such language to so high-spirited a King as Francis I. "Never fear!" said Henry; "for if the King of France were to put you to death, I would take off the heads of all the Frenchmen who are here in my power." "I believe so", answered the Bishop: "but of all those heads none would fit me so well as my own!"

83.

G., 16<sup>th</sup> January, 1912.

Mr. Th. Olifant, Eindhoven.

Sir. — The kind reception I met with at your hands when stopping in your town as a traveller of the firm of Fallstaf & Co., a reception I still remember with pleasure, encourages me to hope you will not take amiss my hereby soliciting your custom and support, with reference to my circular of the 1<sup>st</sup> January.

As you will have learnt from my circular-letter, I have now established myself keeping on the branch in which I then waited on you as a representative of the aforesaid firm.

Though still a beginner, I am well assorted, and the annexed price-current will convince you that my quotations are low and my terms very fair.

In coffees I have made very advantageous purchases at an auction held at Rotterdam the other day, and I am ready and willing to forward you samples of the coffees, in order that you may convince yourselves of their being pure and worth their price.

Hoping you will favour me very soon with your orders, I remain, with unalterable esteem,

Yours truly  
Konrad Koster.

**Gesprek.**

Waarde vriend, waar zijt gij gisteren geweest? Ik heb u den geheelen dag niet gezien.

Hoe jammer dat ik dit niet geweten heb, ik was gaarne meegegaan.

En hoe heeft het u befallen op Marken?

En de menschen dan, zijn die allen zooals de weinigen, die wij zoo nu en dan in Amsterdam zien?

Zoodra de gelegenheid zich weer voordoet, zal ik niet verzuimen ook eens een kijkje te gaan nemen.

Ik heb gisteren een plezier-tochtje meegemaakt naar het eiland Marken.

Het spijt mij, dat ik geen gelegenheid had u een boodschap te zenden, het plan kwam onverwachts bij mij op.

Het eiland ziet er zeer merkwaardig uit met zijn gebouwen op palen.

Ja, bijna zonder uitzondering reusachtige menschen; de kinderen gelijken veel op oude mannetjes en oude vrouwtjes.

Die gelegenheid hebt gij in den zomer iederen Zondag; zorg echter bijtijds op de boot te zijn, er zijn altijd veel plezierreizigers op Zondag.

## Thirty-fourth Lesson. Vier en dertigste Les.

### Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Vervolg.)

Des anderen daags, 25 October, van Port-Saïd vertrokken, voeren wij langs de hooge, zandige oevers van het kanaal, kwamen toen in het meer Timsah uit, waarin het zoetwaterkanaal uitmondt dat, bij Caïro beginnende, de gemeenschap onderhoudt tusschen den Nijl en het zee-kanaal. Na de Bittere Meren te zijn doorgestoomd, kwam de boot den 26<sup>sten</sup> voor Suez aan. Een heele bende pakjes-dragers en fellahs schoot toe naar de kade. Een tiental bootjes staken van wal en kwamen de Hollandia te gemoet. Daar zij te Suez slechts zou stilliggen om de noodige kolen in te nemen, had ik geen gelegenheid de stad te bezichtigen. Nog kort te voren een armoedig gehucht, heeft zij zich thans verbazend ontwikkeld en alles voorspelt, dat Suez een groote toekomst tegemoet gaat. Het stoomschip verliet dien dag nog de haven en daar de vuren goed werden

opgestookt, vlogen wij met volle kracht over de Roode Zee om den afstand tusschen Suez en Aden, namelijk precies 1310 mijlen, af te leggen, een afstand, dien de boot in ongeveer 150 uren doorloopt.

De meeste reizigers hadden Batavia tot bestemming; andere begaven zich naar Samarang, nog andere naar Soerabaja. Onder hen telde men verschillende burgerlijke ambtenaren en officieren, allen hoog gesalarieerd. Er werd dus goed van geleefd aan boord van de *Hollandia* in dien kring van ambtenaren, waarbij zich ook eenige jonge Hollanders aansloten, die in de Oost handelskantoren gingen oprichten. De hofmeester had alles op groote schaal ingericht. 's Morgens bij het ontbijt, om twee uren bij het koffiedrinken, om half zes bij het diner en om acht uur bij het souper bezweken de tafels onder de schotels versch vleesch en de tusschengerechten door de slachterij en de voorraadskamers van de mailboot geleverd. De dames verwisselden tweemaal per dag van toilet. Er werd gemusiceerd, gedanst zelfs, als de zee zulks toeliet.

### Use of the Tenses.

§ 489. The Present Tense as a rule is used in the same way as in English. Exceptions:

It is often used, where in English the Future must be used, so in principal sentences followed by adverbial clauses after **when, before, till, after, &c.**; also after such verbs as **to believe, to expect, to fear, to hope.**

*Ik vertel hem alles als hij hier is* I shall tell him everything when he is here.

*Wij wachten totdat de trein aankomt* we shall wait till the train comes.

*Ik hoop dat hij spoedig terug komt* I hope he will soon come back.

*Ik vrees dat hij heden niet terug komt* I fear he will not be back to-day.

It is used instead of the Engl. Perfect Tense when referring to a time not separated from the present.

*Hoe lang zijt gij al in Saksen* how long have you been in Saxony?

*Wij wonen al drie jaar in deze straat* we have lived in this street these three years.

§ 490. The Past Tense is sometimes used even when there is some relation to a past time.

*Hij kwam dezen morgen aan* = he arrived this morning.  
*Hij is van morgen aangekomen* = he has arrived this morning.

*Hoe lang was je al van huis, toen de brand uitbrak* how long had you been from home when the fire broke out?  
*Hoe lang was uw vader al dood toen uwe moeder stierf* how long had your father been dead when your mother died?

**Note.** *Ik wenschte* = I wish: *ik wenschte, dat het altijd zomer was* I wish it were always summer.

§ 491. The Dutch Perfect Tense is sometimes used for the English Past.

*De Franschen hebben vele oorlogen gevoerd* the French waged many wars.

*Ben je gisteren naar de komedie geweest* were you at the play last night?

*Hij is geboren op het einde der vorige eeuw* he was born at the end of the last century.

§ 492. The Pluperfect Tense is employed as in English; the conjunction **after**, which in Dutch is usually followed by this tense or a **Past Infinitive**, may in English precede a **Past Tense** or the **Gerund**.

*Nadat ik alle brieven gelezen had,* } *ging ik uit.*  
*Na alle brieven gelezen te hebben,* }  
 After reading all the letters, I went out.

#### Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

§ 493. The **Subjunctive Mood** is but seldom used in the spoken language. In general it is limited to dignified style and has almost died out in ordinary conversational language. It must still be used:

In principal sentences expressing a wish or a grant.

*Lang leve de Koningin* long live the queen!

*Uw wensch zij ingevilligd* may your wish be granted!

In dependent sentences, not preceded by a conjunction, an interrogative pronoun or an interrogative adverb.

*Men geloove het of niet, waar is het toch* people may believe it or not, yet it is true.

*Hoe koud het ook zijn moge, zij gaan uit* however cold it may be, they go out.

§ 494. In dignified style the Subjunctive Mood is also used:

In dependent sentences, expressing a wish, a fear or a possibility.

*Wij hopen, dat hij **slage** (slaagt) we hope he may succeed.*

*Sta mij toe, dat ik u dat **zegge** (zeg) permit me to tell you.*

*Het is beter, dat hij alleen **ga** (gaat) it is better that he should go alone.*

In dependent sentences beginning with the conjunctions **opdat, dat, ten einde** and expressing a purpose.

*Hij werkt ijverig, opdat hij u **inhale** (inhaalt) he works diligently that he may overtake you.*

*Ik riep den hond, dat hij u niet **bete** (beet or zou bijten) I called the dog that he might not bite you.*

In conditional sentences, in which the condition is expressed as a wish.

*Hij kan bij ons blijven, zoo hij zich beter **gedrage** (gedraagt) he may stay with us if he behaves better.*

§ 495. The Past and Pluperfect of the subjunctive generally denotes a past action: *Ik riep den hond, dat hij u niet bete.*

In higher style however they may also relate to a fact of the present:

To express a supposition contrary to the fact.

*Al **kwame** (kwam) hij nu ook, het zou toch te laat zijn even if he came now it would be too late.*

*Al **ware** (was) hij rijk, hij zou u toch niet helpen though he were rich he would not help you.*

In adverbial comparative sentences, beginning with the conjunctions **alsof, als**.

*Hij leeft, alsof hij een rijk man **ware** (was) he lives as if he were a rich man.*

§ 496. The Imperfect and Pluperfect **may** be described by **zoude**, except:

In the above mentioned conditional and comparative sentences.

In dependent sentences, when the Imperfect of the principal sentence denotes a wish contrary to the fact.

*Ik wou, dat hij gekomen **ware** (was) I wish he had come.*

§ 497. *Zou(de)* must always be used in dependent sentences, in which a doubt or an uncertainty is strongly expressed.

*Ik weet niet, of hij wel zou toegeren* I do not know if he feels inclined to yield.

*Geloofst gij, dat het lukken zou* do you believe it will succeed?

**Note.** Also if the principal sentence is omitted:

*Zou hij 't doen* would he do it?

*Zou hij terugkeeren* will he return?

§ 498. To denote a wish or a supposition relating to the future the Subjunctive of *mogen* + Infinitive is often used instead of the simple Subjunctive.

*Moge God geven* (= *Geve God*) would to God.

*Hij moge zeggen* wat hij wil enz. (= *Hij zegge*) he may say whatever he likes &c.

§ 499. Sometimes *laten* + Infinitive is used instead of a simple Subjunctive, especially when a wish or a supposition is denoted.

*Laat ik niet te veel zeggen* (= *Zegge ik*).

*Laat hij komen, als hij kan.*

## The Government of Verbs.

### I. Verbs followed by a Nominative.

§ 500. The following verbs have a predicate (a noun or a pronoun) in the Nominative after them:

<i>Blijven</i> to remain	<i>Schijnen</i> to appear
<i>Heeten</i> (= <i>genoemd worden</i> )	<i>Worden</i> to become
to be called	<i>Zijn</i> to be.

*Alexander was een groot veldheer.*

*Hij wordt de meest beroemde letterkundige in Europa* he is becoming the most celebrated author in Europe.

§ 501. Verbs governing a double Accusative, as:

<i>heeten</i> }	to call	<i>schelden</i> to call names
<i>noemen</i> }		<i>tituleeren</i> to title,

are used with two Nominatives in the **passive voice**.

*Zij noemden (scholden) dezen man eenen bedrieger.*

*Deze man werd een bedrieger genoemd (gescholden).*

§ 502. The verbs: to appoint *benoemen*, to elect *verkiezen*, to make *maken*, governing in English two nominatives in the **passive voice**, require in Dutch the preposition *tot*, see § 254.



*Hij werd bevorderd tot luitenant. Hij werd tot koning gekozen.*

**Note.** The verbs: to declare *verklaren*, to consider or to think *houden*, require the prep. *voor* in Dutch:

*Hij werd voor een dief verklaard* he was declared a thief.  
*De minister werd voor een deskundige gehouden* the minister was considered an expert.

*Ik houd dit voor verloren moeite* I consider this labour lost.

## II. Verbs which in Dutch govern the Genetive.

§ 503. As the Genetive is not much used in Dutch. many verbs formerly governing the Gen. are used differently now. The following are still used with the Gen., especially in dignified and poetical language:

<i>Zich aantrekken</i> to take care of	<i>Zich herinneren</i> to remember
<i>Zich bekommeren</i> to concern	<i>Zich schamen</i> to be ashamed
oneself for	of
<i>Zich erbarmen</i> } to have	<i>Gedenken</i> to remember.
<i>Zich ontfermen</i> } mercy on	

*Wellicht komen zij van tijd tot tijd weder om uwer te gedenken* (*Beets*) perhaps they will come back now and then to remember you.

*Misschien herinnerde hij zich mijner nog* (*Van Lennep*) perhaps he remembered me still.

*Dit schuap behoort aan dengene, die zich zijner erbarmen zal* (*Van Lennep*) this poor creature belongs to him who will take care of it.

*Uit medelijden trok ik mij uwer aan* (*Van Lennep*) out of pity I took care of you.

*Zoo zullen we Uwer ons nooit schamen* so we shall never be ashamed of you.

§ 504. Some of the verbs which formerly governed a Genetive have become transitive now; but most of them must be used as in English with a preposition; in ordinary prose and conversational language we say:

*Ik kan mij zijnen naam* (*Acc.*) *niet herinneren* I cannot remember his name.

*Zich schamen over; zich ontfermen (erbarmen) over; zich beroemen op* to boast of &c.

## III. Verbs which in Dutch govern the Dative.

§ 505. As in English many transitive verbs require the person in the **Dative** having an Accusative of the

thing. *Iemand (Dat.) iets (Acc.) geven, zeggen, toonen, bevelen, verbieden, zenden &c.*

§ 506. The following verbs have the reflexive pronoun in the **Dative**:

<i>Zich aanmatigen</i> to arrogate to oneself	<i>Zich verbeelden</i> to imagine, to fancy
<i>Zich getroosten</i> to put up with	<i>Zich voornemen</i> to intend
<i>Zich herinneren</i> to remember	<i>Zich voorstellen</i> to imagine, to think.
<i>Zich ontzien</i> to fear, to be careful of	

**Note 1.** *Zich ontzien* has always the pronoun in the Dative, if the object (Acc.) is an Inf. with *te*:

*Hij ontziet zich niet iedereen lustig te vallen om geld.*

**Note 2.** *Zich herinneren* (a German loan-word) must not be confounded with the transitive verb *herinneren*:

*Ik herinner mij (Dat.) die zaak (Acc.) zeer goed.*

*Herinner hen (Acc.) aan hunne belofte* remind them of their promise.

§ 507. The principal verbs which govern a Dative are:

The simple intransitive verbs:

<i>Baten</i> to be of use to one	<i>Mankeeren</i> to ail, to fail
<i>Behagen</i> to please	<i>Mishagen</i> to displease
<i>Behooren</i> or <i>toebehooren</i> to belong	<i>Mislukken</i> to miscarry
<i>Bekomen</i> to do (good or harm)	<i>Ontbreken</i> to be wanting
<i>Believen</i> to please	<i>Passen</i> to fit, to suit
<i>Berouwen</i> to repent	<i>Schaden</i> to damage, to hurt
<i>Betamen</i> to be proper	<i>Schelen</i> to care for
<i>Bevallen</i> to please	<i>Schijnen</i> or <i>toeschijnen</i> to appear, to seem
<i>Blijken</i> to be evident	<i>Schikken</i> to agree
<i>Danken</i> to thank	<i>Slachten</i> = <i>gelijken</i> to re- semble
<i>Dunken</i> to seem	<i>Smaken</i> to taste, to like
<i>Falen</i> to fail	<i>Smarten</i> to afflict
<i>Gehoorzamen</i> to obey	<i>Spijten</i> to grieve, to be sorry
<i>Gelijken</i> to resemble	<i>Staan</i> to fit, to suit
<i>Gelukken</i> to succeed	<i>Verdrieten</i> to grieve
<i>Heugen</i> to remember	<i>Vleien</i> to flatter
<i>Invalen</i> to occur to (the mind)	<i>Voegen</i> to suit
<i>Lusten</i> to like	<i>Voorkomen</i> to appear
<i>Mangelen</i> to want	<i>Walgen</i> to loathe.

## Examples.

*Het behaagt mij dit te doen* I am pleased to do it.  
*Dit bekomt mij goed (slecht)* this does me good (harm).  
*Bier bekomt hun slecht* beer does not agree with them.  
*Het berouwt hun* they repent of it.  
*Hun ontbreekt alles* they are in want of everything.  
*Het kan hun niet schelen* they don't care for it.  
*Het smaakt hun niet* they do not like it.  
*Het smart mij in mijn ziel* it grieves me to the very heart.

*Deze spijs walgt mij* this meat turns my stomach.

The impersonal verbs (cf. §§ 438, 439), as:

*Mij hongert* I am hungry. *Mij dorst* I am thirsty.

Many verbs with the prefixes *ont*, *tegen*, as:

<i>Ontgaan</i> to forget	<i>Tegenkomen</i> to meet
<i>Ontloopen</i> to run away	<i>Tegenloopen</i> to miscarry
<i>Ontluchten</i> to escape	<i>Tegenvallen</i> to disappoint
<i>Ontlieden</i> to flee from	&c.

§ 508. A *dativus commodi et incommodi* occurs in some standing phrases, as:

*Iemand te hulp komen (snellen)* to run to the assistance of one.

*Te pas komen* to be of use, to come in handy.

*Ter oore komen* to come to one's ears.

*Te staan komen* to come to, to cost.

*Ten deel vallen* } to fall to one's share.  
*Te beurt vallen* }

*Ter zijde staan* to assist.

*Te doen staan: wat staat mij nu te doen?* what am I to do now?

*Iemand goed (slecht) staan* to suit well (ill).

§ 509. Sometimes the **Dative** is used with verbs which do not govern the Dative as a rule:

Instead of an object in the genitive or instead of a possessive pronoun.

*Hij sloeg dezen man den arm stuk* (= *den arm dezes mans*) he bruised this man's arm.

*Hij drukte mij de hand* (= *mijne hand*) he shook hands with me.

In phrases with a figurative sense, as:

*Iemand den pols voelen* to sound a man.

*Iemand aan den tand voelen* to put to the test, to examine.

§ 510. An ethical Dative *mij* or *me* and *jou* or *je* is often used in conversational language to give a more vivid description to a communication.

*Dat is me daar een leventje* what a pleasant life there!  
*Daar zitten je de bengels, als of ze geen drie kunnen*  
*tellen* these naughty boys are looking as if butter  
 wouldn't melt in their mouths.

#### IV. Verbs with the Accusative.

§ 511. As in English all transitive verbs may be followed by an object in the Accusative.

In some phrases intransitive verbs or impersonal verbs (used in a figurative sense) may be followed also by an Accusative (a cognate object).

*Den slaap* des rechtraardigen *slapen* to sleep the sleep  
 of the righteous.

*Een ellendigen* dood *sterren* to die a miserable death.  
*Iemand zijn gang* laten *gaan* to let any one go his  
 own way.

*Het hagelde pijlen en steenen* a shower of arrows and  
 stones fell down.

§ 512. The following verbs have besides the object in the Accusative a noun in the same case, cf. § 501.

<i>Zich (be)toonen</i> to show, to prove oneself	<i>Doopen</i> to baptize
<i>Zich teekenen</i> to sign	<i>Aanstellen</i> to appoint
<i>Achten</i> <sup>1</sup> to count	<i>Rekenen</i> to count
<i>Heeten</i> or <i>Noemen</i> to call	<i>Schatten</i> to esteem
	<i>Vinden</i> to find.

*Hij toont zich een grooten kenner van muziek* he  
 shows himself a judge of music.

*Deze soldaat heeft zich een flinken vent getoond* this  
 soldier has shown himself a gallant man (fellow).

*Wij vinden, achten, rekenen dien jongen een grooten  
 gek* we think that boy a great fool.

*Men heet, noemt hem eenen geleerde* he is called a  
 learned man.

#### Exercises.

84.

#### Daniel de Foe.

Daniel de Foe was a native of London, a butcher's son in St. Giles, James Foe; Daniel first assuming the prefix *de*.

<sup>1</sup> *Achten als* = to esteem: *ik acht u als mijn weldoener*  
 (benefactor).

He was born in 1661 and was intended to be a Presbyterian clergyman; but he entered into trade. He joined the insurrection of the Duke of Monmouth, but succeeded in coming out of it scot-free. He was successively a hosier, a tile-maker and a wool-dealer, but without any success. As an author he made a lucky venture in the year 1699. His "True born Englishman", a poetical satire on the foreigners, and a defence of William III. and the Dutch, had an unparalleled sale. In the year 1719 appeared his novel, "The adventures of Robinson Crusoe", which was already translated into German in 1720 and into many other European languages a few years afterwards. The extraordinary success of this work induced him to write a variety of other fictitious narratives. The troubled life of this highly remarkable man came to a close in April 1731.

85.

Did you see my friend William last night? How is he? I hope he is improving. I wrote a very long letter to him some days ago. How long had he been travelling, when he became ill? Yesterday I forgot to tell you, when and where the representation will come off. One of his ships, I forget now which, has gone down with all hands on board. If the advice be good, it is no matter who has given it. Duchess Louise showed a real and noble friendship for Charles August (of Saxony-Weimar), her consort; and he was worthy of that friendship, however greatly she may have tried his strange nature, opposite to hers in many respects. However voluminous the book is, yet several interesting details are sought in it in vain. He will find himself disappointed, unless he exert himself to the utmost. She avowed, that she would never have done it, if her mother had not insisted upon her doing it. As long as we have been at Heidelberg we go out every day, however cold it may be. Even if your friend came now it would be too late, for the train starts at half past two. He may say whatever he likes, I do not believe that he will be back before that time. I wish he had come before the train started. Honour thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be lengthened, and that it may go well with thee in the country that the Lord thy God gives to thee.

86.

Next week my brothers will come back from Batavia. Perhaps you remember them, for I am sure they visited you before their leaving this country. They are sorry that they must come back, for this climate does not agree with

them. Nevertheless they will be very pleased to see their friends and old acquaintances again. — Are they not afraid of the long voyage? — No, Sir, not at all, they do not care for it, I suppose they travelled very much when they were in Java. — The passage will cost them very much, as it lasts six weeks. — I do not exactly know how much they have to pay for it. — Are you going with me to Rotterdam to see them arrive? — I do not know yet if time will allow me. When do you expect them? — I believe on Wednesday next but I cannot tell you exactly the day of their arrival. I shall write to my friend at Rotterdam. — I consider this labour lost, for you will see it very soon in the newspapers. — Have you written to our friend G. too? — No, for I am sure he does not remember my brothers, he saw them but once before their departure. — I thank you very much for your kind invitation and it would grieve me very much if I could not go with you to Rotterdam. In this case I beg you to welcome them in my name also and to assure them that I shall come to visit them as soon as possible.

87.

Dordrecht, 3<sup>rd</sup> May, 1912.

Sir,

Herewith I fulfil the painful duty of informing you that on the 1<sup>st</sup> of May my dear husband,

Herman Willibrord,

was called away by the Lord from his earthly career. Whoever was more closely acquainted or in correspondence with the deceased, will be able to appreciate the loss I have sustained; they will honour his memory and participate in my sorrow.

In order to preserve to my son under age the house of his father, I have resolved on continuing the business as heretofore. In this enterprise of mine I shall be aided by Mr. Petrus de Winter, who has been for fourteen years a zealous assistant to my husband, and whom I have entrusted with my procuration.

In all my actions, I shall go by the principles of my late husband, and I hope, therefore, you will not withdraw from the firm of H. Willibrord the confidence with which you have honoured it hitherto.

Requesting you to take notice of the signatures noted here below, I am, Sir, with great esteem,

Yours obediently

Anna Willibrord, née Verveen,

who will sign: H. Willibrord.

Mr. Petrus de Winter will sign: P. Proc. of H. Willibrord,  
P. de Winter.

**Gesprek.**

- Waarmede kan ik u van dienst zijn. Mijnheer?  
 Die zijn op dit oogenblik niet voorhanden, maar ik kan ze onmiddellijk voor u bestellen.  
 Op zijn langst zal het drie dagen duren. Verschillende andere werken kunt u onmiddellijk krijgen.  
 Die roode bandjes zijn de werken van Van Lennep. Hier zijn ook de gedichten van Beets en van De Genestet in prachtband.  
 Heeft Mijnheer dit nieuwe werk over Oost-Indië al gezien?  
 Ik zal eens zien. Mag ik u ook eenige geschiedkundige romans ter kennismaking toezenden?
- Ik wenschte de gedichten van Vondel en Bilderdijk.  
 Wanneer kan ik ze dan hebben? Zij zijn bestemd voor een verjaargeschenk.  
 Mag ik die prachtbanden daar links in den hoek eens zien. Zijn het romans of gedichten?  
 Stuur mij maar eens eenige prachtbandjes ter inzage; ik zal dan morgen eene keuze daaruit doen en het niet gewenschte terugzenden.  
 Dit heb ik reeds. Hebt u nog andere nieuwe uitgaven?  
 Ik dank u, dan wordt de keuze al te moeilijk; wees zoo goed mij deze werken heden nog te zenden.

## Thirty-fifth Lesson. Vijf en dertigste Les.

### Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Vervolg.)

Maar de Roode Zee is zeer grillig en het kan er geducht spoken, zooals in al zulke smalle en lange golven. Wanneer de wind, hetzij van de Aziatische, hetzij van de Afrikaansche kust woei, dan slingerde de Hollandia, van ter zijde aangevallen, op eene vreeselijke wijze. Dan verdwenen de dames, zwegen de piano's, en zang en dans hielden tegelijk op. En toch ondanks den rukwind, ondanks de deining liep de mailboot zonder toeven naar de straat van Bab-el-Mandeb.

Gelukkig had de zeeziekte geen vat op mij. Ik at als een hongerige wolf, 't gevolg van de zeelucht, zonder dat ooit noch het slingeren, noch het stampen mijn uitstekend werkende eetmachine van streek konden brengen. Waar ik vreeselijk van te lijden had, dat was de ondragelijke hitte. Niets is dan ook minder zeldzaam dan dat een arme stoker, flauw gevallen voor de gloeiende haarden van de machine, op het dek wordt gedragen. Men gooit hem een

puts water over het lichaam, en langzamerhand komt hij weer bij.

Intusschen kwam de boot snel vooruit. Den 30<sup>sten</sup> kregen we Mokka in 't gezicht, dat te midden van zijn tot puin gevallen ringmuur, waarboven cenige groenende dadel-boomen uitstaken, verrees. In de verte strekten zich in 't gebergte uitgebreide koffietuinen uit.

### Use of some Adverbs.

§ 513. **Aan** is often used in elliptical sentences.

*De deur staat aan* the door stands ajar.

*Is de post (trein) al aan* has the post (train) already arrived?

*De kerk is nog niet aan* the service has not yet begun.

*Mijn cigar (pijp) is aan* my cigar (pipe) is lighted.

*De lamp is al aan* the lamp burns.

*Is het vuur al aan?* does the fire burn?

*Daar ligt het aan* that is the reason why.

§ 514. **Achter** = behind, slow.

*Hij is veel ten achteren* he is far behind.

*Mijn horloge loopt achter* my watch loses.

*Mijn horloge is 5 minuten achter* my watch is 5 minutes slow.

*Daar schuilt iets achter* there is a snake in the grass.

§ 515. **Af** = from, of, off.

*Van jongs af aan* from childhood.

*Van meet af aan* from the beginning.

*Hun engagement is af* their engagement is broken off.

*Ik ben er gelukkig af* I have fortunately got rid of it.

*Hij is goed af* he is in luck.

*Hij is slecht af* he is down in the world.

*Ik was dood af* I was dead tired.

*Majoor S. af* exit Major S.

*Het werk is af* the work is done.

*Het kan er bij mij niet af* I can't afford it.

§ 516. **Al** = already; **al te** = too.

*Hij is al gekomen* he has come already.

*Hij is al te goed* he is too good.

*Al schreeuwende kwam hij nader* he approached crying.

*Al lezende zag ik het* when I was reading I saw it.

*Al doende leert men* practice makes perfect.

§ 517. **Beneden** = down, down-stairs.

*Naar beneden vallen* to fall down.

*Naar beneden komen* to come down-stairs.

*Beneden wonen* to live on the ground-floor.

*Hier beneden* in this world.



§ 518. *Bij* = to, up. *with*. *Weer hij - te*  
*Eindelijk kwam zij weer bij* at length she came to.  
*Men bracht haar weer bij* they brought her to.  
*Ik ben gelukkig weer bij* I have come up with you  
 fortunately.

§ 519. *Bijna* + a <sup>geen</sup> negative adverb or pronoun  
 = hardly.

*Dit is bijna niet te gelooven* this is hardly credible.

*Bijna geen boeken zijn verbrand* hardly any books are  
 burnt.

§ 520. *Binnen* = inward, within.

*Van binnen en van buiten* inwardly and outwardly.

*Van binnen naar buiten* from within into the open air.

*Kom binnen, als het u belieft* please, come in.

*Hij is binnen* he is well-off.

*Te binnen komen (schieten)* to recur to the mind.

*Zich te binnen brengen* to remember, to recollect.

§ 521. *Boven* = up-stairs, up, *above*

*Naar boven gaan* to go upstairs.

*Naar boven zien* to look up.

*Als boven* as stated above.

*Te boven komen* to overcome.

*Te boven gaan* to surpass, to exceed.

§ 522. *Buiten* = abroad, out of town (doors).

*Naar buiten gaan* to go abroad, out of doors, to go into  
 the country.

*Wij wonen buiten* we live in the country.

*Deze deur gaat naar buiten open* this door opens without.

*Te buiten gaan* to exceed.

*Zich te buiten gaan* to be intemperate.

*Van buiten kennen, leeren* to know, to learn by heart.

*Laat mij er buiten, als 't kan* leave me out of it, if  
 possible.

§ 523. *Door*, cf. *aan*.

*De zaak is er door* the thing is settled.

*Hij is er van door* he has bolted.

*Ik ben er door voor het Fransch* I have passed my  
 French examination.

§ 524. *Er* = here, there.

*Is er iemand* is anybody here?

*Er zijn er velen, die dat niet weten* there are many who  
 do not know that.

*Waren er velen op het ijs?* Were there many on the ice?

*Ik ga er niet heen* I do not go there.

*Wat is er?* what is the matter?

*Ik denk er aan* I think of it.

§ 525. **Hoe** = what; <sup>how</sup>**wat** = how or what. *whatever*

*Hoe noemt gij dit in het Ned.?* what do you call this in Dutch?

*Hoe is uw naam?* what is your name?

*Hoe, durft gij dat zeggen!* what! dare you say this!

*Wat regent het!* how fast it is raining!

*Wat is hij toch geleerd* how learned he is!

*Wat belooft u?* what do you want? or I beg your pardon, what did you say?

*Nem wat u belooft* take your choice.

§ 526. **Immers** is translated in different ways.

*Uw broeder is immers uitgegaan* your brother has gone out, has he not?

*Ik kan 't immers niet helpen* is it my fault then?

*Ik zou 't immers niet gezegd hebben, als ik er niet zeker van was* do you think I should have said it, if I was not sure of it?

§ 527. **Juist** = just, very, correctly.

*Ik was juist een brief aan 't schrijven* I was just writing a letter.

*Dit is het juist wat wij noodig hebben* this is the very thing we want.

*Als ik mij juist herinner dan is dit juist weergegeven* if I remember rightly, this is rendered correctly.

§ 528. **Nog**<sup>1</sup> = yet, still; **nog** + a negation = as yet.

*Is uw broeder nog thuis?* is your brother still at home?

*Is uw oom nog (or nog altijd) in L.?* is your uncle still at L.?

*Hij is nog niet aangekomen* he has not yet arrived.

*Ik heb voornog mijne toestemming niet gegeven* I have not given my consent as yet.

*Nog in het jaar 1870* as late as the year 1870.

*Is er nog thee?* is there any tea left?

*Ja, er is er nog* yes, there is some left.

*Er is nog iemand hier geweest* somebody else has been here.

<sup>1</sup> **Nog** is not to be confounded with **noch**: *Noch de een noch de ander* neither the one nor the other.

*Nog heden gebeuren zulke dingen to this very day such things will happen.*

*Geef mij nog een kopje, als het u belieft give me another cup, please.*

§ 529. **Om** = about, expired, turned.

*Om en bij de twintig about twenty.*

*Om en om round about.*

*Het verlof is om the furlough has expired.*

*De tijd is om time is up.*

*Dit is om, deze weg loopt om this is a roundabout way.*

*Om den anderen alternately, by turns.*

§ 530. **Onder(en)** = under, down, downstairs.

*De zon gaat onder the sun sets.*

*Onder in den kelder down in the cellar.*

*Is hij boven of onder is he upstairs or downstairs?*

*Het was erop of eronder it was neck or nothing.*

*Hij komt van onder(en) he comes from beneath.*

§ 531. **Ook** = also, too, ever.

*Wij waren daar ook we were also there.*

*De Duitschers en de Engelschen ook the Germans and the English too.*

*Wie ook, wat ook whoever, whatever.<sup>1</sup>*

*Waar ook, wanneer ook wherever, whenever.*

*Als is hij ook nog zoo eerlijk, ik vertrouw hem niet may he be ever so honest I do not trust him.*

§ 532. **Op** = up, upstairs, *Finished.*

*Op en neer gaan to go up and down.*

*Ik was op om acht uur I was up at eight.*

*Hij ging de trap op he went upstairs.*

*De zon gaat op the sun rises.*

*Mijn geld is op my money is spent.*

*Ik ben dood op I am quite knocked up.*

*Ze zeggen, dat hij op is they say it is all up with him.*

§ 533. **Over** = over, left.

*Het gevaar is over the danger is over.*

*Wanneer is hij 't laatst over geweest when did he come over last?*

*Er zijn er drie over there are three left.*

*Mijn kiespijn is over my tooth-ache is better now.*

*Een kamer over hebben to have a room to spare.*

<sup>1</sup> No compound words in Dutch.

§ 534. **Reeds**, cf. **al** (§ 516). *here*

*Wij zijn reeds 6 maanden hier* we have been here these six months.

*Reeds de gedachte doet mij ijzen* the mere thought makes me shudder.

*Reeds (Al) in de eerste eeuw* as early as the first century.

*Reeds (Al) bij de Egyptenaren* even among the Egyptians.

*Reeds (Al) in den aanvang* even at the outset.

§ 535. **Toch** = pray, do, still, *surely*.

*Laat mij toch gaan* pray, let me go.

*Wees toch stil* do be quiet.

*Gij zijt toch niet bang?* surely you are not afraid?

*Waar is (zit) hij toch?* where can he be?

*Wat is het toch jammer!* what a pity it is!

*'t Is mogelijk, toch geloof ik het niet* it is possible, yet I do not believe it.

*Ik heb het verboden, toch heeft hij het gedaan* I have forbidden it, but he has done it nevertheless.

§ 536. **Toe** = shut, to.

*De deur is toe* the door is shut.

*Hij gooide de deur toe* he flung the door to.

*Hij trok de deur achter zich toe* he pulled the door to after him.

*Op den koop toe* into the bargain.

§ 537. **Trouwens** = besides, for the rest, indeed, nor.

*Ik heb geen lust om uit te gaan, 't is trouwens ook te laat* I have no mind to go out, besides it's too late.

*Het moet trouwens erkend worden, dat hij een geleerd man is* for the rest it must be confessed that he is a learned man.

*De koopman had hem trouwens altijd van oneerlijkheid verdacht* the merchant, indeed, had always suspected him of dishonesty.

*N. is falliet gegaan; dit is trouwens niet te verwonderen, als wij zijn leefwijze in aanmerking nemen* N. has failed; nor is this wonderful, if we consider his manner of living.

§ 538. **Uit** = out, over, *finished*

*Het vuur is uit* the fire is out.

*Vader is uit* father has gone out.

*De kerk gaat uit* people are coming out of church.

*Is de school al uit is school over yet?*

*Het is tusschen ons uit it's all over between us.*

*Ik heb het boek uit I have finished the book.*

§ 539. **Voor** = fast, in front.

*Mijn horloge loopt 5 minuten voor my watch is 5 minutes fast.*

*Mijn horloge loopt voor my watch gains.*

*Voor in het rijtuig on the front seat.*

*Laten wij voor omgaan let us go round in front.*

*Iemand vóór zijn to have the start of a person.*

§ 540. **Wel, wel?** (= *niet waar?*). So, *h t m*

*Dat dacht ik wel I thought so.*

*Dat kan wel zijn that may be.*

*Heb je wel gezien. hoe hij rondkeek did you notice how he looked about him?*

*Ik blijf er bij, dat ze wel komen I still say they do come.*

*Geduld, de boeken zullen wel komen patience, the books will be brought yet.*

*Daar zijn ze, en wel gauwer dan ik dacht here they are and even sooner than I thought.*

*Ik zal het wel doen I will do it.*

*Er waren wel 20 paarden there were as many as 20 horses.*

*Het regent niet, wel? it does not rain, does it?*

*Dat kan in een paar minuten gedaan worden, niet waar? it may be done in a few minutes, may it not?*

§ 541. **Weliswaar** = it is true, to be sure.

*Hij is weliswaar geen Napoleon geworden, maar hij leefde ook in een anderen tijd to be sure, he has not turned out a N., but then he lived in another time.*

*Uw vriend heeft weliswaar zijn best gedaan, maar zijn werk is toch zeer onbeduidend it is true that your friend has done his best, but still his work is very insignificant.*

§ 542. Some Dutch **adverbs** are expressed by verbs in English:

*Ik zou gaarne weten I should like to know.*

*Wij waren toevallig in de stad we happened to be in town.*

*Mocht ik hem toevallig zien if I should happen to see him.*

*Je hebt het zeker (= hoogst waarschijnlijk) verloren I dare say you have lost it.*

*Het kind valt zeker (= zonder twijfel) in slaap the child is sure to go to sleep.*

*Hij keek ons voortdurend* aan he kept looking at us.  
*Je moogt de boeken gerust* zoolang houden, *als je wilt*  
 you are welcome to keep the books as long as you like.

*Zulke lui (= lieden) worden wel eens* nijdig such people are apt to get angry.

*Hartstochtelijke lieden vervallen licht* in overdrijving impassioned people are apt to exaggerate.

*Ik zou het dol graag* hebben I should like it of all things.

*'t Beste* zal wezen dat je naar huis gaat } you had better  
*Ga liever* naar huis , } go home.

### Use of some Conjunctions.

§ 543. *Als* = as, like, for.

*Als* + a substantive denotes the identity of two persons, *als* + *een* + a substantive denotes the similarity.

*Hij ging als tooneelspeler* naar A. he went to A. as an actor.

*Hij gedroeg zich als een tooneelspeler* he behaved like an actor.

*Als* sometimes answers to **for**:

*Zij werd verbrand als een heks* she was burnt for a witch.

*Hij koos mij als zijn vriend* he chose me for his friend.

*Als* = though or however:

*Rijk als hij was* { rich though he was;  
 { however rich he might be.

*Als* is often not used in English (see § 254):

*Hij viel als een slachtoffer van zijn wraak* he fell a victim to his revenge.

*Zij stierf als weduwe* she died a widow.

Compounds: *alsdan* or *alstoen* = then, at that time; *alsmede* = likewise, too, also; *alsnog* = as yet; *alsnu* now; *als het ware* as it were; *als wanneer* at which time; *alsook* = as; *alsof* = as if.

§ 544. *Daar* = as, *omdat* = because.

*Daar het regende, ging ik niet uit* as it rained I did not go out.

*Ik ging niet uit, omdat het regende* I did not go out because it rained.

§ 545. **Dan** = than, but.

*Hij heeft meer dan zijn broeder* he has more than his brother.

*Ik heb geen ander woordenboek dan dit* I have no other dictionary than this.

*De zuivere waarheid en niets dan de waarheid* the whole truth and nothing but the truth.

§ 546. **Dat** = that, *dat (toen)* = when; *dat (opdat)* = lest.

*Weet gij dat hij het gedaan heeft* do you know that he has done it?

*Op een oogenblik dat het kind alleen was* at a moment when the child was alone.

*Ik geloof dat hij komen zal* I believe he will come.

§ 547. **Dewijl** (*wijl*) = because, since; — *terwijl* = while, whereas.

*Dewijl* = **daar, omdat**, but only used in dignified style.

*Terwijl* = **daarentegen** answers to **whereas**.

*De eene broeder werd rijk terwijl de andere arm werd*  
one brother grew rich, whereas the other became poor.

*Ik schreef brieven, terwijl mijn familie uit was* I wrote letters while my family had gone out.

§ 548. **Hetzij** = either, whether.

*Hetzij vleesch hetzij visch* either meat or fish.

*Hetzij gij eet hetzij gij drinkt* whether you eat or drink.

§ 549. **Noch** = neither, nor; *noch . . . noch* neither . . . nor.

*Geld noch goed* neither money nor goods.

*Hij noch ik*

*Noch hij noch ik* } neither he nor I.

§ 550. **Nu** (conjunction) = now that.

*Nu wij alleen zijn, zal ik je eens alles vertellen* now that we are alone, I'll tell you all about it.

§ 551. **Of, of- of** may be used in different meanings: *Or, whether, but, when, before than*

*Zeg nu maar ja of neen* say yes or no only.

*Vraag hem of hij komt* ask him whether he comes.

*Zij lag of (alsof) zij dood was* she was lying as if she were dead.

*Niemand is zoo oud of hij kan nog wat leeren* nobody is so old but can still learn something.

*Hij was nauwelijks uit het huis, of het stortte in elkander*  
he had scarcely left the house, when it tumbled  
down.

*Wie weet, of hij niet een bedrieger is* who knows but  
he may be an impostor?

*Er zijn weinig boeken of er zit altijd iets goeds in* there  
are few books but have something good.

*Het duurde niet lang, of ze begonnen te rechten* it was  
not long before they began to fight.

*Niet zoodra was hij vertrokken, of het huis werd verkocht*  
no sooner had he started than the house was sold.

### Exercises.

88.

The officers of Fredrick the Great of Prussia were expected as long as they were in the field to practise abstinence and self-denial. However high their birth was, however high their rank in the army, they were not permitted to eat out of anything better than tin. It was even a grievous fault in a count and field-marshal to have a single silver spoon among his luggage. As late as the seventeenth century only wood was used for melting ore, and the reckless waste of wood began to excite the anxiety of the government. Already in the reign of Queen Elisabeth loud complaints had been [heard], that whole woods were hewn down for the purpose of feeding the melting-furnaces; and Parliament had interfered and forbidden the manufacturers to burn timber. These writings will probably be read, as long as the French language continues to be spoken in any part of the world. You had better take a cab, if you can afford it; besides if your own purse will not reach so far, you are welcome to dispose of mine, you know! The plan will certainly fall to the ground, if you take no better measures of keeping it a secret; you think very likely, that nobody ever hit on such an idea, and that the world for centuries past has been waiting for you to realise it. If I should chance to meet your partner in London, I shall not fail to tell him, how you take your joint interests to heart.

89.

I know pretty well, what there is wanted in a family, and I say that it is impossible for them, to live according to their rank without running into debt. They do run into debt. I assure you. Do you know, how much they owe the milkman? Five-and-twenty guilders and forty to the butcher. — You don't mean to say so! I never knew that those people gave so much credit. — Why, that depends; though you



pay ever so irregularly if only you ride the high horse, some shopkeepers think, that they must try to retain your custom at any price. Well, let that be as it is. I was always of opinion and I am so still, that it is one of our first duties to cut our coat according to our cloth, and that we keep up our station only, when we pay our creditors honestly and may look every one boldly in the face. For the rest I need not dwell any longer upon this, for I know that you quite agree with me on this point. In our days it is difficult to be sure to give every one his due, but that does not exempt us from doing our duty. It is your opinion too; is it not?

## 90.

William of Orange, King of England, showed a spirit of indulgence, the more respectable, as it was so rarely found at that time. Since the time that literature had become a profession in England, it had never been a less lucrative calling than at the time when Samuel Johnson took up his residence in London. During the thirty years which followed, his life was a hard struggle with poverty. Some time appears to have elapsed, before he was able to form some literary connection, from which he could expect more than bread for the day that was passing over him. David Garrick the celebrated actor and Samuel Johnson remained friends, till they were parted by death. It is impossible not to be deeply interested in a man, who was so brave and so generous as Essex; in a man who, while he behaved towards his sovereign with a boldness, as great as was not to be found in any other subject, at the same time behaved towards his dependents with a delicacy as was very seldom met with in any other patron. After his return from India, Alexander while drinking at a banquet in Babylon, fell suddenly ill and died. The Greeks had entirely lost their love of freedom, as well as the other virtues, which had formerly characterized this heroic people. The house of Commons had forced Charles to make peace with the Republic of the United Netherlands, and all but forced him to declare war against France.

## 91.

Philippus, King of Macedon, was ambitious as well as bellicose. Scarcely had he marched his army into Greece, when he resolved to make himself ruler of the whole country. The man who gave Philippus more trouble than anybody else, was Demosthenes, an Athenian. He was one of the greatest orators that ever lived, and he held such fervent orations against Philippus, that the Athenians

were incited to resist him arms in hand. From these orations against the Macedonian king, violent diatribes have been called *Philippicae* since that time. Tresham, one of the conspirators at the Gunpowder Plot, said that to his certain knowledge, they were all lost men, unless they should save themselves by an immediate flight. But these infatuated men would not flee, nor did Tresham flee himself, neither did he seek any shelter. My general impression of this translation is very favourable; not but that I could point out a number of minor faults, which however may easily be expunged, should the work at any time be judged worthy of the honour of a reprint. Great fears were entertained, that the dykes would prove to be not strong enough to resist the fierce impetus of the boisterous elements. He who stands, let him take heed lest he fall. When the iron is hot, it is time to strike it.

## 92.

**Dialogue.**

I have come on purpose, my dear, to see the most remarkable buildings in this town. Will you kindly be my guide? I suppose you will be the very man I want for this. — Well, I shall be glad to help you, old boy. But let me tell you beforehand that there are only few "sights to see" here. — Previous to my departure I was told that the Town-Hall and the Tribunal were worth seeing above all things. — You are right. I shall at once take you there. Look here! This is our famous Town-Hall. First observe the front of the building, from an architectural and historical point of view it is very interesting, it will remind you of the Middle-Ages. Come along now to see the inside. You will be astonished at the fine pictures and statues. — Indeed, they are beautiful. I never get tired of looking at such masterpieces. They are the delight of my eyes. — I heartily concur with you, dear friend.

**Gesprek.**

Hebt gij nog niet aan onzen vriend N. geschreven?

Nee ik heb nog geen tijd gehad, maar ik zal het nu gaan doen.

Vergeet niet hem te vragen, wanneer hij komt logeeren, en of hij de heele vacantie bij ons blijft.

Hij zal waarschijnlijk niet bij ons komen logeeren, ik geloof dat hij deze vacantie bij zijn oom te X. doorbrengt.

Hoe jammer! Het spijt mij zulks niet eerder geweten te hebben.

Nu ja, weten doe ik het ook niet, maar ik vermoed zulks.

Vraag hem dan, of hij in de zomervacantie komt en of hij dan zijn jongste broertje wil meebrengen.

Dat is een zorg van lateren datum (tijd)! Wie dan leeft dan zorgt! Schrijf maar!

Ik heb hier ook nog een postpakket voor N., dat zoudt gij te gelijk kunnen verzenden.

Is er nog meer aan hem te zenden? Ik geloof dat hier alles bij elkaar gepakt is.

En waar wilt gij hem bergen, wij hebben nu al ruimte te weinig, sinds Willem in de logeerkamer slaapt.

Mij goed, als het u goed is; later zal alles wel in orde komen.

Ik loop even op het kantoor pen en inkt halen, dan zullen wij spoedig klaar zijn.

Er zal weinig aan ontbreken; mocht er nog iets zijn, dan zenden wij het later.

## Thirty-sixth Lesson. Zes en dertigste Les.

### Van Amsterdam naar Batavia. (Slot.)

Den volgenden nacht stoomde de Hollandia de straat van Bab-el-Mandeb door, welke Arabische naam de Poort der Tranen beteekent, en 's anderendaags, den 31<sup>sten</sup>, deden we Steamer Point aan, ten noordwesten van de reede van Aden; dáár moest zij nieuwen voorraad van brandstof opdoen.

Dat is een ernstige en gewichtige zaak, die voeding van den vuurhaard der mailbooten op zulke afstanden van de centra van voortbrenging. Men heeft in verscheidene havens voorraadschuren moeten vestigen en in die verre zeeën komt de steenkool op 40 gulden de ton.

's Avonds om zes uur zweepte de stoomboot met de vinnen van haar schroef de wateren van Adens reede en liep spoedig daarna de Indische Zee in. Deze was ons gunstig; de wind bleef noordwest en de zeilen kwamen den stoom te hulp.

Het schip, dat nu vaster lag, slingerde minder. De dames verschenen weer in luchtige kleedjes op het dek en 's avonds vingen zang en dans weer aan, zoodat de reis verder in de beste omstandigheden werd volbracht. Den 16<sup>den</sup> November kwamen wij op de reede van Batavia aan. Doch hier moet ik eindigen; in mijn volgenden brief meer. Doe mijn beleefde groeten aan uw vader en moeder en vele complimenten aan uwe overige huisgenooten. Geloof mij steeds

Uw toegenegen vriend  
N.

## Use of Prepositions.

I. On the Use of some Dutch Prepositions.<sup>1</sup>

§ 552. **Aan** = at, by, from, in, near, of, on, to.  
See also Lesson 27. II.

*Aan de deur kloppen* to knock at the door.

*Aan het hoofd des legers* at the head of the army.

*Aan zijne zijde* by his side.

*Ik zie aan zijn gezicht* I can tell <sup>from</sup> by his face.

*Ik herken hem aan zijn gang* I recognize him by his gait.

*Aan hoofdpijn lijden* to suffer from headache.

*Aan het hoofd gewond* wounded in the head.

*Tien gulden aan klein geld* ten florins in change.

*Aan den hemel* in the sky.

*Aan den waterkant* <sup>near</sup> at the water's edge.

*De slag aan de Boyne* the battle of the Boyne.

*London ligt aan de Thames* London is situated on the Thames.

*Aan land gaan* to go on <sup>land</sup> shore.

*Aan boord van een schip* on board ship.

*Aan den drank* addicted to drink.

§ 553. **Achter** = after, behind.

*De een achter den ander* one after the other.

*Zijn bediende reed achter hem* his servant was riding behind him.

*Achter de waarheid komen* to discover the truth.

*Achter het sijne zijn* to know the thing.

§ 554. **Bij** = about, <sup>at</sup> at, by, in, near, of, on, to, with.

*Geld bij zich hebben* to have money about one.

*Bij deze woorden* at these words.

*Bij het scheiden* <sup>at</sup> at parting.

*Bij zijn dood* <sup>at</sup> at his death.

*Bij nacht* in the night.

*Ik ontmoette hem bij Mijnheer N.* I met him at Mr. N's.

*Ik heb bij mijn oom gegeten* I have dined at my uncle's.

*Dicht bij mijn huis* hard by my house.

*Bij wijze van* by way of.

*Bij toeval* by chance.

*Ga bij mij zitten* sit down by me.

*Bij kaarslicht* by candlelight.

<sup>1</sup> As to verbs and adjectives followed by prepositions, see § 579, (III) List of verbs and adj. used with prepositions.

*Bij zijn naam noemen* to call by one's name.  
*Bij dag, bij nacht* in the day-time, in the night.  
*Bij slecht weder* in bad weather.  
*Bij zijn leven* in his life-time.  
*Bij iemand staan* to stand near a person.  
*Bij de kerk wonen* to live near the church.  
*Inlichting vragen bij* to inquire of.  
*De slag bij Leipzig* the battle of Leipzig.  
*Zijne opwachting maken bij* to attend on, wait on (upon).  
*Bij deze gelegenheid* on this occasion.  
*Het is bij zessen (zes uur)* it is close on six o'clock.  
*Hij is bij de dertig (jaar)* he is close on thirty.  
*Kom eens bij mij* just come to me.  
*Ik zweer het bij mijn ziel* I swear it upon my soul.  
*Ik was bij hem* I was with him.  
*Bij iemand wonen* to live with one.  
*Bij het baden* while bathing.  
*Je bent er bij, mijn jongen* you will catch it, my boy!

§ 555. **Buiten** = beyond, out of, outside.

*Dat is buiten ons bereik* that is beyond our reach.  
*Buiten zijn orders gaan* to go beyond orders.  
*Buiten kijf* beyond all question.  
*Het is buiten twijfel* there is no doubt of it.  
*Buiten zich zelf zijn van woede* to be beside oneself with rage.  
*Buiten en behalve zijn salaris* besides his salary.  
*Buiten adem zijn* to be out of breath.  
*Iemand buiten de kamer brengen* to lead a man out of the room.  
*Buiten de stad* outside the town.  
*Buiten den waard rekenen* to reckon without one's host.  
*Het gebeurde buiten hem om* it was done without him.  
*Buiten mijn weten* without my knowing of it.  
*Buitenshuis* without doors, out of doors.

§ 556. **Door** = by, out, through, *throughout*

*Dooreen Engelschmangeschreven* written by an Englishman.  
*Geruineerd door den oorlog* ruined by the war.  
*Door voortdurend roeien* by dint of rowing.  
*Door het venster zien* to look out of the window.  
*Door de stad marcheeren* to march through the town.  
*Door geheel Engeland* throughout England.  
*Het heele jaar door* throughout the year, all the year round.  
*Ik heb het door den gezant gekregen* I have got it through the ambassador.

*Door ongeluk wijs worden* to become wise through misfortune.

*Zijn heele leven door* through life.

*Dirars door het kreupelhout* athwart the thicket.

*Door de vingers zien* to connive, to look through the fingers.

*Door de bank* (= band) commonly, generally.

*Door elkander* { one with another,  
                          { on an average. -

§ 557. **In** = in, into, at, by, of, to, on.

*In de hoop u te zien* in the hope of seeing you.

*In 't geheim* in secret.

*In ijs veranderen* to turn into ice.

*In vrede leven* to live at peace.

*In het klein verkoopen* to sell by retail.

*In geenerlei wijze* by no means.

*In de veertig zijn* to be turned forty.

*In stukken scheuren* to tear to pieces.

*Integendeel* on the contrary.

*In het groot verkoopen* to sell wholesale.

*In de twintig* twenty and odd.

§ 558. **Met** = with, at, by, in, of, on. *f*<sub>3</sub>

*Met genoegen, met vreugde* with pleasure, with joy.

*Met een griffel schrijven* to write with a slate-pencil.

*Met het kriecken van den dag* at early dawn.

*Met één slag* at a blow.

*Zijn roordeel doen met* to profit by.

*Met de post verzenden* to send by post.

*Met den trein gaan* to go by train.

*Met geweld nemen* to take by force.

*Met dat all* for all this.

*Met een schip uitzeylen* to sail in a vessel.

*Met groote troepen* in great troops.

*Bezig zijn met lezen* to be engaged in reading.

*Wij waren met ons tien* { there were ten of us,  
  { we were ten.

*Met voorbedachten rade* { on purpose.

*Met opzet*

*Geluk wenschen met* to congratulate on, upon.

*Zijn middagmaal doen met* to dine on, off.

*Overeenkomst (gelijkenis) met* resemblance to.

*Een aanvang maken met* to enter upon.

*Het is uit met hem* he is done for.

*Hoe gaat het met uw broer?* how is your brother?

*Met het zwaard in de hand* sword in hand.

*Laat mij met vrede* let me alone.

*Met leien* gedeckt slated.

*Hij is nauwkeurig bekend met het Nederlandsch* the Dutch language is familiar to him.

§ 559. **Na** (originally = *naar*) is generally used now to denote **time**, in a few expressions it denotes also **rank**.

*Na het ontbijt, middagmaal* after breakfast, dinner.

*Na de Paaschevacantie* after the Easter holidays.

*Na dezen* in future, afterwards.

*Hij kwam na u* he came after you.

*De laatste op één na* the last but one.

*Op twee na* all but two.

*Op weinig na* within a trifle.

*Op dit na, is alles juist* this excepted all is right.

§ 560. **Naar** generally denotes **direction**; it is often used instead of **volgens** = according to.

*Naar de Indiën reizen* to go to the Indies.

*Naar Londen gaan* to go to London.

*Naar bed gaan* to go to bed.

*Naar hartelust* to one's heart's content.

*Alles werd naar beider genoegen geschikt* all was arranged to their mutual satisfaction.

*Naar oud gebruik* according to ancient custom.

*Naar zijn wil* according to his will.

*Naar verdienste beloon worden* to be rewarded according to one's merits.

*Naar een model gemaakt* made after a model.

*Zij werd Marie genoemd naar hare tante* she was called Mary after her aunt.

*Naar iemand's gezondheid vragen* to inquire after a person's health.

*Iemand een steen naar het hoofd gooien* to throw a stone at a person's head.

*Naar roem dorsten* to thirst for glory.

*Vurig verlangen naar* to have an ardent desire for.

*Naar Italië vertrekken* to set out for Italy.

*Naar den schijn oordeelen* to judge from appearances.

*Naar zijn uiterlijk te oordeelen* judging from his exterior.

*Naar de natuur schilderen* to paint from nature.

*Naar zijn gevoelen* in his opinion.

*Naar buiten gaan* to go into the country.

*Naar deze zijde* towards this side.

*Iemand naar den weg vragen* to ask one's way of a person.

*Wat is er naar* that depends.

§ 561. **Naast**<sup>1</sup> denotes **place** and occasionally rank.

*Ik zat naast uw zuster* I sat beside your sister.

*A. woont naast ons* A. lives next door to us.

*Naast God, ben ik alles aan mijne ouders verschuldigd*  
next to God, I owe all to my parents.

§ 562. **Om** = about, at, for, on, round., *because, on account*  
*De arme vrouw had hare kinderen om zich the poor*  
woman had her children about her.

*Boos zijn om iets* to be angry about (at) a thing.

*Om Paschen* about Easter.

*Om de zestig* about sixty.

*Om twaalf uur* at twelve o'clock.

*Om iemand lachen* to laugh at some one.

*Iets laten om de moeite* to leave a thing because of the trouble.

*Thuis blijven om het slechte weer* to stay at home because of (on account of) the bad weather.

*Om iets treuren* to mourn for a thing.

*Om geld spelen* to play for money.

*Om 's keizers baard spelen* to play for love.

*Half om niet* half for nothing.

*Om der wille van* for the sake of.

*Om mijnent wil* for my sake.

*Ik doe het alleen om u* I do it for your sake only.

*Om 's Hemels wil* for Heaven's sake.

*Geacht om zijn deugden* esteemed for his virtues.

*Om den dokter zenden* to send for the doctor.

*Ik zou dit souvenir om den dood niet graag verliezen* I would not lose this keepsake on any account.

*Om het hooge gewicht* on account of the high importance.

*Om den hoek dezer straat* round the corner of this street.

*Om ons heen* round about us.

*Een doek om het hoofd* a wrapper round his head.

*Eene reis om de wereld* a voyage round the world.

*Het is om mijne eer te doen* my honour is at stake.

*Ik wed om honderd gulden* I will bet you a hundred guilders.

*Eens om de drie weken* once in three weeks.

*Om den anderen dag* every other day.

*Om het uur, om de maand* every hour, every month.

*Om het hardst loopen* to vie with another in running.

<sup>1</sup> **Naast** is also an adjective:

*De naaste bloedverwanten* the nearest relation.

*De naaste prijs* the nearest price.



*Om het leven brengen* to kill.

*Om hals raken* to be killed.

§ 563. **Onder** = under, amidst, among, between, during, in, on, over, ~~at~~, *while*

*Hij ging onder een boom zitten* he sat down under a tree.

*Onder dak zijn* to be under cover.

*Onder een zwaren last* under a heavy load.

*Onder den schijn van* under pretence of.

*Een roos onder brandnetels* a rose amidst nettles.

*Gij zijt onder vijanden* you are amidst enemies.

*Gij zijt onder vrienden* you are among friends.

*De grootste onder de levende schrijvers* the greatest among living authors.

*Wij zijn onder anderen (o. a.) in het museum geweest* amongst other places we visited the museum.

*Onder aan den brief* at the foot of the letter.

*Onder in de boekenkast* at the bottom of the book-case.

*Onder het eten* at dinner.

*Onder ons gezegd* between you and me.

*Dit blijft onder ons* this remains between us.

*Onder de preek* during the sermon.

*Onder den kerktijd* during the church-hour.

*Iets onder handen hebben* to have a thing in hand.

*Iets onder zich hebben* to have a thing in one's keeping.

*Onder den blooten hemel slapen* to sleep in the open air.

*Onder het woeden van den storm* in the midst of the storm.

*Onder de regeering van Karel V* in the reign of Charles V.

*Onder vier oogen* in private.

*Onder voorwaarde* on condition.

*Onder eede beloven* to promise on oath.

*Het is onder weg* it is on the way.

*De troepen zijn onder weg* the troops are on the way.

*Onder een flesch wijn* over a bottle of wine.

*Onder zeil gaan* to set sail; to fall asleep.

*Onder den voet raken* to be trodden down.

*Alles lag onder elkander* all lay pell-mell.

*Onder de 100 pond sterling* short of 100 pounds sterling.

*Onder het lezen van den brief* while reading the letter.

*Wij zitten hier onder ons vieren* we are here four together.

§ 564. **Op** = after, at, for, in, into, on, to, towards, upon, ~~near~~ *at*,

✓ *Op zijn Fransch* after the French fashion.

*Zijn oom is op zee* his uncle is at sea.

*Op een bal, concert* at a ball, concert.

*Op zijn aanstoken* at his instigation.

- Op zijn verzoek* at his request.  
*Op school* at school.  
*Het feest is op handen* the feast is near at hand.  
*Op dit gezegde werd hij boos* at these words he grew angry.  
*Er zijn op er op zijn best vijf* there are five at most.  
*Een blik werpen op* to glance at.  
*Op sterven liggen* to be on the point of death.  
*Op studie liggen* to be at the university.  
*Op vrije voeten* at liberty.  
*Op zulk een uur* at such an hour.  
*Op het laatst* at last.  
*Op eens* at once.  
*Op zevenjarigen leeftijd* at seven years of age.  
*Op mijn horloge* by my watch.  
*Op alles voorbereid zijn* to be prepared for everything.  
*Op het land wonen* to live in the country.  
*Op een eiland wonen* to live in an island.  
*Op straat spelen* to play in the street.  
*Op het marktplein spelen* to play in the market-place.  
*Op zijn kamer zitten* to sit in one's room.  
*Op den akker werken* to work in the field.  
*Op den duur* in the long run.  
 \* *Op zijn Engelsch* in the English way. *After the English Fashion*  
*Op deze wijze* in this manner (way).  
*Op hoop leven* to live in good hope.  
*Op den koop toe geven* to give into the bargain.  
*Het boek ligt op tafel* the book lies on the table.  
*Hij wierp het op tafel* he threw it on the table.  
*Alles viel op den grond* all things fell on the ground.  
*Zij kampeerden op de vlakte* they encamped on the plain.  
*Is hij op weg* is he on his way?  
*Hij is op reis* he is on a journey.  
*Hoelang zijt gij op de been geweest* how long have you been on your legs?  
*Dit dier leeft op het land* this animal lives on (the) land.  
*Op een eiland landen* to land on an island.  
*Op verlangen* on demand.  
*Op sprong staan om te vertrekken* to be on the point of departing.  
*Op hooge pooten* on one's high horse, in a fit of indignation.  
*Op Zondag* on Sunday.  
*Op de proef stellen* to put to the test.  
*Een jongen op school doen* to put a boy to school.  
*Een uitzondering op den regel* an exception to the rule.  
*Aanspraak hebben op* to be entitled to.  
*Op den avond* towards the evening.  
*Op zijn laatst* towards the end.

*Hij gooide den bal op het dak* he threw the ball upon the roof.

*De jongens klimmen op het dak* the boys climb upon the roof.

*Hij is op de jacht* he is out hunting.

*Op een ombacht gaan* to learn a trade.

*Op welken dag gaat gij* what day are you going?

*Op een Zondagavond* one Sunday-evening.

*Op zekeren avond* one evening.

*Op het laatste loopen* to approach the end.

*Op zijn best* hardly, at best.

*Op zijn fraaist* the finest.

### Exercises.

93.

#### The hawk and the birds.

One day I was out in the woods, and as I was looking around I saw a large hawk hovering in the air.

The hawk had seen two little birds hopping about on the ground, and it made ready to pounce on them.

After some time, I saw it spread out its wings, bend down its head, and then dart away through the air. Oh, the poor little birds!

But they had caught sight of it before it reached them. Do you see them as they fly screaming away to the woods to hide themselves?

I was glad that the hawk did not get them! but they must have got a sad fright, and I dare say they did not venture out again that day.

The hawk is a **bird of prey**. It has a hooked bill and sharp claws, and with these it catches birds and mice in the fields.

When it is hunting, it flies up in the air, looking about to see if anything is moving on the ground.

If it sees a little bird, or a mouse, it hovers over the place, till it is ready to dart down and pounce on its prey.

Can you tell me the name of another bird of prey? Yes; the eagle. It is king among birds, as the lion is the king of animals.

94.

#### The old Soldier and the Violin-player.

A poor old soldier used to play on the violin every evening in the public gardens of a great city. Beside him sat his faithful dog, holding in his mouth his master's cap, for the coppers of the passers-by.

One evening the poor man, who was bowed down with age, was sadly grieved. No one had stopped to listen to his music. There was not a single coin in his cap. He sat down on a stone and covered his face with his hands.

Just then a gentleman came up to him, and taking pity on the poor old man, he said: "Let me play on your violin a little while." He then tuned it with great care, and added, "While I play, you will take the money."

And he did play! A crowd of eager listeners soon gathered around the player. Not copper only, but silver also was freely dropped into the old soldier's cap. Indeed, the dog began to growl at its great weight.

"Who is he?" was asked by every one. He was one of the most famous violin-players in the world, who was thus using his skill to help a poor old soldier.

When this became known, the crowd cheered the violin-player. The old man looked up in wonder, and asked for God's blessing on his kind friend.

It would be hard to say who was the happier that night, — the old soldier, placed for many a day above the reach of want, — or the great violin-player, who felt in his heart the joy of having done a good deed.

95.

Kampen, 9<sup>th</sup> April, 1912.

Mr. P. Wessels, Zaandam.

Sir,

I have informed you, by my circular of the 1<sup>st</sup> inst., of the establishment of my Cigar-Manufactory, and the purpose of the present is to request you once more to favour me with your confidence.

In my factory I have made arrangements suitable to the newest manufacturing methods, and affording the possibility of meeting all the expectations of my customers. Cheap hands and advantageous purchases in raw tobaccos enable me to supply my customers at very fair prices with first rate merchandise carefully manufactured; and I should be happy if, by a small order on trial, you gave me the opportunity of convincing you of the exact truth of my assertions.

I should attach a very great value to a connection with your respected house, and, for all the orders of some importance, be able to propose you such conditions as none of my competitors will grant you.

In hopes of being very soon favoured with an order from you, I remain, Sir, with great respect and esteem,

Yours obediently,

B. Loodman.

**Gesprek.**

- Hoe ben je toch op het idee gekomen, om dat huis te nemen? Deze woning bevalt mij en mijne vrouw tamelijk goed.
- Maar het huis is in slechten staat, en de tuin is een wildernis. Voor een en ander zal weldra worden gezorgd.
- Laat de huisheer alles in orde brengen? Neen, ik zal het laten doen, maar de huisheer draagt de kosten.
- En welke voorwaarden heb je gemaakt? Heb je ook aan overplaatsing naar eene andere stad gedacht? Ik heb voor drie jaar gehuurd. In geval van overplaatsing eindigt de huur met de loopende drie maanden.
- Wat ben je van plan in den tuin te zetten? Langs de muren wat leiboompjes aan den zonkant en eenige heesters aan den anderen kant.
- In het midden moest je een of anderen mooien boom laten zetten, b. v. een bruinen beuk. Daar heb ik ook al over gedacht, maar zal die niet te veel schaduw werpen?
- Later, na heel wat jaren, ja; maar dan zult gij wel niet meer in dezen tuin werken. En wat zal ik op deze ronde bedden zetten? Mij dunkt wat viooltjes en vergeetmijnetjes.
- Zoudt gij daar achter niet wat maandroosjes planten, die bloeien bijna het heele jaar. Dat is een goed idee, dan zal ik eens naar Boskoop schrijven.
- Als je tuintje klaar is, kom ik eens kijken. Doe dat, je zult me steeds welkom zijn.

## Thirty-seventh Lesson. Zeven en dertigste Les.

### Waarom wordt men klerk?

Gij hebt zeker wel eens eene school zien uitgaan, — eene burgeravondschool, meen ik, eene armenschool zelfs, en u vermeid in het weergaloos schouwspel, dat de jeugd aanbood? Welk eene gelijkheid en welk eene verscheidenheid tevens! Een wereld in het klein! Houdt er oogen op als gij kunt. Soldaatjespelen, — de eerste stok de beste is een generaalsstaf voor dien flinken borst; paardenmennen, — wie denkt gij dat het spoedigst moe zal zijn, de koetsier

of de rossen? — scheepje zeilen, — de klomp gaat te water, als zij maar een touwtje vinden om hem aan te vieren, — wij hebben het nauwelijks opgemerkt, of de woeligsten zijn al uit ons gezicht; er schuilen matrozen, voerlieden, krijgslui in. Dáár plaagt een krullebol een aardig meisje, — maar dat zullen zij eens allen doen, dat is het algemeen menschelijke, — ik wilde u tot den bijzonderen aard, blijkbaar uit de keuze van het een of ander beroep, bepalen. — Welnu, wij zien arbeids- en handwerkslieden in menigte — toekomstige metselaars, die naar dat half voltooide gebouw kijken, of zij de evenredigheid der zwaarte tusschen balken en muren berekenden; — toekomstige hoveniers, die gadeslaan, of de lentezon de knoppen van het geboomte sedert gisteren verder heeft doen uitbotten; — toekomstige kastenmakers, die een voorbijgedragen meubel begluren, of het open moest springen voor hun nieuwsgierigen blik; — maar er zou geen einde aan zijn, zoo wij alles wilden bespieden, wat hier in den dop te zien valt.

### Use of Prepositions. (Continued.)

#### I. On the Use of some Dutch Prepositions. (End.)

§ 565. **Over** = about, above, across, at, by, (via) beyond, in, of, on, opposite, over, upon. *with, down*.

*Over iets denken, spreken* to think, speak about a thing.

*Over wat hebben zij het* what are they talking about?

*Een brug over de rivier* a bridge across the river.

*Over iemands hoofd hangen* to hang above one's head.

*Over de zestig jaar oud* above sixty years old.

*Over de honderd booten* above a hundred vessels.

*Wijn over tafel drinken* to drink wine at table.

*Zich boos maken over* to be offended at, with.

*Wij gaan over Amsterdam* we go by (via) Amsterdam.

*Over land reizen* to travel by land.

*Over de Alpen* beyond the Alps.

*Over dag reizen* to travel in the day-time.

*Zij vertrekken over acht dagen* they depart in eight days.

*Voogd over minderjarigen* guardian of minors.

*Berouw hebben over* to repent of.

*Een gesprek over den oorlog* a conversation on (the) war.

*Een boek over Rusland* a book on Russia.

*Over de kerk wonen* to live opposite the church.

*De ketel hangt over het vuur* the kettle hangs over the fire.

*Over een sloot springen* to jump over a ditch.

*Hij woont over de rivier* he lives beyond the river.

*Hij woont over ons* he lives over the way.

*Iets den winter over houden* to keep a thing over winter.

*Over de zaak praten* to talk the matter over.

*Lewes heeft over Goethe geschreven* Lewes has written upon Goethe.

*Over het geheel* upon the whole.

*In verrukking zijn over* to be enchanted with.

*Heden over acht dagen* to-day week.

*Over een week* { a week hence,  
to-day week.

*Het is over twee* it is past two.

*De trein is over zijn tijd* the train is overdue.

*Hij is tien minuten over zijn tijd* he is ten minutes late.

*Over de brug komen* to come down handsomely.

§ 566. *Sedert* may denote a **duration**, whereas *since* denotes a **point of time** only. *ago*

*Hij is mijn compagnon sedert 1870* he has been my partner since 1870.

*Sedert Paschen, Pinksteren* since Easter, Whitsuntide.

*Sedert mijne komst* since my coming.

*Sedert onheuglijke tijden* from time immemorial.

*Hij is sedert tien jaar dood* he has been dead these ten years.

*Sedert wanneer zijt gij hier* how long have you been here?

§ 567. *Te* = at, by, in, on, to.

*Te Vlissingen* at Flushing.

*Wij zullen morgen te huis (thuis) zijn* we shall be at home to-morrow.

*Terzelfder tijd* at the same time.

*Te uwen koste* at your expense.

*Iemand te voet vallen* to fall at one's feet.

*Hier zijn er drie te gelijk* here there are three { at once,  
at a time.

*Te land en ter zee* by sea and land.

*Te Londen* in London.

*Te zijner eere* in his honour.

*Hier te lande* in this country, *land*

*Te rechter tijd* in due time.

*Te bed liggen* to lie in bed.

*Te voet reizen* to travel on foot.

*Te paard zitten* to sit on horseback.

*Te kerk gaan* to go to church.

*Ten hemel opzien* to look up to heaven.

*Te bed gaan* to go to bed.

*Iemand te ontmoet gaan* to go to meet a person.

*Iets te ontmoet zien* to look forward to.

*Een schip te water laten* to launch a vessel.

*Ik moet tegen twaalfen te huis (thuis) zijn* I must be home by twelve o'clock.

*Te niet gaan* to go to wreck and ruin.

*Te niet doen* to annul.

*Te huis liggen* to lodge.

*Te scheep* aboard.

✓ *Te koop, te huur* for sale, to let.

*Te weten* viz.

§ 568. **Tegen** = against, about, at, by, in spite of, to, towards.

*Scheur het niet tegen den draad in* do not tear it against the grain.

*Tegen den muur leunen* to lean against the wall.

*Tegen alle verwachting* against all expectation.

*Het gebeurde tegen den avond* it happened about the evening hour.

*Tegen een matigen prijs* at a moderate price.

*Tegen dien tijd, tegen elf uur* by that time, by eleven.

*Tegen wil en dank* in spite of oneself.

*Iets tegen iemand zeggen* to say something to one.

*Tegen iemand spreken* to speak to one.

*Ik heb niets tegen dit voorstel* I have no objection to this proposal.

*Het is honderd tegen een* it is a hundred to one.

*Tegen den avond* towards evening.

*Tegen het einde van de maand* towards the close of the month.

*Ik heb iets tegen mosterd* I dislike mustard.

*Ik kan niet tegen bier* beer does not agree with me.

§ 569. **Tot** = to, till, among, into. *As far as* *Tot aan*

*Van Gouda tot Rotterdam* from Gouda to Rotterdam.

*Tot op den bodem* down to the bottom.

*Tot op den grond afgebrand* burnt to the ground.

*Tot aan het dak* up to the roof.

*Zij stonden tot aan de armen in het water* they were up to their arms in water.

*Tot op het hemd nat* wet to the skin.

*Tot een cent toe* to the last farthing.

*Van dag tot dag* from day to day.

*Van zes tot zeven* from six to seven.

*Zijn naam is niet tot ons gekomen* his name has not come down to us.

*Zij werden tot den laatsten man toe gedood* they were slain to a man.



*Van woorden kwam het tot slagen* from words they got to blows.

*Niet in staat tot* incapable of.

*Tot zijne eer* to his honour.

*Tot 1830, tot in dien tijd toe* till 1830, till then.

*Tot één uur* till one o'clock.

*Tot en met* blz. 20 page 20 included.

*Het behoort tot zijne hoofdverdiensten* it is among his chief merits.

*Toegang tot de spreekkamer* entrance into the parlour.

*Wij wandelden tot Wickwar* we walked as far as Wickwar.

*Tot aan den top van den berg* as high as the top of the mountain.

§ 570. *Uit* = out of, by, for, from, in, of, with.

*Vader is uit de stad* father is out of town.

*Uit den weg gaan* to go out of the way.

*Uit het raam vallen* to drop out of the window.

*Uit een glas drinken* to drink out of a glass.

*Uit het lid zijn* to be out of joint.

*Uit de mode zijn* to be out of fashion.

*Uit beleefdheid* out of politeness.

*Uit het oog, uit het hart* out of sight, out of mind.

*Uit ervaring weten* to know by experience.

*Ik zie uit zijn brief dat . . .* I see by his letter that . . .

*Uit kracht van de wet* by virtue of the law.

*Uit de hand verkoopen* to sell by private contract.

*Hij deed het uit de grap* he did it for fun.

*Uit vriendschap* for friendship's sake.

*Uit gebrek aan geld* for want of money.

*Uit vrije keus* from one's own choice.

*Zijde uit Duitschland* silk from Germany.

*Uit den grond van mijn hart* from the bottom of my heart.

*Ik weet het uit de nieuwsbladen* I know it from the papers.

*Uit vrees voor straf* from fear of punishment.

*Hij is uit Parijs* he is from Paris.

*Uit naam van uw ouders* in name of your parents.

*Hij is uit edel bloed* he is of noble blood.

*Uit een oud geslacht geboren* born of an ancient race.

*Uit klei gemaakt* made of clay.

*Iemand uit het oog verliezen* to lose sight of one.

*Uit hoofde van* on account of.

*Uit alle macht* with might and main.

*Jaar in, jaar uit* year after year.

*Ten voeten uit* full length.

*Tot - as far as*  
*Tot aan - to*  
*high as*

§ 571. **Van** = of, about, at<sup>1</sup>, by, for, from<sup>1</sup>, in<sup>1</sup>, on<sup>1</sup>, out, of, with; see also Lesson 27. I.

*De vensters van het huis* the windows of the house.

*Dit komt van uw uitstellen* this comes of your delaying.

*Dat was dom van hem* that was stupid of him.

*Dit is vriendelijk van u* this is kind of you.

*Hij kwam van zelf* he came of his own accord.

*Van zelf spreken* to be a matter of course.

*Rijk van het woekeren* rich by usury.

*Eene les van buiten leeren* to learn a lesson by heart.

*Een roman van van Lennep* a novel by van Lennep.

*Van zijn arbeid leven* to live by one's work.

*Van vreugde schreeuwen* to shout for joy.

*Drinken van harte* to drink for grief.

*Rekening geven van* to account for.

*De pannen vielen van het dak* the tiles fell from the roof.

*Van den morgen tot den avond* from morning till night.

*Zij kwamen van verre* they came from afar.

*Al het goede komt van boven* all blessings come from Heaven.

*Ik heb van mijn vriend gehoord* I have heard from my friend.

*Van huis gaan* to go from home.

*Van zijn leven* in his life.

*Ik heb er van gehoord* I have heard of it.

*Van water en brood leven* to live on water and bread.

*Misbruik maken van* to trespass on.

*Zich meester maken van* to seize upon.

*Zal er van zijn kant niets tegen zijn?* will there be no objection on his part?

*Van ganscher harte* with all my heart.

*Alles ging van zelf* all was done with the least difficulty.

*Verkleumd van kou* benumbed with cold.

*Komt hij? Hij zegt van ja.* Will he come? He says he will.

*Van daag, van avond* to-day, to-night.

*Van morgen, van den zomer* this morning, this summer.

*Van noodde hebben* to want.

*Wij verwachten hem van uur tot uur* we expect him every hour.

*Wij zijn van plan te vertrekken* we intend to start.

---

<sup>1</sup> **Van** + an adverb = at, in, on.

*Van boven* at the top; *van boven komen* to come down-stairs;  
*van achteren* at the back, from behind; *van voren* in front;  
*van binnen* on the inside.

§ 572. **Voor** = before, for, against, at, by, in front of, to; see also Lesson 27. II. *voor*

*Ik stond voor hem* I stood before him.

*Het kwam voor Paschen* it came before Easter.

*Ik zal het gaarne voor u doen* I'll do it willingly for you.

*Ik geef er een gulden voor* I will give a guilder for it.

*Ik voor mij* I, for one.

*Voor* (= *gedurende*) *acht dagen*<sup>1</sup> for eight days.

*Voor wien houdt gij mij* whom do you take me for?

*Hij vreesde voor zijn leven* he feared for his life.

*Iemand voor een Duitscher houden* to take one for a German.

*Het is goed voor kiespijn* it is good against tooth-ache.

*Ik koop het voor dezen prijs* I buy it at this rate.

*Stuk voor stuk verkoopen* to sell one by one.

*De troepen waren voor het paleis opgesteld* the troops were drawn up in front of the palace.

*Van aanbelyng voor* important to (for).

*Iemand voor een eerlijken man houden* to take one to be an honest man.

*Wat voor een man zijt gij* who are you?

*Voor den dag komen* to come forth, to appear.

*Iets voor onwaar houden* to consider a thing as not true.

§ 573. **Zonder** = without, but for, of. *zonder*

*Hij ontving ons zonder complimenten* he received us without ceremony.

*Zonder eenigen twijfel* without any doubt.

*Zonder u ware ik verloren geweest* but for you I should have been lost.

*Dit papier is zonder waarde* this paper is of no value.

## II. On the Use of some English Prepositions.

§ 574. **Across** = *dwars door, dwars, over, kruiselings*.

He travelled straight across the country *hij reisde dwars door het land*.

He handed me the paper across the table *hij overhandigde mij de courant dwars over de tafel (over de tafel heen)*.

The boys were sitting across the bench *de jongens zaten kruiselings over de bank*.

They talked across us *zij spraken voor ons heen*.

§ 575. **Beyond** = *aan gene zijde van, verder dan, boven, over*.

<sup>1</sup> Do not confound this with: *Vóór acht dagen* = *acht dagen geleden* eight days ago; *vóór zes maanden* six months ago.

The wood lies beyond the river *het bosch ligt aan gene zijde van de rivier.*

Beyond this I cannot go *verder dan dit kan ik niet gaan.*  
That is beyond my comprehension *dat is boven mijne beratting.*

We were kept beyond the usual time *wij werden over den gewonen tijd gehouden.*

Beyond dispute *buiten kijf, onbetwistbaar.*

§ 576. **By** = *door* (s. § 556), *met* (s. § 558), *van* (s. § 571).

Sometimes it answers to the loan-word **per** (= *met*).

It was sent by rail, by steamer, by post, by express  
*het werd per spoor, per stoomboot, per post, per extra post verzonden.*

To pay by the hour *per uur betalen.*

To sell by the dozen *per dozijn verkoopen.*

To learn a lesson by heart *eene les van buiten leeren.*

§ 577. **Off** = *van . . . weg, van, voor, op de hoogte van.*

Get off that chair *ga weg van dien stoel.*

To be off one's legs *van de been zijn.*

Off hand *voor de vuist, op het eerste gezicht.*

Off duty *buiten dienst.*

The vessel sunk off Flushing *de boot zonk op de hoogte van Vlissingen.*

§ 578. Of the **Prepositional phrases** we may mention the following:

**As to** = *met betrekking tot, aangaande, betreffende, wat betreft.*

As to the German novels, I'll send you some of the best  
I possess *wat de Duitsche romans aangaat (betreft) &c.*

**By means of** = *door middel van, met behulp van.*

The thieves got into our room by means of a master-key  
*de dieven verschaften zich toegang in onze kamer door middel van een looper.*

**By way of** = *bij wijze van.*

He said so by way of joke *hij zei het bij wijze van aardigheid.*

By way of apology *bij wijze van verontschuldiging.*

**For want of** = *bij gebrek aan.*

I use this term for want of a better *ik gebruik deze uitdrukking bij gebrek aan een betere.*

For want of money *bij gebrek aan geld.*

✓

**In consequence of** = *ten gevolge van, uit hoofde van.*

It is all in consequence of the war *dat is alles ten gevolge van den oorlog.*

**In favour of, on behalf of** = *ten gunste van, ten behoeve van.*

In favour of his children *ten gunste van zijne kinderen.*

On our own behalf *ten behoeve van ons zelf.*

**In the middle of** = *in het midden van*; in the midst of = *te midden van.*

In the middle of the street *in het midden van de straat.*

In the middle of December *in het midden van December.*

Between these two extremes truth lies in the middle  
*de waarheid ligt in het midden van deze twee uitersten.*

In the midst of the desert *te midden van de woestijn.*

In the midst of peace *te midden van den vrede.*

**In (de)spite of, in defiance of** = *in (ten) spijt van.*

We got wet to the skin, in spite of our umbrellas *wij werden doornat, in (ten) spijt van (or trots) onze paraplus.*

**Instead of** = *in plaats van.*

He was appointed secretary instead of our friend N.  
*hij werd tot secretaris benoemd in plaats van onzen vriend N.*

**Note.** *In plaats van* may also answer to the English in . . . stead:

N. was appointed secretary in his father's stead *hij werd tot secretaris benoemd in plaats van zijn vader.*

**Thanks to, owing to** = *dank zij.*

Thanks to his investigations, we know all about this important matter *dank zij zijne onderzoekingen, weten wij nu alles omtrent deze belangrijke zaak.*

### Exercises.

96.

We used to sit there of a Sunday. Upwards of a hundred years have elapsed since that memorable day. Of late years the traffic has considerably increased. He was made free of the City on this memorable occasion. They were married out of hand. I am out of all patience with him. His spirits were sadly out of tune. Here's to our kind hostess; more friends to her, and less need of them! Would to Heaven, this were our only ground of com-

plaint. Speak little, but let that little be to the purpose. I cannot possibly enter into that subject just now. Many a man warms into kindness with the blazing hearth of Merry Christmas. If you knew your instructions, why did you not act up to them? What's up now? I find he is well up in Grammar. English ministers often go about the country speechifying, when the house is up. Hot tears ran down his cheeks. The catchpolls were down upon him before another week had gone by. A family likeness prevailed through all, and properly speaking, they had but one character. This is a rule that will hold good through life. The most extraordinary thing is that I should live to be brought round through you. What I like above all things, is a ride across country. I feel rather stiff about the legs. He's the most expert swordsman about town. He went to town to see about a new piano for his brother.

## 97.

The house stood within a few yards of the city gate. To my knowledge, I never saw him in my life. I can tell you to an hour, how long it will last. I have tried to talk him into reason. They tried to get round me, but soon found I was one too many for them. There's a fund of good feeling about him, which crops out where we should least have expected it. Against ill chances men are ever merry: But heaviness foreruns the good event. He wore a feather in his hat. Compliments are entirely lost upon our friend. We have been at great pains to find out the truth. The hounds were at fault. I confess I am not good at descriptions of female beauty. I believe the post-chaise is ready by this. It has always been a maxim with me that one man's money is as good as another's. We had but half a dozen shillings between us. So at last we were persuaded to buy the two gross of green spectacles between us. For shame, you a sailor, and carry sorrow aboard? The writer will do what he pleases in spite of me. A parrot who, for any signs of life she had previously given, might have been a wooden bird. To keep corn over winter. They quarrelled over their liquor. When a man is on business, he should be above such trifles. He has left us evidence under his own hand that he was of a very different opinion. There were some houses of the original settlers standing within a few yards.

## 98.

Dordrecht, 4<sup>th</sup> January, 1912.

Mr. H. Schermmeester, Gouda.

Sir,

Mr. L. Stole of this place has informed us that a short

time back you established a business in Hardware, and as, without doubt, you are inclined to deal also in our articles, we beg to send you our last price-list, requesting you at the same time to examine it and, eventually, give us your orders, which we shall deem it our duty to dispatch promptly and to your entire satisfaction.

Confining ourselves to manufacture one particular kind of wares, viz. Nickered bindings, we may flatter ourselves to be able to produce articles unequalled as to their quality and for which, as you will see from our price-current, we nevertheless quote prices as low as those noted by any of our competitors.

We hope shortly to receive an order from your respected house, and are ready to transmit you a collection of patterns upon your demand.

Yours respectfully.  
De Erven Binnendijk.

99.

### **Proverbs and proverbial sayings.**

He does not know a B from a bull's foot. He is always harping upon the same string. To buy a thing for an old song. To quarrel about nothing. Bitter pills may have sweet effects. To have several strings to one's bow. A tree is known by its fruit. An oak is not felled at one chop. Rome was not built in a day. To confess to the devil. Every man for himself, and, God for us all. A word is enough to the wise. One must take time by the fore-lock. To take the food out of one's mouth. Every cock is proud of his own dunghill. Between hawk and buzzard. They live from hand to mouth. To blow hot and cold with the same breath. He that ate the cow must not worry on the tail. When two dogs are over a bone, a third will snatch it away from them. Pride goes before, and shame follows after. To throw the helve after the hatchet. To hit the nail on the head. In the absence of water one must make a shift with wine. To a rude ass a rude keeper. Tit for tat. A cobbler should stick to his last. He has got out of bed the wrong foot foremost. Cunning is better than force. Every man may meet his match. This is a rule that works both ways. Early to bed and early to rise, makes a man healthy, wealthy and wise. To add fuel to the fire. Out of sight, out of mind. To put the cart before the horse. Out of the frying pan into the fire. To seek for a needle in a hay-stack. You must cut your coat according to your cloth. This is grist to his mill. All roads lead to Rome.

**Gesprek.**

- Kent gij een goed Engelsch werk over Nederland en de Nederlanders? Tot mijn spijt niet; wel heb ik een vrij goed werk gelezen over een gedeelte van ons land.
- Zeker een beschrijving van de provincies Holland en de groote steden, die aan het spoorwegnet liggen? Volstrekt niet; het grootste deel van het werk is gewijd aan eene minder bekende streek van Friesland.
- En hoe heet dat boek? Kan ik het van u niet eens te leen krijgen? Met alle genoegen. Ik bedoel Doughty's Friesland Meres and through the Netherlands.
- Zoo, dus niet uitsluitend over de Friesche meren! En hoe is het oordeel van dezen schrijver over ons land? Over het algemeen vrij gunstig; de schrijver heeft in korten tijd veel gezien, en wat meer zegt, doorgaans goed gezien.
- Dat verheugt mij, want sommige vreemde schrijvers weten vaak gekke dingen van ons land en zijne bewoners te vertellen. Soms maar al te gek, vooral voor zoogenoemde ontwikkelde menschen, die in weinige uren of in een paar dagen door het heele land reizen.
- Maar zulke boeken worden zeker niet veel gekocht en stellig nog minder gelezen? Helaas maar al te veel! Sommige menschen zien gaarne hun eigen land ophemelen ten koste vaneen anderland.
- Morgen kom ik Doughty's werk halen. Goed, het ligt te uwer beschikking.

**Thirty-eight Lesson. Achten dertigste Les.****Waarom wordt men klerk? (Vervolg.)**

En echter, het is aardig naar het gindsche groepje te kijken: een der jongens heeft een stuk krijt gevonden, en zie eens, hoe hij teekent, hoe hij karikatureert! Hij hinkt aan hetzelfde euvel, waaraan wij allen lijden; hij overdrijft! Die neus van den meester steekt den draak met alle proportie. Doch, geen nood, er zijn critici om hem heen, recensenten voor ieder, die zijn werk der beschouwing van het algemeen prijsgeeft; wat is billijker? — Indien gij uw aanstaanden timmerman vindt in de drie voet hooge wijsheid, die dáár een stroowisch tot passer bezigt, vergun mij op te hebben met den vluggerd, welke een weinig verder een vlinder naloopt: hij zal blaken van lust om te onder-



nemen; hij zal koopman worden; hij zal wagen en winnen. Winkeliërsgeest, die te huis blijft zitten en verbeidt, ik zie hem te over bij dien knikkerenden hoop. „Valsch doen“ hoor ik roepen. Arme jongen! die u zoo boos maakt over 't gepleegde onrecht; die den kleinen bedrogene de hand boven 't hoofd houdt; die, nu ge hem hebt gewroken, zoo ernstig naar den blauwen hemel opziet, toekomstige dichter! wat deedt ge bij het spel? Hij heeft geen antwoord, verloren als hij is in de beschouwing eener bloem, die aan den weg groeit; liefde voor het schoone bij zin voor het edele, ik mag dien jongen. — Toch verlies ik hem uit het oog, om den wil van gindschen manke; gebrekkige jeugd is zulk een deerniswaardig schouwspel! — Maar ge hebt gelijk, hij kan kleermaker of schoenenflik worden, en als hij geld en geest heeft, zoo goed een graad aan eene der drie faculteiten verwerven, als een van deze rechtsgeleerden, geneesheeren of leeraars *in spe*. —

### Use of Prepositions. (Continued.)

#### III. List of Verbs and Adjectives used with Prepositions.

§ 579. The following list of verbs and adjectives will give further assistance in the proper application of the prepositions.

<i>Aandringen op</i>	insist on,	upon	<i>beantwoorden aan</i>	answer to
<i>aanzien bij</i>	call on,	at	<i>bedelen om</i>	beg for
<i>aangenaam voor</i>	pleasant to		<i>bedreren in</i>	skilful at, in
<i>aankomen te</i>	arrive at		<i>beducht voor</i>	apprehensive of
<i>aanspraak hebben op</i>	entitled to		<i>bedwelmd door</i>	stunned with
<i>aanvangen met</i>	set about		<i>begruofd met</i>	possessed of
<i>aarden naar</i>	take after		<i>begaan met</i>	concerned for
<i>adresseeren aan</i>	direct to		<i>begeerig naar</i>	eager of
<i>afhangen van</i>	depend on,	upon	<i>behoeden voor</i>	preserve from
<i>afhankelijk van</i>	dependent on		<i>behooren aan, bij, tot</i>	belong to
<i>afkeerig van</i>	averse to		<i>bekkeeren tot</i>	convert to
<i>afleiden uit</i>	infer from		<i>zich beklagen over</i>	complain of
<i>afpersen van</i>	extort from		<i>zich bekommeren over</i>	trouble
<i>afreizen naar</i>	depart for			about
<i>afstammen van</i>	descend from		<i>bekommerd over</i>	concerned at,
<i>aftrekken van</i>	abstract from			about
	subtract from		<i>bekoord door</i>	charmed with
<i>afwezig van</i>	absent from			enchanted with
<i>afwijken van</i>	depart from		<i>bekwaam tot</i>	qualified for
<i>arm aan</i>	poor in.		<i>benoemd tot</i>	appointed
			<i>bepalen op</i>	fix upon
<i>Bang voor, van</i>	afraid of		<i>berekenen op</i>	compute at
<i>barsten van</i>	burst with		<i>berispen wegens</i>	blame for

*beroemd door, om, wegens*  
famous for

*zich beroemen op* boast of

*zich beroepen op* appeal to

*berooven van* {  
deprive of  
rob of  
strip of

*berouw hebben over* repent of  
*berucht door, om, wegens*  
notorious for

*beschermen voor* screen from

*beschermen tegen* {  
shield from  
protect against

*beschikken over* dispose of

*beslissen over* decide on

*besluiten tot* {  
determine on  
resolve on, upon

*besluiten uit* conclude from

*bestaan in* consist in

*bestaan uit* consist of

*betrokken in* concerned in

*beven van* {  
tremble with  
shake with  
shiver with

*beroegd tot* qualified for

*bevorderen tot* make (s. § 354)

*bevreesd voor, van* afraid of  
*berijdt van* rid of

*berijden van* deliver from

*bewaren voor* preserve from

*bezig aan* occupied with

*bezwaard met* oppressed with

*bijdragen tot* {  
contribute to  
tend to

*bijten naar* bite at

*bleek van* pale with

*blaffen naar* bark at

*blijde over* glad of, at

*blind aan (een oog)* blind of

*blind van* blind with

*blind voor* blind to

*blozen van, over* blush at, for

*boos op* angry with

*boos over* angry at

*branden van* burn with

*buigen voor* bow to.

*Condoleeren, iemand con-*  
*leeren met* condole with a  
person for.

*Deelnemen aan* partake of

*denken aan* think of

*denken over* think about

*dienen tot (niets)* be of (no)  
use

*doelen op* aim at

*dol van* mad with

*doof aan* deaf of

*doof van, met* deaf with

*doof voor* deaf to

*doordringen in* penetrate into

*dorsten naar* thirst after, for

*drinken op* drink to

*dronken van* intoxicated with

*droomen van* dream of

*duizelig van* giddy with.

*Eerzuchtig naar* ambitious of  
*eischen van* require of

*zich ergeren over* {  
be offended  
at, with

*ervaren in* skilful at, in.  
be vexed at

*Gebrand zijn op* {  
be eager for  
be fond of  
mad of

*gebruikelijk bij* usual with

*gekweld door* tormented with

*gelegen aan* situated on

*gelooven aan (iets)* to believe  
in

*gepast voor* suitable to

*gerust over, omtrent* easy about

*geschikt tot, voor* fit for

*getroffen door* {  
moved at

struck with

*getrouw aan* faithful to

*geven aan* give to

*geven om* care for

*geroelig voor* sensible of

*geroelloos voor* insensible to

*glimlachen over, om* smile at

*glinsteren van* sparkle with  
*gloeien van* glow with  
*gluren naar* peep at  
*goed voor (iemand) kind to*  
 (one)

*gooien naar* throw at  
*grenzen aan* border on, upon  
*gretig naar* greedy of  
*grijpen naar* { grasp at  
                   { snatch at  
*grommen over* grumble at  
*grootsch op* proud of.

*Handelen overeenkomstig* act  
 up to

*hangen aan* hang on  
*happen naar* snap at  
*heilig door, van* sacred from  
*herinneren aan* remind of  
*herkennen aan* know by  
*herstellen van* recover from  
*hijgen naar* pant for

*zich hoeden voor* { beware of  
                           { guard against

*hooren van* { hear from  
                   { hear about, of  
*hopen op (iemand)* place one's  
 hope in one

*hopen op (iets)* hope for  
*huiveren van* shudder with.

*IJdel op* vain of  
*ingenomen met* pleased with.

*Jaloersch op* jealous of.

*Kiezen tot* { choose . . .  
                   { choose for

*kijken naar* look at  
*klagen over* complain of  
*kleven aan* stick to

*kloppen aan* { knock at  
                   { rap at  
*kloppen van* palpitate with  
*knabbelen aan* nibble at  
*knielen voor* kneel to  
*knikken tegen* nod to

*koken van* boil with  
*koopen van* buy from, of  
*kwellen door (iets)* worry with  
*kwijnen om* pine for.

*Lachen om* laugh at  
*lam aan* lame of  
*landen aan* land on  
*lastig (voor)* troublesome to  
*leenen van* borrow of, from  
*leven van* { feed on, upon  
                   { live on  
*letten op* attend to  
*lijden aan* suffer from  
*losmaken uit* disentangle from  
*luisteren naar* listen to.

*Merkwaardig voor, wegens*  
 remarkable for  
*mikken op* aim at  
*misnoegd met, over* displeased  
 with

*moede van* { sick of  
                   { weary of  
                   { tired with, of  
*mompelen over* mutter at.

*Nadenken over* { ponder on  
                       { reflect on, upon  
*naijverig op* jealous of  
*nat van wet* with  
*neergedrukt door* oppressed  
 with  
*noodlottig voor* fatal to  
*noodzakelijk voor* necessary  
 for, to.

*Omkomen van* perish with  
*omringd door* surrounded by,  
 with  
*onafhankelijk van* independent  
 of  
*onafscheidelijk van* inseparable  
 from  
*onbekend met* ignorant of  
*onderhevig aan* liable to [of  
*onderrichten van* inform about,

*onderscheiden van* distinguish  
from

*ongerust over* uneasy about  
*ongeroelig voor* insensible to  
*onschuldig aan* innocent of  
*ontbloot van* void of  
*ontheyen van* relieve from  
*zich onthouden van* abstain  
from

*ontkomen aan* escape from  
*ontlast van* discharged from  
*ontrukken aan* tear from

*ontslaan van* { absolve from  
release from

*ontslagen van* exempt from  
*ontstaan uit* arise from

*ontvlamd van* inflamed with  
*onverschillig voor* indifferent to

*onwetend van* ignorant of  
*onzichtbaar voor* invisible to

*oordeelen naar* judge from  
*oordeelen over* { decide on  
judge of

*opgetogen over* overjoyed at,  
with

*opkomen bij (iemand)* occur  
to (one)

*opmaken uit* gather from  
*oprecht jegens* true to [about

*overeenvolgen omtrent* agree  
*overeenvolgen met* agree with

*overeenvolgend met* agreeable to  
*overeenstemmen met* agree with

*overstelt door* overwhelmed  
with

*overtuigen van* convince of

*overweldigd door* { oppressed  
with, over-

whelmed with

*Passend aan* suitable to  
*peinzen over* reflect on, upon

*pikken naar* peck at  
*pochen op* boast of

*praten over* talk about, of  
*preken tot, voor* preach to.

*Rechtvaardig jegens* just to  
*redden uit* rescue from

*regeeren over* { reign over  
rule over

*rekenen op* depend on, upon  
*rieken naar* { savour of  
smell of

*rijk aan* rich in  
*rijk zijn aan* abound in, with

*rillen van* { shiver with  
shudder with

*roemen op* glory in  
*rukken uit* snatch from.

*Samengesteld uit* composed of  
*schadelijk voor* hurtful to

*schatten op* estimate at  
*scheiden van* part from

*schenden aan* bestow on, upon  
*schertsen over* jest at

*schieten op* { shoot at  
fire at

*zich schikken naar* comply with  
*schoppen naar* kick at

*schreeuwen om* { cry for  
*schreien om* { cry for

*schreien van* cry with  
*schrikken bij, op* start at

*schuimbekken van* foam with  
*schuldig aan* guilty of

*sidderen van* quake with  
*slaan naar* strike at

*slingeren naar* hurl at  
*smaak voor* taste for

*smaken naar* { savour of  
taste of

*smartelijk voor* grievous to  
*smijten naar* throw at

*smoren door, van* { smother with  
stifle with

suffocate with  
*snakken naar* gasp for

*spotten met* { jest at  
scoff at

*spreken over* speak about  
*spreken tot* speak to

*staren naar* stare at  
*staren op* gaze on  
*sterven aan* die of, from  
*sterven van* die with, of  
*stijf van* stiff with  
*stikkendoor, van* { smother with  
                                   stifle with  
                                   suffocate with  
*stooten aan* push at  
*strekken tot* tend to  
*streven naar* { aim at  
                           aspire at  
                           strive after  
*strijden tegen* contend with  
*strijdig met* opposite to.

*Teleurgesteld in* disappointed in  
*terugdeinzen voor* to shrink  
                           from

*tevreden met, over* { contended  
                                   with  
                                   satisfied  
                                   with

*tikken aan* tap at  
*toegevend jegens* indulgent to  
*toekijken op* look after  
*toestemmen in* consent to  
*trachten naar* aim at  
*treuren over* mourn for  
*trotsch op* proud of  
*trouweloos jegens* false to  
*twijfelen aan* doubts of.

*Uitgeput van* { exhausted with  
                           faint with  
*uitgesloten van* excluded from  
*uitvaren tegen* rail at, against  
*uitbreiden over* { descant on, upon  
                           dwell on  
                           expatiate on  
*uitzonderen van* except from.

*Valsch jegens* false to  
*vatbaar voor* liable to  
*veilig voor* { safe from  
                           secure from  
*veranderen in* convert into

*verbaasd over* amazed at  
*verbannen uit* banish from  
*verbergen voor* { conceal from  
                           hide from  
*zich verbergen voor* hide oneself  
                           from

*verbitterd op* { embittered at,  
                           against  
                           irritated against  
*verblinden door* dazzle with  
*verdedigen tegen* defend from,  
                           against  
*verdeelen in* divide into  
*verdenken van* suspect of  
*verdiept in* intent on  
*verdoofd door* stunned with  
*vereenigen met* { annex to  
                           unite to, with  
*vergelijken met* compare to,  
                           with

*zich verheugen over* rejoice at  
*verhit door* inflamed with  
*verkiezen boven* prefer to  
*verkleund van* benumbed with  
*verkwikt door* refreshed with  
*verlangen naar* { long for  
                           wish for  
*zich verlaten op* rely on, upon  
*verleid door (iets)* { tempted  
*verlokt door (iets)* { with  
*verliefd op* { amorous of  
                           in love with  
*verlossen uit* release from  
*verlossen van* deliver from  
*vermaard om, wegens* famous  
                           for  
*vermaken met* amuse with  
*zich vermaken over* make merry  
                           over, enjoy  
*vermoeid van* fatigued with  
*zich verontschuldigen wegens*  
                           apologise for  
*verrast door* surprised at  
*verre van* far from  
*verrukt over* delighted with  
*verschillen van* differ from,  
                           with

*verschillend van* different from  
*verschoonen van* excuse from  
*verschrikken van* frighten with  
*vertrekken naar* { set out for  
                               { start for  
*vertrouwen op* } confide in  
*vertrouwen stellen op* }  
*verwijderd van* { distant from  
                               { remote from  
*verwonderd door* surprised at  
*verwonderd over* astonished at  
*zich verwonderen over* wonder  
                               at  
*vestigen op* fix upon  
*vluchten voor* fly before, from  
*zich voelen met* feed on, upon  
*voegen bij* annex to  
*voldaan over* satisfied with  
*volharden in* persist in  
*voorkomend jegens* kind to  
*voorstellen aan, bij* introduce  
                               to  
*voorteloeien uit* result from  
*voorzien van* { furnish with  
                               { provide with  
                               { supply with  
*vorderen van* require of  
*vragen naar* { ask after  
                               { inquire after  
*vragen om* ask for  
*vragen omtrent* inquire about

*vragen over* question on  
*vreezen voor* fear for  
 *vriendelijk jegens* kind to  
*vrij van* { exempt from  
                               { free from  
*vuren op* fire at.

*Waarschuwen voor* warn  
                               against  
*wachten op* wait for  
*zich wachten voor* { beware of  
                               { guard against  
*wanhopen aan* despair of  
*weenen om, van* weep with,  
                               for  
*weenen over* weep at  
*weergalmen van* resound with  
*wekken uit* rouse from  
*zich wenden tot* apply to  
*werpen naar* throw at  
*wijzen naar* point at  
*wonen aan* live by.

*Zinspelen op* { allude to  
                               { hint at  
*zoeken naar* { look for  
                               { seek for  
*zondigen tegen* trespass against  
*zorgen voor* provide for  
*zorgvuldig voor* careful of  
*zuiveren van* cleanse from.

#### IV. List of English Words with Prepositions.

§ 580. The following words of frequent occurrence have a preposition in English, whereas the corresponding words are used in Dutch without any preposition.

Add to { *bijvoegen*  
           { *vermeerderen*  
 admit of *toelaten*  
 agree to *aannemen*  
 agree on *bepalen*  
 amount to *bedragen*  
 answer for *verantwoorden*  
 apply to *toepassen*  
 approve of *goedkeuren*  
 attend on, upon *bedienen*.

Bear with { *dulben*  
               { *verdragen*  
 bestow upon, on *verleenen*,  
                               *schenken*.

Call for *bestellen, afhalen*  
 call to *toeroepen*  
 charge for (be) *rekenen*  
 charge with *opdragen*  
 cheat of *afzetten*

confer on, upon { *schenken*  
                           *verleenen.*

Deal with *behandelen*  
 deprive of *ontnemen*  
 be disappointed in *tegenvallen*  
 dispense with *ontberen.*

Exclusive of *uitsluitend*  
 extricate from { *uithelpen*  
                           *uitredden.*

Fit on *aanpassen*  
 fit out *uitrusten*  
 fit up *in orde brengen.*

Gape at { *aangapen*  
 gaze at { *aanstaren*  
 gaze on, upon *strak aanzien*  
 glance at *vluchtig aanzien*  
 grieve at { *betreuren, grieren*  
                   *leed doen*  
 guess at *gissen, vermoeden.*

Hesitate at *aarzelen*  
 hinder from *beletten, hinderen*  
 hunt after { *najagen*  
                   *overal zoeken*  
 hunt down *ontdekken, opsporen.*

Impose upon *bedriegen*  
 inferior to *minder dan*  
 inform against (*iemand*)  
                   *aanklagen*  
 inquire into *onderzoeken.*

Laugh at *uitlachen*  
 lay hold of *aangrijpen*

look about *rondkijken, rond-  
 zien*

look after *nagaan*  
 look at *aankijken*  
 look into *onderzoeken.*

Meet with *ontmoeten.*

Object to *tegenwerpen, ergens  
 op tegen hebben*  
 oppose to *tegenoverstellen*  
 opposite to *tegenover.*

Part with *wegdoen*  
 persist in *volhouden*  
 play at (cards &c.) (*kaart*)  
                   *spelen*  
 ponder on *overdenken*  
 prevent from *verhinderen.*

Seize upon *aangrijpen*  
 send for *laten halen*  
 shake hands with (*iemand*)  
                   *de hand schudden*  
 smile on (*iemand*) *vriendelijk  
 toelachen*  
 snarl at *toesnauwen*  
 snatch from *onttrukken*  
 sneer at *minachtend glimlachen*  
 stare at *aanstaren.*

Trespass on *overtreden.*

Wait on *bedienen*  
 weep for *bevenen*  
 wink at *oogluikend toelaten*  
 worthy of *waardig.*

### Exercises.

100.

### The Shark.

A dreadful instance of the ferocity of the shark once occurred at the Society Islands in the Pacific. Upwards of thirty natives were passing from one island to another in a large vessel, consisting of two canoes fastened together side by side. Being overtaken by a storm, the canoes were

torn apart, and singly they could not be made to float upright. In vain the crew attempted to balance them. They were every moment overturned.

The men then formed a hasty raft of such loose boards and spars as were in the canoes, and thus attempted to drift ashore. The raft was so deep in the water that the waves washed above the knees of the poor islanders.

Tossed about thus, they soon became exhausted with hunger and fatigue; and at last the dreaded sharks began to collect around them. Soon these terrible creatures had the boldness to attack the men, and to drag one and another from the raft. The men had no weapons of defence, and they thus became an easy prey.

The number and boldness of the monsters every moment increased. The forlorn wretches on the raft were one by one torn off, until only two or three remained. The raft, lightened of its load, then rose to the surface, and thus placed the survivors beyond the reach of their terrible foes. The tide at length bore the men to one of the islands, where they landed, and told of the fate of their companions.

#### 101.

### Catching Sharks.

Once the sailors on board a ship were allowed by their captain to try to catch a shark that had been following them for several days. A strong iron hook was fastened to a chain, and a piece of meat was fixed on it. Then a long rope was attached to the chain.

When all was ready the bait was lowered into the sea in sight of the shark, which was seen gliding along near the surface of the water. In a moment there was a quick movement on the part of the fish. Down, down it sank in the clear water, and swam right below the ship. Turning on its back, it opened wide its jaws and swallowed both bait and hook.

A strong pull at the rope by the sailors fastened the hook deep in the shark's body. At once the creature struggled desperately to get free. But the rope was strong, and the men held fast and pulled with a will. The shark was caught! at last, and killed. Then once more the ship spread her sails to the breeze, and bounded on her way across the sea. This method of catching the shark is often practised on board ships sailing in the Tropics.



102.

Utrecht, 2<sup>nd</sup> May, 1912.

Messrs. Hermans &amp; Co., Leiden.

Gentlemen,

The 10 Bales "Java-Speck-Coffee" invoiced in your favour of 21<sup>st</sup> ult., arrived here yesterday, and were examined by myself at once.

To my regret I must inform you that the said coffee does not by any means come up to the said sample, and that I cannot understand how you were able to recommend that merchandise as something remarkably good. The coffee lies before me, which is rather calculated to drive away than to attract customers, and I have judged it superfluous to examine the coffee respecting its taste; for even in case that its taste is excellent, it is scarcely merchantable on account of its poor appearance, in particular in a recently established house.

Although I am very sorry to be obliged to write to you such things in managing the first business in which we have engaged, I cannot help requesting you to dispose of the coffee in another way; I should not be able to accept it even at a lower price.

In order that you may convince yourselves of my having grounds to complain, I send you one half of the sample you sent me and, besides, a sample taken from the bale No. 201; even without being a connoisseur, any one must observe immediately that the two coffees differ very much.

The affair is disagreeable to me, inasmuch as I am just in want of the sort in question, and I request you immediately to send me:

1 Bale Java Coffee fine blue No. 26 at 63, by the fast train. If it suits my turn, I shall order greater quantities.

Expecting your early answer, I am, Gentlemen,

Yours faithfully  
P. J. Meulenaar.

103.

Leiden, 4<sup>th</sup> May, 1912.

Mr. P. J. Meulenaar, Utrecht.

Sir,

We are very sorry that you are not satisfied with our "Java-Speck-Coffee", and must admit that the sample which you sent us together with your favour of the 2<sup>nd</sup> inst., is of quite another quality than the original sample. Considering that, to our knowledge, we have no coffee agreeing with the sample which you have sent us, we cannot account for the

fact than by supposing that one or several bales of inferior quality have found their way into the lot bought by us; and it appears that unfortunately it is just to your store that such bales have fallen; we are very sorry for it.

As we could not understand from your letter whether it is the bale 201 alone or all 10 bales that you have opened we request you to open them all, in case that you have not yet done so, and to let us know what you have found. It is not likely at all that the 9 other bales should differ from the original sample. If such is not the case, we shall dispose of the whole parcel, and at once send you the quality you have desired. But in order to supply you for immediate wants, we send you a bale "Java-Speck-Coffee" No. 27, to-day by the mail-train, free of charges.

Looking forward to your information, we subscribe ourselves, Sir,

Yours respectfully  
Hermans & Co.

104.

Utrecht, 7<sup>th</sup> May, 1912.

Messrs. Hermans & Co., Leiden.

Gentlemen,

I am happy to inform you that the presumption you expressed to me in your favour of the 4<sup>th</sup> of May has turned out to be well founded, inasmuch as we have found no more than 2 bales of inferior quality, Nos 201 and 206; the 8 other bales come up to the sample, and I keep them, — asking you at the same time to dispose of the 2 bales of inferior quality.

Awaiting the rectification of your invoice, I am, Gentlemen, with great esteem,

Yours truly  
P. J. Meulenaar.

### Gesprek.

Welk Nederlandsch werk wordt wel het meest ge- lezen?	Zonder twijfel Hildebrands Camera Obscura (1839).
---	--

Is Hildebrand niet een pseu- doniem?	Ja, de schrijver is de in 1903 overleden Nicolaas Beets.
Hoe weet gij, dat dit werk het meest gelezen wordt?	Omdat er thans reeds vijf en twintig drukken zijn verschenen.

Dat wil wat zeggen voor een klein land als Nederland! En in den vreemde wordt het zeker nauwelijks ge- lezen?	Het oorspronkelijke waar- schijnlijk zelden, maar er zijn vertalingen van in het Fransch, Duitsch en Engelsch.
---	--

Mij dunkt, dat het geen gemakkelijk werk moet zijn, de Camera Obscura te vertalen.

Sommige uitdrukkingen zal men wel in geen andere taal kunnen weergeven; maar is dat niet met elk boek het geval?

Dan zou de Camera den vreemdeling zeker een goed kijkje geven in onze eigenaardige levenswijze, althans in die onzer ouders!

Begint men thans de Nederlandsche taal in het buitenland meer te beoefenen dan vroeger?

Zoo, dat wist ik niet, dat onze taal van zoo groot wetenschappelijk belang is.

Zeker niet; zelfs de beste vertalingen laten te wenschen over; soms zijn geheele zinnen weggelaten, omdat de vertalers er geen raad mee wisten.

Ik geloof, dat een gewone roman weinig verliest, als hij goed vertaald is, maar de Camera is een schildering van echt Hollandsche zeden en gebruiken.

Stellig is dit werk meer daarvoor geschikt dan een half dozijn beschrijvingen van menschen, die slechts eenige uren of dagen in Nederland geweest zijn.

Zeker, men begint in te zien, dat het Nederlandsch onmisbaar is voor eene wetenschappelijke studie der Germaansche talen.

Zij vormt een schakel van den keten, die Duitschland met Engeland verbindt.

## Thirty-ninth Lesson. Negen en dertigste Les.

### Waarom wordt men klerk? (Slot.)

Doch, zeg mij, hebt gij in die bonte wemeling van standen, in die wereld in het klein, ergens een toekomstigen kantoorbediende gezien? Helaas, neen! Er ligt te weinig poëzie in dien toestand, dan dat hij den onbevangen blik der jeugd zou kunnen aanlokken. Stel u de jonkheid vóór, zoo als ge wilt, onder den invloed van begrippen, aan den natuurstaat verwant, of alreeds beheerscht door den zin, die onze beschaving kenschetst. Het werktuigelijk beroep belooft zoomin geluk als genot; het waarborgt even weinig vrijheid als de schadeloosstellingen voor deze: weelde, gezag, roem. Denk niet, dat ik der volksjeugd zoo groote wijsbegeerte toeschrijf, dat zij zich van die oorzaak bewust is, dat zij er zich reden van geeft. Verre van daar. Maar des ondanks moet gij als ik dikwijls hebben opgemerkt, dat

zij slechts sympathie over heeft voor alles, waarin kracht schuilt, dat de populairste beelden tevens de onafhankelijkste zijn. Het is of in den boezem des volks het bewustzijn der oorspronkelijke bestemming van het mannelijk karakter wordt omgedragen: ontwikkeling aller krachten, aller gaven. — Knecht — klerk — hofmeester — hoveling — hebt gij ooit een jongen ontmoet, die u zeide, dat hij een dier vier dingen wilde? Allen leeren spoedig genoeg — in de laagste kringen het spoedigst, — dat er iets, dat er veel van de vrijheid moet worden opgeofferd, om den wille van het geld; — maar er geheel afstand van te doen, maar zich zelfverloochening ten taak te stellen, en dat wel een gansch leven lang, dit is eerst in lateren leeftijd het gevolg of van nooddwang, of van dweeperij, of in exceptioneele toestanden, van deugd.

(E J Potgieter.)

### Construction. *Woordschikking* [*voortzetting*].

§ 581. Dutch construction differs very much from English, as the student may have observed already in some of the foregoing examples. Attentive reading of the best authors will be a good help in learning this part of the Dutch grammar, as the principal rules only can be stated here. See also Lesson 5, 23, 25.

#### I. The Principal or Simple Sentence.

§ 582. In the regular order, the subject stands in the **first** place, the **verb** (in simple tenses) in the **second**, and the **direct object** in the **third**.

*Mijn broeder (Ik) ontving een brief* my brother (I) received a letter.

§ 583. With compound tenses the complement of the auxiliary, be it an Infinitive or a Participle, stands at the end of the sentence.

*Ik zal een brief ontvangen* I shall receive a letter.

*Ik heb een brief ontvangen* I have received a letter.

§ 584. When there are two objects in a sentence, the dative object precedes the accusative object

*Hij heeft mijn broeder een langen brief geschreven.*

*Wij hebben hem (D.) het nieuws (A.) medegedeeld.*

§ 585. When both objects are pronouns, the smaller comes first; when both are monosyllabic, the **Accusative** precedes the **Dative**.

*Ik heb hem (D.) alles (A.) medegedeeld.*

*Zeg het (A.) hem (D.). Hebt gij het hem geschreven?*

§ 586. The indirect object follows the direct object.

*Ik heb de boeken aan mijn vriend gezonden.*

*Hij raadpleegde zijn broeder bij alle gelegenheden.*

§ 587. Adverbs of **manner** follow the direct object.

*Hij ontving mij zeer vriendelijk.*

*Hij heeft mij zeer vriendelijk ontrangen.*

*Hebt gij het hem beleefd gevraagd?*

§ 588. Adverbs and adverbial expressions of **time**<sup>1</sup>, take the third place, immediately after the predicate or auxiliary.

*Wij zijn onlangs naar Amsterdam gegaan.*

*Wij zullen in een uur terug zijn.*

Except when the object is a personal pronoun without a preposition.

*Hebt gij **hem** gisteren gezien? Neen, ik zal **hem** morgen gaan bezoeken.*

§ 589. Adverbs and adv. expressions of **place** are put at the end of a sentence, with compound tenses they precede the Participle.

*Waar waart gij toch? Men zocht u overal.*

*Men heeft u overal gezocht.*

§ 590. The negation **niet** follows the direct object, but **precedes** the adverbial adjuncts.

*Mijn broeder wint het proces niet, zal het proces niet winnen, heeft het proces niet gewonnen.*

*Ga niet uit in zulk weer. Zij gaan niet naar A.*

§ 591. In questions **niet** sometimes precedes the direct object: *Hebt gij niet het recht zoo te spreken?*  
But: *Heeft uw broeder het proces niet gewonnen?*

§ 592. When prefixes of separable compound verbs are detached from the verb, they are placed at the end of the clause.

*Hij nam zijn hoed af en deed zijn handschoenen uit.*

*Schrijf dezen brief nog eens over!*

<sup>1</sup> A simple adverb of time always precedes an adv. expression of time.

*Komt gij morgen om 4 uur? Neen, ik ga nooit 's middags uit, maar wel 's avonds.*

## Inversion.

§ 593. As in English the regular arrangement of words is often **inverted** by removing one of the parts of speech from its usual place.

The **inversion** of the **subject** and **verb** appears almost as in English.

*Geloofst gij het? Was hij maar hier!*  
*Intusschen was de lente aangebroken.*

§ 594. The **object** is inverted to lay more stress upon it; the subject is then placed after the verb or after the auxiliary. Cf.:

*Ik heb dezen brief niet geschreven, — **dezen brief** heb ik niet geschreven.*  
*Hij heeft den brief, maar niet de boeken ontrangen — **den brief** heeft hij ontrangen, maar **de boeken** niet.*

§ 595. When **adverbs** or **adv. expressions** are inverted, the verb (or auxiliary) precedes the subject.

*Langzaam ging hij naar huis terug.*  
*Onder een hevige hagelbui kwamen wij in de stad.*

**Note.** As in English a sentence may be expressed in various ways, according to the stress laid upon the words. Cf.:

1. *Wij hebben nog nooit zulke wonderlijke dingen hier gezien.*
2. ***Zulke wonderlijke dingen** hebben wij hier nog nooit gezien.*
3. ***Hier** hebben wij zulke wonderlijke dingen nog nooit gezien.*
4. ***Nog nooit** hebben wij zulke wonderlijke dingen hier gezien.*

## II. The Compound Sentence.

## A. Co-ordinate compound sentences.

§ 596. Co-ordinating sentences (*nevenschikkende zinnen*) may be placed beside each other without any connection or connected with other words: demonstrative pronouns and conjunctions. The place of the different parts of speech will be seen from the following examples.

*Ga maar langzaam door, ik volg zoo dadelijk. De stoomfluit weerklonk, de trein zette zich in beweging. — Voltaire en Napoleon waren twee beroemde mannen; deze streed met het zwaard, gene met de pen. Rijkdom en geluk gaan niet altijd samen, dit zien wij vaak in het dagelijksch leven. — De zon verdween aan den horizon en de duisternis viel plotseling in.*

*Hij kon niet komen, want er was geen boot meer om dien tijd. Ik verwacht nog bezoek; daarom moet ik thuis blijven. Deze leerling is niet lui, maar integendeel zeer vlijtig. Het is waar of het is niet waar. Ik was wel op hare komst voorbereid, desniettemin voelde ik mij bij haar verschijnen eenigszins verlegen.*

### B. Compound sentences with subordinate clauses.

§ 597. Compound sentences with subordinate clauses (*ondergeschikte zinnen*) consist of a **principal** sentence (*hoofdzin*) and a **subordinate** clause (*bijzin*). They are connected by relative pronouns, relative or interrogative conjunctions or adverbs and subordinate conjunctions.

§ 598. The **subordinate clauses** are characterised by the following particulars:

The verb stands at the end.

*Dit is de man, waarmede (met wien) uw vader sprak.*

*Er was reeds veel gebeurd, toen de revolutie uitbrak.*

In compound **tenses** the auxiliary generally follows the participle.

*Dat is de man, van wien ik gesproken heb.*

*Dat is de reden, dat (waarom) hij gezwezen heeft.*

*Hier is de eigenaar van het hotel, waarin ik mijn intrek heb genomen.*

*Wij gaan naar het koffiehuis, waar ik gisteren geweest ben (ben geweest).*

The verbs *willen*, *mogen*, *moeten* etc. are placed before the infinitive.

*Geloofst gij, dat hij zou kunnen liegen?*

*Hij vroeg mij, of ik met hem mee wilde gaan.*

In **separable compound verbs** the prefix is not separated.

*Hij vroeg mij, of ik met hem meeging.*

*Weet gij, of hij lang zal uitblijven?*

The objects are placed between the subject and the verb.

*Hij wist niet, of gij deze boeken nog aan uw broeder moest verzenden.*

*Zij hebben op ons verzoek vergeten te antwoorden, 'tgeen wij hun altijd kwalijk genomen hebben.*

§ 599. The **subordinate** sentence may be the first member as well as the second; if it comes first, the

subject of the second (the principal sentence) is placed after the verb. Cf.:

*Hij kon niet komen, daar hij geen tijd had.*      *Daar hij geen tijd had, kon hij niet komen.*

*Hij wist niet, of zijn broeder heden nog zou vertrekken.*      *Of zijn broeder heden nog zou vertrekken, wist hij niet.*

§ 600. The subordinate sentence may also be inserted between the words of the principal sentence, without affecting the order of the latter.

*Hij vond, toen hij thuis kwam, al zijn papieren in wanorde.*

*Ik wist, voordat ik lang nagedacht had, de oplossing van het raadsel.*

§ 601. The conjunction **als** or **indien** is often omitted; in this case the verb is not removed to the end.

*Had ik alles geweten, ik zou niet gekomen zijn.*

*Waren alle menschen wijs, het leven zou veel aangenamer zijn (or dan zou het leven veel aangenamer zijn).*

§ 602. Objective clauses are generally preceded by **dat**, whereas in English this conjunction is frequently omitted.

*Ik vrees, dat gij te laat zult komen.*

*Ik geloof, dat hij naar de West gegaan is. (Beets.)*

*Ik hoop, dat gij het ondervinden zult. (Beets.)*

*Jonathan kon het niet gelooven, dat zijn vader een meenedige (a perjurer) zijn zou. (Van der Palm.)*

§ 603. Sometimes **dat** is omitted, i. e.:

*Ik zeg u: het zal dooien. (Beets.)*

*Het is de aangenaamste tijd van het leven, zegt men. (Beets.)*

*Geloof mij, hij zal het zwaard trekken. (van Lennep.)*

*Hij is, hoop ik, welvarende.*

*Dit is, meen ik, niet onbelangrijk.*

§ 604. **Dat** is always omitted, when the words of another person are quoted just as they were used.

*Mijn vader zegt altijd: „men moet maar gelukkig zijn.“*

*Vader Cats zei: „vroeg rijp vroeg rot, vroeg wijs vroeg zot.“*

#### Exercises.

He carefully noted the prices. He did his work carefully. She saw at once the cogency of this reasoning. He



had, in general, a laudable confidence in his own judgment. He heard again the language of his childhood. Putting in his hand a small token of my gratitude and goodwill, I departed. This strange occurrence brings to my mind a marriage sermon of the famous Bishop Taylor, in which he thus alludes to ill-assorted matches. They cherished in their breasts all that they had heard of their valour and noble lineage. But what was my delight, at beholding on its cover the identical painting of which I was in quest. He looked to his friends for protection. His story agrees with yours on all points. He immediately complied with my request. They condoled with the father on his sad loss. His account differs from yours in several important particulars. He refrained from personal interference on this occasion. Yesterday I wrote him a letter. In that way he will never succeed. Rich he will never be. This letter she showed to her father. Them also had he shielded from tyranny. Seven times did this intrepid general renew the attack. In vain did he endeavour to make the egg stand on its end. In a few months there remained not a trace of it.

## 106.

Not less strange to us seemed the garb and manners of the people, their language and religion. Shortly after, there happened another accident more terrible yet than the first. We did not proceed on our journey, because there arrived a messenger who brought evil tidings. This state of things might have lasted for a considerable time, if there had not arisen new complications. Here I was interrupted. Then I saw my mistake. Happy is the man that findeth wisdom. So great was the irritation, that no messengers could be found to carry the tidings. Poor he was, but honest too. Indignant as the officers were, they did not show it. It is not gold that I demand. It was to him that we looked for support. It was not such men I was taught to look up to. I can't tell you what is my name and who I am. Besides, I know what were her feelings, and what they are now. He demanded what was the moral of the story, and what it went to prove. Never has greater impudence gone together with more ignorance. No sooner had I given way, than he put in another claim. Never did he show greater presence of mind than on this memorable occasion. His plan, they said, would have succeeded but for some unforeseen circumstances. A fatal accident, he told them, had just occurred. This, my father answered me, is the real state of affairs. Never, I replied to this taunt, shall I suffer myself to be thus made a fool of.

## 107.

**Wolves.**

The wolf has a hungry, skulking look. He is very fierce and very cunning; but he is at the time a great coward. His acute sense of smell enables him to scent his prey far off. His speed is not very great; but he never tires in the chase; and he steadily follows even the fleetest of his victims till he has wearied them out and run them down.

In the great and gloomy forests of Russia, where the snow lies on the ground for at least eight months of the year, wolves roam about in vast troops; and it is a fearful thing for the traveller, especially if night has overtaken him, to hear their howlings in the distance.

An English gentleman, who lived for some time in St. Petersburg, tells the following story: — At no great distance from St. Petersburg a Russian peasant, when one day in his sledge, was pursued by eleven of these fierce animals. He was only about two miles from home, and as soon as he caught sight of the wolves, he urged his horse homeward at the very top of its speed.

On reaching the gate at the entrance to his house, he found it closed. But the frightened horse dashed it open, and carried its master safely into the court-yard. They were followed by nine out of the eleven wolves; but most fortunately, at the very instant that the wolves entered, the gate swung back on its hinges, and thus they were caught as in a trap.

In a moment the cowardly creatures, when they found escape to be impossible, became completely changed. So far from attacking any one, they shrank into holes and corners, and allowed themselves to be killed almost without making resistance!

**Gesprek.**

Hoe wordt Nederland verdeeld?	In arrondissementen en deze in kantons.
Het Koninkrijk der Nederlanden bestaat uit de elf provinciën: Noordbrabant, Gelderland, Zuid-Holland, Noord-Holland, Zeeland, Utrecht, Friesland, Overijsel, Groningen, Drenthe en Limburg.	Welke is de hoofdstad van het land? Amsterdam. En welke de residentiestad? 's-Gravenhage ('s-Hage, den Haag).
Hoe worden deze provinciën verder verdeeld?	Hoe is de regeeringsvorm van Nederland? Het opperbestuur is in handen van een erfelijk

- vorst (eene vorstin), die den titel van Koning (Koningin) voert.  
 Wie regeert er thans?  
 Koningin Wilhelmina, dochter van den overleden Koning Willem III.  
 Is de macht des Konings (der Koningin) onbeperkt?  
 Neen, zij is onderworpen aan de Grondwet; de Koning(in) gaat te rade met eenen *Raad van Staten* en benoemt de *Ministers*, die verantwoordelijk zijn voor de uitvoering der wetten.  
 Hoe wordt het volk vertegenwoordigd?  
 Door *afgevaardigden*, die verdeeld zijn in eene *Eerste* — en *Tweede Kamer*, te samen de *Staten-Generaal* uitmakende.  
 Wie vertegenwoordigt den Koning (de Koningin) in iedere provincie?  
 De *Commissaris des Konings*, (*der Koningin*), die tevens toezicht houdt op de verrichtingen der *Provinciale Staten*.  
 Wordt in iedere provincie het Nederlandsch op dezelfde wijze gesproken of zijn er ook tongvallen?  
 In Holland en Utrecht hoort men het Hollandsch, in Zeeland het Zeeuwsch, in Noord-Brabant en Limburg het Brabantsch en Limburgsch, in Gelderland, Overijssel en Drenthe het Nederrijnsch, in Groningen het Groningsch.  
 Welke taal wordt er nog gesproken, behalve het Nederlandsch?  
 In Friesland het Friesch, gewoonlijk Boeren- of Land-Friesch genoemd; het is van denzelfden stam als het Friesch in Noord-Duitschland.  
 Welken muntstandaard heeft Nederland?  
 Den dubbelen standaard.  
 Welk goudgeld wordt er gemunt?  
 Slechts eene soort: het Tien-guldenstuk of de Gouden Willem (f. 10. — = 17 s.).  
 En welk zilvergeld?  
 De Rijksdaalder (f. 2. 50 = 4 s. 2 d.),  
 de Gulden (f. 1. — = 1 s. 8 d.),  
 de Halve gulden (f. 0. 50 = 10 d.),  
 het Kwartje (f. 0. 25 = 5 d.),  
 het Dubbeltje (f. 0. 10 = 2 d.).  
 Zijn er ook nikkelmunten?  
 Slechts ééne: het nieuwe stuiverstuk (f. 0. 05 = 1 d.).  
 Welke zijn de bronzen munten?  
 De halve stuiver (f. 0. 02<sup>5</sup> = halfpenny),  
 de Cent (f. 0. 01); 5 cent = 1 d.,  
 de Halve cent (f. 0. 00<sup>5</sup>); 10 halve centen = 1 d.  
 Welke is de munteenheid?  
 De Gulden = 100 centen.
-

## Fourth Book.

### Word-Formation.

#### Fortieth Lesson. Veertigste Les.

##### De poppenkast.

Herinnert ge u nog wel die vroegere vertooningen in dat linnen theater en de poppenkast — van — — schande over mij, dat ik dien naam vergeten ben! — ik geloof, dat het Van den Ham was of zoo iets. — Die kast was omkleed met het klassieke bonten overtrek, blauwe en witte ruiten, en 't mocht toen ter tijd niets anders wezen; de eenige gedulde afwijking was, dat de ruiten soms lichtrood waren. Het theater zelf was niet groot, misschien zelfs wel wat klein, vooral als het huis opgezet was, of als de kist op het tooneel stond. Maar toch, er was voldoende ruimte, vooral omdat er slechts twee personen tegelijk op het tooneel waren. In zeldzame gevallen een derde, die dan door de beide anderen moest worden vastgehouden; want ten gevolge van het mechanisme, waardoor de poppen in beweging gebracht werden, konden er maar twee tegelijk in beweging zijn: — een mensch heeft toch maar twee handen! — En wat waren die coulissen eenvoudig! Rechts één en links één — eene streep lichtgrijs behangselpapier, en 't achterscherf dito.

##### Formation of Nouns.

###### I. By means of vowel-change.

§ 605. Many nouns are root-words; they have the same form as the root of the corresponding strong verb, generally with vowel-change. Some of these original root-words now occur in derivations and compositions only, as will be seen in the following examples.

**I. Class.** *Bergen*: *borg* (m.) bail, *burg* or *burcht* (m.) castle; *bersten*: *barst* (m.) burst; *binden*: *band* (m.) tie, *bende* (f.) troop, *bond* (m.) confederation, *bundel* (m.) bundle; *dringen*: *gedrang* (n.) crowd; *drinken*: *drank* (m.) drink, *dronk* (m.) draught; *dwingen*: *dwang* (m.) force; *gelden*: *goud* (from *gold*) gold; *helpen*: *hulp* (f.) help; *klinken*: *klank* (m.) sound, *klink* (f.) latch; *krimpen*: *krimp* (f.) cramp; *springen*: *sprong* (m.)

leap;  *vinden: vond* (m.) or  *vondst* (f.) find; *werpen: worp* (m.) throw; *zingen: zang* (m.) song.

II. Class. *Beren: baar* (f.) wave, *bier, bar, gebaar* (n.) gesture, *beer* (m.) buttress, *berrie* (f.) barrow, *beurt* (f.) turn, *geboorte* (f.) birth; *breken: brok* (m.) piece, *breuk* (f.) fraction, *gebrek* (n.) fault; *helen: halm* (m.) blade, *helm* (m.) casque, *hel* (f.) hell, *hol* (m.) cave, *heul* (n.) aid; *komen: komst* (f.) coming; *spreken: spraak* (f.) speech, *sprookje* (n.) tale, *spreuk* (f.) saying, *gesprek* (n.) conversation; *steken: staak* (m.) stake, *stok* (m.) stick, *stuk* (n.) piece, *stekel* (m.) sting; *wreken: wraak* (m.) revenge, *wrok* (m.) grudge.

III. Class. *Bidden: bede* (f.) request, *gebed* (n.) prayer; *geven: gauf* or *gave* (f.) gift, *gift* (f.) donation or (n.) poison; *liggen: laag* (f.) layer, *gelag* (n.) share<sup>1</sup>, *leger* (n.) army; *meten: maat* (f.) measure, *van meet* af from the beginning; *wegen: waag* (f.) balance, *gewicht* (n.) weight; *weven: wafel* (f.) wafer; *zitten: landzaat* (m.) native, *zet* (m.) move, *zetel* (m.) seat.

IV. Class. *Bijten: bijt* gap made in the ice, *beitel* (m.) chisel, *beet* (m.) bite, *gebit* (n.) set of teeth; *blijken: blij* (n.) token, *blik* (m.) glance; *grijpen: greep* (m.) handle; *knijpen: knip* (m.) cut, *kneep* (f.) pinch; *krijten: kreet* (m.) cry; *lijden: leed* (n.) grief; *rijden: rit* (m.) drive; *rijgen: rij* (f.) row, *rei* (m.) chorus, *regel* (m.) rule, *reeks* (f.) series; *rijten: reet* (f.) split; *schrijden: schrede* (f.) step; *slijpen: slip* (f.) skirt, *sleep* (m.) train; *snijden: snit* (m.) cut, *snede* slice, edge; *splijten: split* (n.) slit, *spleet* (f.) split; *stijgen: steiger* (m.) scaffolding, *steeg* (f.) lane; *strijken: streek* (f.) line, region.

V. Class. *Bedriegen: bedrog* (n.) deception, *gedrocht* (n.) monster, *drogreden* (m.) sophism; *bieden: bod* (n.) offer, *bode* (m.) messenger, *gebod* (n.) commandment; *buigen: boog* (m.) bow, *bocht* (f.) turning, *beugel* (m.) ring; *genieten: genot* (n.) enjoyment, *genoot* (m. or f.) fellow; *liegen: logen* or *leugen* (f.) lie; *ruiken: reuk* (m.) smell; *schieten: schot* (n.) shot, *schoot* (m.) lap, *scheut* (m.) shoot; *sluiten: slot* (n.) castle, lock, *sloot* (f.) ditch, *sleutel* (m.) key; *stuiven: stof* (n.) dust; *tiën* (obsolete): *tuig* (n.) tackle, *getuige* (m. or f.) witness, *tocht* (m.) expedition, draught, *toom* (m.) bridle, *teug* (f.) draught, *teugel* (m.) rein, *tucht* (f.) discipline; *(ver)liezen: verlies* (n.) loss, *leus* (f.) device, *te loor* gaan to be lost, *te leur* stellen to disappoint; *vliegen: vlieg* (f.) fly, *vleugel* (m.) wing, *vlucht* (f.) volley; *vlieten: vliet* (m.) rill, *vlot* (n.) raft, *vloot* (f.) fleet.

VI. Class. *Dragen: dracht* (f.) load, costume; *graven: gracht* (f.) canal, *groeve* (f.) furrow; *malen: mol* (m.) mole,

<sup>1</sup> *Gelagkamer* (f.) bar-room, *het gelag betalen* to pay for it, *voor het gelag blijven zitten* to be the sufferer.

*meel* (n.) meal, *molm* (m.) mould, *mul* (f.) dust; *varen: vaart* (f.) canal, *veer* (n.) ferry, *voer* (n.) cart-load.

## II. Formation of Nouns by means of Suffixes.

§ 606. The suffixes, by means of which nouns have been formed, are:

*aar, de (te), e, egge (ei), el, em, en, er, ig, ik, in, ing, nis, s (es, is), sel, sem, st, ster;*

the diminutives: *el, elijn, je (pje, tje), ken;*

the foreign suffixes: *aan, age, eel, es, ier, iet, ist, ij.*

§ 607. Derivatives in *-aar* denote persons, animals and things; sometimes *n* has been inserted between the root and the suffix.

*Redenaar* orator, *leeraar* teacher, *overwinnaar* conqueror; *Egyptenaar* Egyptian, *Parijzenaar* Parisian; *geveldenaar* usurper, *kunstenaar* artist, *weduwnaar* widower; *duikelaar* diver, *lepelaar* spoonbill, *rammelaar* buck-rabbit; *appelaar* apple-tree, *hazelaar* hazelnut-tree, *rozelaar* rose-tree; *boezelaar* apron, *evenaar* equator, *lessenaar* desk.

§ 608. After an accented syllable the suffix *-aar* has been weakened to *-er*; sometimes *d* is inserted, especially after *r*.

*Bukker* baker, *jager* hunter, *vertaler* translator; *dooper* baptizer, *visscher* fisher, *zanger* singer; *diender* policeman, *hoorder* hearer, *verhuurder* landlord; *Nederlander* Dutchman, *Oostenrijker* Austrian, *Zwitser* Swiss; *doffer* male pigeon, *kuter* tom-cat; *boender* scrubbing-brush, *gieter* watering-can, *passer* pair of compasses.

§ 609. The suffix *-e* occurs in a few words only, as in all other derivatives *-de* (generally changed into *-te*) has been used to form nouns from adjectives.

*Koude* cold, *zonde* sin; *liefde* love, *breedte* breadth, *diepte* depth, *hoogte* height, *lengte* length, *vlakke* plain; *groente* greens, vegetables.

§ 610. The suffixes *-egge (-ei), -ster, -in, -s (-es, -is)* form names of females from names of male persons (animals).

*Dievegge* thief, *klappei* or *labbei* gossip, *bedelaarster* beggar-woman, *schrijfster* author, *tuinierster* gardener's wife, *koningin* queen, *godin* or *godes* goddess, *leeuwin* lioness, *wolvin* she-wolf, *dienares* servant, *kunstenares* artist; cf.: *zangeres* = singer (artist) and *zangster* = muse or female singer, songstress.

**Remark.** The ending *-es (-is)* has been added also to words of foreign origin.

*Abdis* abbess, *prinses* princess, *profetes* prophetess.

§ 611. All words ending in *-em* or the compound suffix *-sem* and nearly all words ending in *-en* are names of things.

*Adem* breath, *bezen* broom, *bloesem* blossom, *bodem* bottom, *deesem* leaven, *wasem* vapour; *leugen* (f.) lie, *relen* (f.) reason, *vasten* (f.) lent; — *lijfeigene* (m., f.) serf.

§ 612. The suffix *-ing* (seldom *-ig*) originally denotes origin of persons, afterwards it was also used to form names of animals and things. As the final *l* of such words as end in *l* was considered part of the ending, a new suffix *-ling* or *-eling* proceeded from *-ing*. With names of persons derived from Adjectives by means of *-eling*, *el* has a diminutive meaning and then generally expresses contempt. Contempt is also connected with some words derived from verbs, although generally denoting persons doing or suffering the action expressed by the verb.

*Karoling* (from *Carolus*) Carolingian, *Meroving* (from *Meroveus*) Merovingian, *Vlaming* Fleming, *koning* king, *hemeling* inhabitant of heaven, *bokking* red herring, *haring* herring, *honig* or *honing* honey; *dorpeling* villager, *kloosterling* monk, nun, *lieveling* darling; *duisterling* obscurant, *stommeling* stupid person, *woesteling* wild man; *drenkeling* drowned or drowning person, *huurling* hireling, *kneekeling* pupil, *smeekeling* supplicant, *zwerfeling* wanderer.

**Remark 1.** Names of things ending in *-ing* or *-eling* denote origin or have a diminutive sense.

*Ketting* chain, *krakeling* cracknel, *penning* medal or farthing, *vlierling* garret, *silverling* silverling, *zuring* sorrel.

**Remark 2.** A few nouns in *-ling* are formed from numerals; they have a collective meaning.

*Tweeling* twin, *drieling* one of three children at a birth &c.

§ 613. By means of the suffixes *-ing* or *-st* feminine substantives are formed from verbs.

*Belegering* siege, *kleeding* dress, *wandeling* walk; *kunst* art, *vangst* catch, *winst* gain.

§ 614. The names formed by *-ik*, *-erik* have a derisive or contemptuous meaning.

*Botterik* or *stommerik* blockhead, *vuilik* or *viezerik* a filthy person.

**Remark.** Formerly there was another ending *-rik*, which does not exist any longer; it had the meaning of lord, ruler — e. g.: *Diederik* = lord of the *died* (people), *Hendrik* originally *Heemrijk* = lord of the *heem* home, place; also in names of animals and plants: *ganzerik* gander, *draverik* tare.

§ 615. The suffix *-nis* is placed after verbs and adjectives.

*Beeltenis* image, *vergiffenis* pardon, *vuilnis* dirt.

§ 616. The suffix *-el* and the compound suffix *-sel* are put after verbal roots to denote: tools or instruments and products.

*Sleutel* key, *teugel* bridle, *vleugel* wing; *deksel* cover, *schoeisel* boots, *stijfsel* starch, *baksel* baking, *schepsel* creature, *zaagsel* saw-dust.

**Remark.** A few Dutch words — i. e. *houweel* pick-axe, *tooneel* scene, have taken *-eel* instead of *-el* through the influence of words borrowed from the French language, as: *kasteel* castle &c.

§ 617. Diminutives, which are much used in Dutch, are generally formed by the suffix *-je*: *boek* book, *boekje*; *huis* house, *huisje*; *kat* cat, *katje*.

If the noun has a long vowel, occurring in the plural only, which has become short in the singular, the diminutive generally has the long vowel: *pad* path, *paadje*; *slot* castle or lock, *slootje*; *trede* step, *treedje*.

Final *ng* in an unaccented syllable becomes *nk*: *koning* king, *koninkje*; *woning* dwelling, *woninkje*; but if the syllable ending in *ng* is not entirely unaccented *-etje* is added: *verzameling* collection, *verzamelingetje*; *wandeling* walk, *wandelingetje*.

This ending is also used if the word has a short vowel with final *l*, *n* or *r*: *bal* ball, *balletje*; *kam* comb, *kammetje*; *kan* jug, *kannetje*; *kar* cart, *karretje*. Also after final *g*: *big* (or *bigge*) young pig, *biggetje* (or *bigje*). — If such letters are preceded by a long vowel *e* is dropped: *paal* stake, *paaltje*; *schaar* pair of scissors, *schaartje*. This ending (*-tje*) must also be used after words ending in a vowel or in *w*: *mama* mamma, *mamaatje*; *knie* knee, *knietje*; *mouw* sleeve, *mouwtje*; *vrouw* woman, *vrouwtje*.



After *m* the suffix *-pje* must be used instead of *-tje*: *boom* tree, *boompje*; *raam* window, *raampje*.

The diminutive suffix *-el* is obsolete; the poetical suffix *-elijn* has very likely been borrowed from the German. The suffix *-ken* or *-ke* (originally *-kijn*: *kindekijn* baby) is used very seldom; after guttural consonants *s* is inserted: *boek* book, *boekse(n)*; *jongen* boy, *jongse(n)*; *penning* medal or farthing, *penningse(n)* or *penninke(n)*.

**Remark.** Some words are contracted in their diminutive form: *broeder* brother, *broertje*; *meid* girl, *meisje*; *moeder* mother, *moertje* or *moedertje*; *vader* father, *vaartje* or *radertje*; *weeder* weather, *weertje*; *zuster* sister, *zusje*.

§ 618. Some suffixes have been borrowed from foreign languages and added to Dutch words; such are: *-aan*, *-ier* or *-enier*, *-iet*, *-ist* or *-enist*.

*Bloemist* florist, *drogist* chemist, *herbergier* innkeeper, *hovenier* or *tuinier* gardener, *klokkenist* chimer, *kruidenier* grocer. — *Amerikaan* American, *Arabier* Arab, *Aziër* or *Aziaat* Asiatic, *Batavier* Batavian, *Europeaan* European, *Indiaan* Indian, *Lutheraan* Lutheran, *Darwinist*, *Germanist*, *Romanist*.

§ 619. The foreign suffix *-age* may be added to substantives with a collective meaning: *bosschage* grove, *pakkage* baggage; also to verbal roots: *lekkage* leakage, *stellige* scaffolding, *vrijage* courtship.

§ 620. Words ending in *-ij*, *-erij* or *-ernij* are derived:

From names of persons:

*Bakker* baker, *bakkerij* bake-house.

*Bedelaar* beggar, *bedelarij* beggary, begging.

*Bedrieger* impostor, *bedriegerij* imposture.

*Burger* citizen, *burgerij* citizens.

*Dief* thief, *dieverij* theft, robbery.

*Heerschap* master, *heerschappij* dominion.

*Huichelaar* hypocrite, *huichelarij* hypocrisy.

*Maatschap* partnership, *maatschappij* society, *partnership*

*Rijmelaar* paltry rhymmer, *rijmelarij* doggerel.

*Ruiter* horseman, *ruiterij* cavalry.

*Schelm* rogue, *schelmerij* rogues.

*Schilder* painter, *schilderij* picture, painting.

*Voogd* guardian, *voogdij* or *voogdijschap* guardianship.

From names of things:

*Boek* book, *boekery* library.

*Kleed* dress, *kleedij* clothes, toilet.

*Koopvaart* commercial navigation, *koopvaardij*.

Of. also: *hoovaardij* pride, *lekkernij* dainty.

§ 621. The foreign suffixes **-et**, **-ment** and **-teit** occur in very few words only.

*Dreigement* threat, *flauwiteit* silliness, *helmet* helmet.

### Exercises.

#### 108.

Which substantives are formed from the roots of the following verbs:

bedriegen, beren, bergen, bersten, bidden, bieden, bijten, binden, blijken, breken, buigen, dragen, dringen, drinken, dwingen, gelden, genieten, geven, graven, grijpen, helen, helpen, klinken, kluiven, knippen, komen, krijten, krimpen, liegen, liggen, lijden, malen, meten, rijden, rijgen, ruiken, schieten, schrijden, schrijven, slijpen, sluiten, snijden, splijten, spreken, springen, steken, stijgen, strijken, stuiven, tieën, varen, verliezen, vinden, vliegen, vlieten, wegen, werpen, weven, zingen, zitten.

#### 109.

Which diminutives are formed from the following substantives:

bal, big, boek, boom, broeder, gat, huis, jongen, kam, kan, kar, kat, kind, knie, koning, mama, man, meid, moeder, mouw, paal, pad, penning, raam, schaar, slot, tred, vader, vat, veder, verzameling, vrouw, wandeling, weder, woning, zoon, zuster.

#### 110.

Which names of animals and things are derived from the following words or verbal roots:

appel, bakker, bedelaar, bedrieger, beelden, belegeren, boek, boenen, bosch, breed, dekken, dief, diep, dreigen, duif, duikelen, even, flauw, gans, gieten, groen, hazel, helm, hoog, houxen, huichelaar, kat, kleed, koopvaart, koud, kunnen, lang, lek, lekker, lepel, les, lief, pak, passen, rammelen, rijmelaar, roos, ruiter, schelm, scheppen, schilder, schoeien, smid, stellen, stijven, toonen, vangen, vergeven, vlak, voogd, vrijen, vuil, wandelen, winnen, zagen, zilver, zuur.

#### 111.

Which names of persons are derived from the following words or verbal roots:

abt, Amerika, Arabië, Azië, bakken, bedelen, bloem, bot, Darwin, dief, dienaar, doopen, dorp, drenken, drie, duister, Egypte, Europa, geweld, god, hemel, herberg, hof, hooren, huren, Indië, jagen, klok, klooster, koning, kruid, kunst, kunstenaar, kweeken, leeren, leeuw, lief, Luther, Nederland, Oostenrijk, overwinnen, Parijs, prins, profeet, schrijven, smeeken, stom, tuin, tuinier, twee, vertalen, verhuren, vies, visschen, vuil, weduwe, moest, wolf, zanger, zwerven.

Translate:

112.

### **The Royal Carpenter.**

Scene I.

Peter. The year is past already, and now I must leave this place. I have become attached to these simple industrious people. That Stanmitz is a good, honest fellow. I am half inclined to put confidence in him.

Enter Stanmitz. Halloo, Peter, are you still here? What was that I heard you saying as I came near?

P. Well, comrade, I am about to leave this place.

S. What? leave Saardam? Where are you going?

P. Back to my own country, — our country, I may say; for you know, like yourself, I come from Russia. I came here to learn shipbuilding, and now it is time to return home. I have been away a whole year.

S. Must you go? Our master will be sorry to lose you. He says you are the steadiest workman in the yard; and he holds you up as an example to us all.

P. I am glad to think of leaving a good name behind me. But won't all you workmen be glad to have me out of the way?

S. No, Peter; I for one, at least, shall be sorry to miss you. We have been friends all along. I have really a liking for you.

P. And so have I for you. Why should we part? Why not return with me to the old country? Is there no one who would be glad to see you there?

S. Why — yes: there is my poor old mother, always wishing me back; and a good, pretty girl too, who, I am afraid, thinks oftener about me than I deserve. Still, I hardly dare. — Peter, why must you leave us?

P. Because I have duties that call me home now. Duty first, you know, is the rule for every true man.

S. Yes, so the priest says.

P. So every brave man will say. You, I think, have no absolute duty here. Let us hope to meet again.

S. Before you go, Peter, I think I may venture to tell you a secret.

P. Do not tell me if it is anything you are ashamed of.

S. No, no, not ashamed; but it is what makes me afraid to go home. I was born at Moscow.

P. Well, there is no crime in being born at Moscow; besides, that was no fault of yours.

S. That's not what I mean. Listen! It happened one day that a party of soldiers halted near my mother's cottage. The commanding officer presently took notice of me, and assured me that the Czar Peter had a particular need and desire for my services. In short — in short — there was plenty of schnapps going round, and before I well knew what he was doing, the officer clapped a gun on my shoulder, and marched me off.

P. In short, you were enlisted.

S. I suppose so; but really I did not comprehend it at the time.

## Forty-first Lesson. Een en veertigste Les.

### De poppenkast. (Vervolg.)

Op zij van het tooneel stak een kromme ijzeren arm uit met een verroest blakertje aan het uiteinde; als 't donker was, werd dat met een dun kaarsje er op naar voren gedraaid, en dat was verlichting genoeg. Ik weet ook niet, waarvoor meer licht noodig was: wij wisten allen ten naasten bij, wat er komen moest en konden 't desnoods in het donker wel volgen.

Wat was die Jan Klaassen een kerel! Welk eene gemakelijkheid en losheid in zijne bewegingen! Wat kon hij die twee slappe beenen met klompen met een onnavolgbaren zwier over den rand van het tooneel gooien! En die vlugheid en gevatheid, waarmee hij aan alle gevaren ontkwam! Of was het geen gevaar, als Katrijn in den hoogsten aanval van hare woede haar hoofd vooroverboog tusschen de twee stijf overeindgezette poppenarmen en als een woedende bok op hem aanrende? Maar zie dien vluggen zet, waarmede hij juist bijtijds op zij weet te springen, zoodat ze met de hersens tegen den muur loopt.

### Formation of Nouns. (End.)

#### III. Composition.

##### A. With obsolete particles, now prefixes.

§ 622. The prefixes: *af*, *ant*, *et*, *ge*, *on*, *oor*, *wan* and the foreign *aarts* were formerly particles; now they are inseparable prefixes.

§ 623. *Af* denotes a distance or a negation.

*Afdak* penthouse, *afdruk* printed copy, *afgod* idol, *afgrond* precipice, *afgunst* envy, *afweg* by-way.

§ 624. *Ant* and *et* occur in the following words only:

*antwoord* answer, *etgroen* after-growth, *etmaal* space of twenty-four hours.

§ 625. *Ge*<sup>1</sup> (= together) forms names of persons, also with a collective meaning.

*Gemaal* husband, *genoot* fellow, *gezel* companion.

Substantives which are formed from verbs denote:

A continuing action: *geloop* running, *gepraat* tattle, *geschreeuw* cry, ado.

A product: *gebak* pastry, *gebouw* building.

Fitness: *gehoor* hearing, *geduld* patience.

**Remark.** If the suffix *-te* is added to words with *ge*, they denote collective names of animals and things: *gedierte* beasts, *gevederte* fowls, *gewormte* vermin; *gebladerte* foliage, *gebeente* bones, *gebergte* chain of mountains.

§ 626. *On* and *wan* express the contrary of the principal word.

*Onbruik* disuse, *ondeugd* vice, *ondienst* bad service, *ongenoege* displeasure, *onmin* disagreement, *onraad* danger; *wanbedrijf* crime, *wanbetaling* non-payment, *wangeluid* or *wanklank* dissonance, *wanhoopt* despair, *wanorde* disorder, *wantrouwen* distrust.

§ 627. *Oor* denotes the beginning or the consequence of an action.

*Oorkonde* charter, *oorlog* war, *oorsprong* origin, *oorzaak* cause.

§ 628. The foreign *aarts* is connected with Dutch as well as with foreign words.

*Aartsbisschop* archbishop, *aartsgek* first-rate fool, *aartsvader* patriarch, *aartsvijand* archfiend, *aartswoekeraar* arrant-usurer.

#### B. With obsolete words, now suffixes.

§ 629. The following particles are used now as inseparable suffixes: *aard* (*erd*), *dom*, *heid*, *schap*.

<sup>1</sup> The German language has a considerably greater number of compounds with *ge*; see my *Niederländische Konversations-Grammatik*, Lesson 41.

§ 630. Words with *aard* have an unfavourable meaning, except *grijsaard* old man, greybeard.

*Gierigaard* miser, *grijnzaard* grumbler, *lafaard* coward, *veinzaard* dissembler, *wreedaard* cruel man.

In some compounds *aard* is weakened to *erd*, generally with the same meaning.

*Dikkerd* a plump person, *gluiperd* sneak, *leeperd* shrewd one; — *lieverd* darling.

**Remark.** Compounds with *aard* are imitations of French words with *ard*, such as: *bâtard* — *bustaard* bastard, *richard* — *rijkaard* rich fellow, *Savoyard* — *Savooiaard*. This *aard* however is of German origin (*hard*) as may still be seen in proper names as: *Bernord* — Bernhard, *Gerard* — Gerhard, *Reinaard* — Reinhard.

§ 631. *Dom* and *schap* denote:

A quality.

*Eigendom* property, *ouderdom* old age, *rijkdom* riches; *blijdschap* joy, *gramschap* anger, wrath.

Some have a concrete meaning:

*Heiligdom* sanctuary, *gereedschap* tools.

A dignity or rank:

*Adeldom* nobility, *broederschap* fraternity, *ridderschap* knighthood, *vaderschap* paternity. *moederschap* - maternity

A collective meaning:

*Christendom* christianity, *heidendom* paganism, *broederschap* brotherhood, *genootschap* company.

A country or dominion:

*Bisdome* bishopric, *hertogdom* duchy, *vorstendom* principality, *graafschap* earldom, county.

§ 632. Words with *heid* are formed from nouns and adjectives, they denote persons (some with a collective meaning) or abstract things.

*Godheid* deity, *menschheid* humanity, *overheid* authorities, *goedheid* kindness, *schoonheid* beauty, *voorzichtigheid* prudence.

### C. With two words.

§ 633. In compounds of two nouns the first member may have a singular or a plural meaning.

If the first member expresses a plural it has as a rule the ending *en*, seldom *s*.

*Bokkenleder* goat's skin, *ganzenmarkt* goose-market, *naaldenfabriek* needle-manufacture, *zedenleer* morality. Cf.: *paardestal* stable for one horse, *paardenstal* for more horses; *schapenveesch* meat of one sheep, *schapenveesch* of two or more sheep.

For compounds denoting persons or animals the following rules must be added to the preceding:

The plural form must be used, if the first member is the name of a person representing the whole class.

*Boerenwoning* farm-house, *gravinnenkroon* crown of a countess, *vrouwenhoed* bonnet.

Also if the first member is the name of a male animal, having no compounds with *s* and representing the whole species.

*Berenklauw* bear's foot, *leeuwenmuil* lion's mouth, *ossenbloed* ox blood. Exceptions are a few compounds with *haan*: *hanebalk* cockloft, *hanekam* cock's comb, *haneklauw* cock's spur.

If the first member is a masculine noun having compounds with *s*, a feminine or a neuter noun, the plural form is **not** used.

*Bokkevel* or *bokscel* goat's skin, *mollegat* molecast (cf. *molshoop* mole-hill), *kattestaart* cat's tail, *paardevoet* horse's foot.

**Remark.** For the sake of euphony *n* is sometimes inserted, if the second member ends in a vowel or in *h*: *ganzenen* gooseegg, *eikenhout* oak. If the first member always ends in *e*, no *n* is inserted: *bodeambt* duty of a servant, *medearbeider* cooperator, *vredehandel* negotiation of peace.

§ 634. The first member of a true compound often has an original or afterwards inserted *e*.

*Brilledoos* spectacle-case, *hagedoorn* hawthorn, *heerehoer* gentleman-farmer, *pennemes* penknife, *willekeur* caprice.

Also the names of trees, the first part of which denotes the tree but not the fruit.

*Beukeboom* beech, *eikeboom* oak-tree, *pereboom* pear-tree, *pruimeboom* plum-tree, *perzikeboom* or *perzikboom* peach-tree.

§ 635. The greater part of true compounds have no *e* between the first and the second member.

*Boekhandel* book-trade, *brandsput* fire-engine, *neushoorn* rhinoceros, *rundtee* cattle, *stofregen* drizzling rain.

If the first member admits of a pluralform in *eren*, it ends in *er* in the compound.

*Eierdop* egg-shell, *eierpruim* horse-plum, *kindermeid* nursery, *rundergebraad* roast-beef.

Sometimes the first member has the plural-ending *en* or *s*.

*Boekenkast* book-case, *kleedermaker* or *kleerenmaker* tailor, *menschenliefde* philanthropy, *bedelaarsherbberg* beggar's inn, *manskleed* man's coat.

**Remark 1.** The genetive ending *s* is used in some compounds, even when the first member is a feminine noun: *manspersoon* man, *watersnood* inundation, *stadspoort* town-gate.

**Remark 2.** The position of the first member with regard to the second is not plain in such compounds as: *broederliefde* fraternal love, *kinderliefde* a child's love, *moederliefde* maternal love, *ouderliefde* parents' love, *vaderliefde* paternal love, *zusterliefde* sisterly love; — cf.: *menschenliefde*, *waarheidsliefde* love of truth.

§ 636. When an adjective is the first member of a compound it never has *e*.

*Grootmeester* grandmaster, *hoogmoed* pride, *kleinzoon* grandson, *schoonmoeder* mother-in-law, *smaldeel* squadron, *zuurkool* sourcrout.

Words like *hoogepriester*, *hoogeschool* have already been mentioned as false compounds, see § 122.

§ 637. Some names of things compounded with adjectives denote persons, distinguishing themselves by the possession of the thing mentioned.

*Blaauwbaard* blue-beard, *blauwkous* blue-stocking, *domkop* blockhead, *langhals* long-necked person, *platneus* flat nose, *roodhuid* red-skin, *spitsneus* pointed nose, *zwartkop* black-haired one.

§ 638. If the root of a verb is the first member of a compound it generally denotes the use of the substantive.

*Drinkbeker* cup, *loopjongen* errand boy, *schrijftafel* writing-table, *slaapkamer* bed-room.

Sometimes *s* has been inserted or final *d* dropped.

*Leidsman* guide, *scheidsmuur* partition-wall, *scheidsman* arbiter; *leiband* leading-string, *rijtuig* carriage.

In some names of persons the substantive is to be considered as the object of the verb.



*Deugniet* good-for-nothing, *duingeland* tyrant, *vernielal* destroyer, *waughals* dare-devil.

In a few compounds the object stands as the first part.

*Beeldjeskoop* seller of statues, *eerbied* respect, *scharenslijp* knife-grinder, *tijdverdrijf* pastime. \*

§ 639. Compounds with a numeral:

*Drieman* triumvir, *tiental* ten, *vierspan* team of four.

Some have a possessive meaning, such as:

*Drieroet* trivet, *duizendpoot* milleped, *eenhoorn* unicorn, *negenooij* lamprey, *tweeklank* diphthong, *vierkant* square, *vijfhoek* pentagon, *zevenster* Pleiades.

§ 640. Compounds with an adverb:

*Achterbuurt* back street, *achterhoofd* occiput, *binnenplaats* inner-court, *buitenplaats* country-seat, *buitenzijde* outside, *vooordeel* prejudice, *voorproef* fore-taste.

§ 641. Of some compounds the second member is either lost or no longer used.

*Baker* (originally *bakermoeder*) dry nurse, *das* (*dassevel*) neck-cloth, *kraag* (*kraagdoek*) collar, *kroeg* (*kroeghuis*) public-house, *min* (*minnemoeder*) nurse, *spin* (or *spinnekop*) spider, *spoor* (*spoortrein*, *spoorweg*) railway or train, *tram* (*tramcagen*) tramway, *winkel* (*winkelhuis*) shop, *zerk* (French: *cercueil* = *zerksteen* tomb-stone).

#### IV. Other parts of speech used substantively.

§ 642. Other parts of speech, even whole expressions may be used as substantives.

*Het schoone* the beautiful, *mijn eigen ik* my own self, *het lezen* reading, *het waarom* the reason why, *het voor en tegen* pro and con, *het ach en wee* (*ach en wee* roepen to cry aloud), *het ken u zelf* self-knowledge.

§ 643. Some adjectives used substantively have got the character of a real noun.

*Dood* dead person, *dwaas* fool, *gulden* guilder, *heilige* saint, *jongen* boy, *mensch* (from *man*) man, *schijndood* one apparently dead, *vrek* miser, *zot* fool; *euvel* evil, (*doel*) *wit* aim, *ziel* soul, *jong* young one; — *eene schoone* a beauty.

Collective words without article.

*Goed* (*goederen*) goods, *ongelijk* wrong, *vuil* dirt.

Names of colours.

*Blauw* blue, *geel* yellow, *rood* red, *zwart* black &c.

A few of such words are used with a diminutive-ending only.

*Een bittertje* a glass of bitters, *grootje* (little) grandmother, *een nieuwtje* a novelty.

Also the numerals denoting a coin:

*Een dubbeltje* = *een dubbele stuiver* two-pence, *een kwartje* = *een kwart gulden* a quarter of a guilder, *een tientje* = *een tienguldenstuk* a ten guilder-piece.

§ 644. Infinitives used substantively have already been mentioned Lesson 33. *Vermoeiden* supposition and *gevoelen* opinion, are also used in the Plural; the Pl. of *leven*: *levens*, has the signification of *levens-beschrijving* biography.

Imperative forms occur in the words:

*Kruidje-roer-mij-niet* sensitive plant, *vergeet-mij-niet* forget-me-not, *spring-in-'t-veld* wild spark; also in the French expressions: *een passe-par-tout* a master-key, *een rendez-vous* a rendez-vous, *een vol-au-vent* a meat-pie.

§ 645. On the participles used substantively, see Lesson 34.

Of the obsolete present participles used substantively we mention:

*Heiland* from *heilen* (to save) Saviour, *vijand* from *vijen* (to hate) enemy, *vriend* from *vrijen* (to love) friend.

### Exercises.

Translate :

#### 113.

After-growth, age, aim, anger, answer, appointment, arbiter, archbishop, archfiend, arrant-usurer, authorities, back street, bastard, bear's foot, beasts, beauty, bed-room, beech, beggar's inn, biography, bishopric, black, blockhead, blue, blue-beard, blue-stocking, bones, bonnet, book-case, book-trade, boy, brotherhood, building, by-way, caprice, carriage, cat's tail, cattle, cause, chain of mountains, charter, christianity, cock's comb, cock's spur, cockloft, collar, companion, company, co-operator, countryseat, coward, crime, cruel man, cup, danger, dare-devil, darling, deity, despair, destroyer, diphthong, dirt, disagreement, disorder, displeasure, dissembler, dissonance, distrust, disuse, drizzling rain, dry nurse, duchy, earldom, egg-shell, enemy, envy, evil, farm-house, fellow, fire-engine, foliage, fool, fore-taste, forget-me-not, fowls, fraternity, friend, gentleman-farmer,

goat's skin, good-for-nothing, goods, goose-egg, goose-market, grandmaster, grandson, grumbler, guide, guild, hawthorn, hearing, horse's foot, horse-plum, humanity, husband, idol, inner-court, inundation, joy, kindness, knife-grinder, knight-hood, lamprey, leading-string, lion's mouth, man's coat, master-key, meat-pie, milleped, miser, molecast, morality, mother-in-law, ox blood, nobility, nonpayment, novelty, nurse, nurse-maid, oak, oak-tree, occiput, old man, opinion, origin, outside, paganism, pastime, pastry, paternity, patience, patriarch, peach-tree, pear-tree, penknife, pentagon, penthouse, philanthropy, Pleiades, a plump person, plum-tree, precipice, prejudice, pride, principality, printed copy, property, prudence, public-house, railway, red, redskin, respect, rhinoceros, rich fellow, riches, roast-beef, running, saint, sanctuary, Saviour, Savoyard, seller of statues, set of four, shop, shrewd one, soul, sauerkraut, spectacle-case, spider, squadron, square, supposition, tailor, tattle, tombstone, tools, town-gate, tramway, triumvir, trivet, tyrant, unicorn, vermin, vice, war, wild spark, wrong, yellow, young one.

## 114.

**The Royal Carpenter. (Continued.)**

## Scene I. (End.)

P. You were enlisted as a soldier of the Czar. How come you, then, to be here?

S. Ah, there it is! I assure you the Czar made a great mistake in wishing to have me for a soldier! I really am not the sort of man to make a hero of. I found the service did not agree with me at all. I had to leave my poor mother and Katerina. I was ordered here, ordered there, — hard words, hard blows. One bitter cold morning in December I was called up at three o'clock to mount guard on a high windy rampart in the snow. I really had to walk in order to keep myself from being frozen, and — would you believe it? — I found myself at last walking five leagues away from the outposts!

P. That is to say, you are a deserter.

S. Is that being a deserter? I had my own fears that it was.

P. My good fellow, do you know that if you be discovered you will be shot?

S. That idea frequently occurred to me; so I thought it wise to go on a little further, and I made the best of my way to Saardam, and here I am. So now you know my secret, and I think I may trust you; for I have an idea that you are yourself in some scrape of the same sort.

P. I am a deserter! most absurd!

S. Well, I have always felt there was some mystery about you. But when you return home you will keep my secret? for if any of the Czar's agents knew my story, it might be a serious matter for me.

P. The Czar shall never know more of it than he does at this moment, if I can prevent it. But he has a queer way, they say, of finding out all sorts of things. What a hard, cruel man, to make a law that a poor fellow must be shot, because he has no talent for soldiering!

S. Come, don't abuse our Czar. I would willingly fight any man who speaks evil of him; and though I have no desire to serve in his army, I often wish I were serving him in some other way. Remember, old comrade, you are the only mortal to whom I have told my secret.

P. Trust me; I shall never betray you, and some day — who knows what may happen? — I may be able to prove myself your friend.

## Forty-second Lesson. Twee en veertigste Les.

### De Poppenkast. (Vervolg.)

Dat is geene kleinigheid! En als naderhand de gendarme komt, die hem, tot straf voor al zijne euvel daden, tot den dood met den strop veroordeeld heeft — ik vraag het u, of zijne koelbloedigheid hem een oogenblik verlaat? De galg wordt geplant, de strop hangt er aan met het schuifje om toegehaald te worden. Eén oogenblik nog, en hij is verloren, maar hij begrijpt de zaak niet, zoo het schijnt, en de lichtgeloovige gendarme is genoodzaakt hem voor te doen, hoe hij het hoofd door den strop moet steken. Maar daar wacht hem juist onze Jan Klaassen — pas is de kop er in, of hij haalt de sleuf dicht, en ziet hem nu, hoe hij in triomf de galg uit den grond trekt, den gendarme daaraan hangende over den rand van het tooneel gooit en hem nu onder daverend gejuich van het opgewonden publiek als een molen in het rond draait. Zie, voor dat ééne tooneel geef ik tien prinsen en prinsessen met fluweelen pakken en goudgalon.

### Formation of Adjectives.

#### I. By means of vowel-change.

§ 646. Just as with the nouns, some adjectives arose directly from the root of a strong verb.

- I. Class.** *Blinken*: blank white; *slinken*: slank slender.  
**II. Class.** *Breken*: brak brackish; *helen*: hol hollow;  
*komen*: *bekwaam* capable; *nemen*: *aangenaam*  
agreeable; *steken*: stuk broken.  
**III. Class.** *Geven*: gaaf sound; *liggen*: laag low.  
**IV. Class.** *Bijten*: bitter bitter; *blijken*: bleek pale; *dijen*:  
*dicht* close, *dik* thick; *rijzen*: rijzig tall; *slijten*:  
*sleetsch* wearing away soon.  
**V. Class.** *Vliegen*: vlug quick; *(ver)liezen*: los loose.  
loos empty.  
**VI. Class.** *Malen*: mul loose (mul zand).

## II. Derivation by means of suffixes.

§ 647. The suffixes, by means of which adjectives are formed, are: **-en**, **-ig** or **-erig**, **-isch** or **-sch**.

§ 648. The suffix **-en** forms from names of materials adjectives denoting the material a thing is made of.

*Garen* of yarn, *gouden* and *gulden* gold(en), *houten* wooden, *ijzeren* iron, *koperen* copper, *linnen* linen, *looden* leaden, *zilveren* silver.

§ 649. Adjectives with **-ig** are derived from Substantives:

*Bestendig* steady, *bokkig* surly, *kipig* near-sighted, *lastig* troublesome, *machtig* mighty, *wettig* lawful.

Verbs:

*Begeerig* covetous, *geldig* legal, *nalatig* negligent.

Numerals, Adjectives or Participles:

*Eenig* only, *goedig* good-natured, *levendig* lively.

Adverbs:

*Lunig* cordial, *nederig* humble, *vorig* former.

Derivatives with **-erig** generally have an unfavourable meaning:

*Beverig* shaky, *slaperig* sleepy, *stoterig* jerky, *weelderig* luxurious, *winderig* vain (cf. *windig* windy), *zangerig* melodious.

**Remark.** Such adjectives as: *godsdienslig* religious, *staatkundig* political, *taalkundig* philological, with regard to their signification should be used for persons only; they are nevertheless used in such expressions as: *eene godsdienstige beweging* a religious movement, *op staatkundig gebied* in politics, *een taalkundig tijdschrift* a philological periodical.

§ 650. The suffix *-isch* occurs:

In the Dutch adjectives: *afgodisch* idolatrous and *wettisch* sticking slavishly to the law.

In derivatives from foreign words.

*Geographisch* geographical, *grammatisch* grammatical, *mathematisch* mathematical.

In derivatives from names of countries, cities or nations.

*Frankisch*, *Moscorisch*, *Pruisisch*, *Russisch*, *Saksisch*.

In all other derivatives *i* is dropped; they have the suffix *-sch*.

*Beiersch* Bavarian, *Duitsch* German, *Friesch* Frisian.

§ 651. Adjectives with *-sch* denote:

A relation with the principal word.

*Hoofsch* courtly, *steelsch* townish, *trotsch* haughty.

The genitive form of the principal word.

*Boersch* clownish, *vaderlandsch* patriotic.

The material things are made of.

*Duffelsch* duffel, *lakersch* (of) cloth, *neteldoeksch* (of) muslin.

From the names of the days of the week are formed: *zondagsch*, *maandagsch*, *dinsdagsch* &c.

Derivatives from adverbs ending in *s* have *ch* instead of *sch*: *daagsch* from (*des*) *daags* daily, *vergeefsch* from *vergeefs* vain &c.

### III. Composition.

#### A. With obsolete particles, now prefixes.

§ 652. The old particles *ge*, *on*, *aarts* are now used as prefixes.

The prefix *be* in the adjectives: *bekwaam* able, *bereid* ready, *bestand* proof &c. belongs to the verb from which they have been derived. *Bewust* (conscious of) has been borrowed from the German.

§ 653. *Ge* originally signified **together**, as in *gelijk* equal.

Now it has lost much of its meaning, very often it has a strengthening force only.

*Gestreng* or *streng* severe, *getrouw* or *trouw* faithful, *gewillig* or *willig* willing, *geuis* or *uis* sure; cf.: *dienstig* useful, *gedienstig* officious.

Some adjectives with *ge* have the form of a Participle, see § 672.

§ 654. *On* denotes a negation.

*Onbreekbaar* unbreakable, *onhandig* clumsy, *ondiep* shallow.

In some compounds with *on* the principal words have gone out of use.

*Onguur* rough, *onnoozel* silly, *onstuimig* impetuous, *ondeugend* naughty.

§ 655. *Aarts* is put before some adjectives to denote a bad quality in its highest degree.

*Aartsdom* extremely stupid, *aartslui* exceedingly lazy; cf.: *aartsvaderlijk* patriarchal.

### B. Obsolete particles, now suffixes.

§ 656. The obsolete particles which are now used as suffixes are: *achtig*, *haftig*, *achtig*, *baar*, *lijk*, *loos*, *zaam*.

§ 657. *Achtig* (accented) and *haftig* signify the having or possessing of what the primitive word denotes.

*Deelachtig* participating, *twijfelachtig* doubtful, *waarachtig* true; *ernsthaftig* grave, *heldhaftig* heroic, *manhaftig* manly.

§ 658. Adjectives with the unaccented *achtig* (= *acht* + *ig*) are formed:

From Substantives; they denote resemblance.

*Beerstuchtig* beastly, *ezelachtig* stupid, *kinderachtig* childish, *olieachtig* oily, *steenachtig* stony.

From Adjectives; they denote the form or colour.

*Groenachtig* greenish, *oudachtig* oldish, *zwartachtig* blackish.

From the root of a verb; they denote an inclination.

*Schrikachtig* easily frightened, *snoepachtig* lickerish, *spotachtig* jeering, mocking.

§ 659. *Baar* signifies bearing in oneself, producing. Adjectives with *baar* are formed from substantives or from roots of verbs.

*Dankbaar* thankful, *eerbaar* honest, *vruchtbaar* fertile, *kostbaar* costly, *schijnbaar* apparent; *deelbaar* divisible, *draagbaar* portable, *rekbaar* extensible, *zichtbaar* visible.

§ 660. *Lijk* signifies origin, resemblance or agreement. Adjectives with *lijk* are formed:

From Substantives.

*Lichamelijk* bodily, *menschelijk* human, *zedelijk* moral.

From Adjectives.

*Goelijk* kindly, *liefelijk* charming, *ouwelijk* oldish.

From Adverbs.

*Achterlijk* backward, *innerlijk* inward, *uiterlijk* outward.

From roots of verbs.

*Beminnelijk* amiable, *sterfelijk* mortal, *vermakelijk* diverting.

**Remark.** Verbal roots with *lijk* are not to be confounded with those composed with *baar*, cf.: *draaglijk* supportable or tolerable, *draagbaar* portable or wearable; *onverbrekelijk* is something which **must not** be violated, *onverbreekbaar* which **cannot** be violated; *verkiezlijk* preferable, *verkiezbaar* eligible.

§ 661. **Loos** signifies deprived or devoid of.

*Eerloos* infamous, *hulpeloos* helpless, *reddeloos* irrecoverable, *werkeloos* inactive, *zieleloos* inanimate; — *goddeloos* wicked, impious.

§ 662. **Zaam** denotes a relation, resemblance, an equality.

*Bedachtzaam* considerate, *eerzaam* honourable, *heilzaam* salutary, *langzaam* slow, *zorgzaam* careful, *buigzaam* flexible, *gehoorzaam* obedient, *lijdzzaam* patient.

### C. Composition of two words.

§ 663. Adjectives compounded with a noun are not real compounds, if the noun has a declension-ending or if both words may be used separately, such as:

*Achtingswaardig* or *achtenswaardig* respectable, *eervol* = *vol eer* honourable, *lofwaardig* = *lof waardig* praise-worthy.

§ 664. The real compounds with nouns denote several relations with the primitive word.

*Bomvrij* = *vrij voor bommen* bomb-proof, *schaduwrijk* = *rijk aan schaduw* shady, *schijnheilig* = *heilig in schijn* hypocritical, *stokoud* = *te oud om zonder stok te loopen* very old, *zeeziek* = *ziek van de zee* sea-sick.

Some compounds denote a quality which is already expressed by the adjective itself.

*Grasgroen* grass-green, *ijzersterk* strong as iron, *melkwit* milk-white, *reuzegroot* gigantic, *rozerood* rose-coloured, *steenhard* as hard as stone, *stokdoof* stone-deaf; and with an inserted *s*: *doodsbleek* deadly pale, *hemelsblauw* sky-blue.



§ 665. Adjectives with *matig* denote a conformity to what is expressed by the noun.

*Doelmatig* suitable to, *instinctmatig* instinctively, *kunstmatig* artificial, *plichtmatig* attentive to one's duty, *rechtmatig* lawful, *regelmatig* regular, *tooneelmatisch* theatrical.

§ 666. Nearly all the compounds with *vol* (full, cf.: *hoopvol* hopeful) are rendered in English by other words.

*Bewaarvol* repentant, *eervol* honourable, *gevaarvol* hazardous, *gevoelvol* heart-felt,  *liefdevol* charitable, *talentvol* talented, *troostvol* consoling.

§ 667. Two adjectives always form real compounds. The qualifying part denotes the degree of the quality or it adds a completing qualification to the primitive word.

*Alleen* alone, *almachtig* almighty, *langdurig* lasting, *menigvuldig* manifold, *voltallig* complete: — *blauwzwart* blue-black, *donkerrood* or *hooigrond* dark-red, *grijsgroen* gray-green, *lichtgroen* light-green, *vaalwit* pale white.

As titles are used: *Edelachtbaar* honourable, (*Uw*) *Edelgrootachtbare* most worthy, *Edelegeboren* noble.

§ 668. Some adjectives are compounded with the root of a verb.

*Frankelnieuw* bran-new, *kakelbont* motley, *merkwaardig* remarkable, *wettigierig* inquisitive: *beinnemenswaardig* amiable, *betrofzemswaardig* deplorable, *dankenswaardig* thank-worthy, *deerniswaardig* pitiable.

Such with *ziek* have an unfavourable meaning.

*Babbelziek* talkative, *belangziek* coquettish, *twistziek* quarrelsome, *ritzik* cavilling &c.

§ 669. Adjectives with adverbs.

*Wel*: *welzinnig* blessed, and in titles: *Welchiel* honourable, *Weldelegeboren* right honourable. *Widerwaard* or *Zoerwaard* reverend.

Compounds with the accented particles *door*, *in*, *over* denote the highest degree of the signification of the adjective.

*Door goed* extremely good-natured, *doorkoud* very cold, *doorwet* wet through, *doorreijp* thoroughly ripe; *inhitter* very bitter, *inbruin* very brown, *onschoon* most beautiful; *overvallen* very pretty, *overoud* very old, *overvol* over-full.

§ 670. Some adjectives are compounded after having been derived by means of the suffixes **-ig** and **-sch**.

*Rechtraardig* just, *vierroetig* quadruped, *zwartharig* black-haired: *alledaagsch* quotidian, daily, *onderaardsch* subterraneous, *vierdraadsch* four-thread.

#### IV. Substantives and Participles used adjectively.

§ 671. A few substantives are used as adjectives. *Meester* in the expression: *meester zijn* to be in possession of; *vrede* in the composition *terreden* content, and in the negation *onterreden* (instead of *te onvrede(n)*) discontented. Also such as are derived from geographical names by means of **er**: *Haarlemmer*, *Leipziger* &c.

§ 672. The number of Participles used as adjectives is much greater, as we have seen already in Lesson 33.

After the analogy of Past Participles formed from Substantival Verbs, adjectives have been formed directly from substantives by means of **d** or **t**.

*Geknaamd* flowered, *gedast* with a necktie, *geharmaast* in armour, *gehuarsd en gespoord* booted and spurred, *ge-naamd* called, *gerokt* with a dress-coat.

Such words may still be qualified by an adjective or by an adverb.

*Breedgeschouderd* broad-shouldered, *snelvliegend* fast-winged, *witgedast* with a white necktie, *zwartgerokt* with a black dress-coat; *bijgenaamd* surnamed.

#### V. Derivatives from geographical names.

§ 673. The following derivatives (nouns and adjectives) from much used geographical names should be noticed.

Country or town	Inhabitant	Adjective
<i>Abessinïë</i>	<i>Abessinïër</i>	<i>Abessinisch</i>
<i>Afrika</i>	<i>Afrikaan</i>	<i>Afrikaansch</i>
<i>Albanïë</i>	<i>Albanees</i>	<i>Albaansch</i>
<i>Alcandrie</i>	<i>Alcandriër</i>	<i>Alcandrijesch</i>
<i>Algiers</i>	<i>Algerijn</i>	<i>Algerijesch</i>
<i>Amerika</i>	<i>Amerikaan</i>	<i>Amerikaansch</i>
<i>Arabië</i>	<i>Arabisch</i>	<i>Arabisch</i>
<i>Athene</i>	<i>Atheneer</i>	<i>Atheneesch</i>
<i>Australië</i>	<i>Australiër</i>	<i>Australisch</i>

Country or town	Inhabitant	Adjective
<i>Batavia</i>	<i>Batarier</i>	<i>Batariaansch</i>
<i>Beieren</i>	<i>Beier</i>	<i>Beiersch</i>
<i>België</i>	<i>Belg</i>	<i>Belgisch</i>
<i>Berlijn</i>	<i>Berlijner</i>	<i>Berlijnsch</i>
<i>Bohemen</i>	<i>Boheemer</i>	<i>Boheemsch</i>
<i>Brazilië</i>	<i>Braziliaan</i>	<i>Braziliaansch</i>
<i>Britanjië</i>	<i>Brit</i>	<i>Britsch</i>
<i>Bulgarije</i>	<i>Bulgaar</i>	<i>Bulgaarsch</i>
<i>China</i>	<i>Chinees</i>	<i>Chineesch</i>
<i>Denemarken</i>	<i>Deen</i>	<i>Deensch</i>
<i>Duitschland</i>	<i>Duitscher</i>	<i>Duitsch</i>
<i>Egypte</i>	<i>Egyptenaar</i>	<i>Egyptisch</i>
<i>Engeland</i>	<i>Engelschman</i>	<i>Engelsch</i>
<i>Europa</i>	<i>Europeaan, Europeër</i>	<i>Europeesch</i>
<i>Frankrijk</i>	<i>Franschman</i>	<i>Fransch</i>
<i>Friesland</i>	<i>Fries</i>	<i>Friesch</i>
<i>Gallie</i>	<i>Gallier</i>	<i>Gallisch</i>
<i>Gasconje</i>	<i>Gasconier</i>	<i>Gasconisch</i>
<i>Genova</i>	<i>Genuees</i>	<i>Genueesch</i>
<i>Griekenland</i>	<i>Griek</i>	<i>Grieksch</i>
<i>Hannover</i>	<i>Hannoveraan</i>	<i>Hannoveraansch</i>
<i>Holland</i>	<i>Hollander</i>	<i>Hollandsch</i>
<i>Hongarije</i>	<i>Hongaar</i>	<i>Hongaarsch</i>
<i>Ierland</i>	<i>Ier</i>	<i>Iersch</i>
<i>Japan</i>	<i>Japanees</i>	<i>Japansch</i>
<i>Java</i>	<i>Javaan</i>	<i>Javaansch</i>
<i>Keulen, Cologne</i>	<i>Keulenaar</i>	<i>Keulsch</i>
<i>Malta</i>	<i>Maltezer</i>	<i>Malteesch</i>
<i>Milaan</i>	<i>Milanees</i>	<i>Milaansch</i>
<i>Napels</i>	<i>Napolitaan</i>	<i>Napelsch, Napolitaansch</i>
<i>Nederland(en)</i>	<i>Nederlander</i>	<i>Nederlandsch</i>
<i>Oostenrijk</i>	<i>Oostenrijker</i>	<i>Oostenrijksch</i>
<i>Oost-Indië</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>Oost-Indier</i>	<i>Oostindisch</i>
<i>Parijs</i>	<i>Parijzenaar</i>	<i>Parijsch</i>
<i>Perzië</i>	<i>Perzen Pl.</i>	<i>Perzisch</i>
<i>Portugal</i>	<i>Portugees</i>	<i>Portugeesch</i>
<i>Prusen</i>	<i>Pruis</i>	<i>Pruisisch</i>
<i>Rome</i>	<i>Romein</i>	<i>Romeinsch</i> <sup>2</sup>
<i>Rusland</i>	<i>Rus</i>	<i>Russisch</i>
<i>Saksen</i>	<i>Saks</i>	<i>Saksisch</i>
<i>Schotland</i>	<i>Schot</i>	<i>Schotsch</i>
<i>Servië</i>	<i>Servier</i>	<i>Servisch</i>
<i>Spanje</i>	<i>Spanjaard</i>	<i>Spaansch</i>
<i>Turkije</i>	<i>Turk</i>	<i>Turksch</i>
<i>Vlaanderen</i>	<i>Vlaming</i>	<i>Vlaamsch</i>

<sup>1</sup> Dutch colonies in Asia = the East Indies.<sup>2</sup> *Romeesch* Roman (catholic), *de Romeensen* the Roman catholics.

Country or town	Inhabitant	Adjective
<i>Weenen</i>	<i>Weener</i>	<i>Weener</i>
<i>Westfalen</i>	<i>Westfaal</i>	<i>Westfaalsch</i>
<i>West-Indië</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>West-Indiër</i>	<i>Westindisch</i>
<i>Zeeland</i> <sup>2</sup>	<i>Zeeuw</i>	<i>Zeeuwsch</i>
<i>Zwaben</i>	<i>Zwaab</i>	<i>Zwabisch</i>
<i>Zweden</i>	<i>Zweed</i>	<i>Zweedsch</i>
<i>Zwitserland</i>	<i>Zuutser</i>	<i>Zwitsersch</i> .

**Exercises.****115.**

Which adjectives have arisen from the roots of the verbs: *bijten*, *blijken*, *blinken*, *breken*, *dijen*, *geven*, *helen*, *komen*, *liggen*, *malen*, *nemen*, *rijzen*, *slijten*, *slinken*, *steken*, *verliezen*, *vliegen*.

**116.**

Which adjectives are derived from the following words by means of suffixes:

*afgod*, *angst*, *bedrijf*, *begeeren*, *beven*, *boer*, *bok*, *daags*, *dienst*, *duffel*, *een*, *ernst*, *geluk*, *gevoel*, *gewelddaad*, *gods-*  
*dienst*, *goed*, *grap*, *grond*, *goud*, *hof*, *hout*, *in*, *ijzer*, *jongd*,  
*kip*, *koper*, *kunst*, *laken*, *last*, *levend*, *loed*, *macht*, *nalaten*,  
*neder*, *neteldoek*, *nut*, *slapen*, *straatkunde*, *stad*, *stand*,  
*stooten*, *taalkunde*, *vaderland*, *verdriet*, *vergeefs*, *vijand*, *voor*,  
*voordeel*, *vrees*, *weelde*, *wet*, *willekeur*, *wind*, *zang*, *zilver*.

**117.**

Translate the following geographical names and add the names of persons and the adjectives derived from them:

*Abysinia*, *Africa*, *Albania*, *Alexandria*, *Algiers*, *America*,  
*Arabia*, *Australia*, *Austria*, *Batavia*, *Bavaria*, *Belgium*, *Berlin*,  
*Bohemia*, *Brazil*, *Britain*, *Bulgaria*, *China*, *Cologne*, *Denmark*,  
the *East-Indies*, *Egypt*, *England*, *Europe*, *Flanders*, *Friesland*,  
*Gascon*, *Gaul*, *Genoa*, *Greece*, *Hanover*, *Holland*, *Hungary*,  
*Ireland*, *Japan*, *Java*, *Malta*, *Milan*, *Naples*, the *Netherlands*,  
*Paris*, *Persia*, *Portugal*, *Prussia*, *Rome*, *Russia*, *Saxony*,  
*Scotland*, *Servia*, *Spain*, *Turkey*, *Vienna*, the *West-Indies*,  
*Westphalia*, *Swabia*, *Sweden*, *Switzerland*, *Zeeland*.

**118**

Translate: *Able*, *almighty*, *alone*, *amiable*, *apparent*,  
*artificially*, *backward*, *beastly*, *black haired*, *blackish*, *blessed*,  
*bodily*, *bomb-proof*, *booted and spurred*, *brand-new*, *broad-*  
*shouldered*, *careful*, *cavilling*, *charitable*, *charming*, *childish*,

<sup>1</sup> Dutch colonies in South-America.

<sup>2</sup> Dutch province: cf. *goed ranti*, *goed Zeeuwsch* a proverbial saying about the sincerity of the inhabitants of this province.

clumsy, complete, conscious (of), considerate, consoling, content, coquettish, costly, dark-red, deplorable, discontented, diverting, divisible, doubtful, elderly, eligible, equal, extensible, faithful, fast-winged, fearful, fertile, flexible, four-thread, genteel, gigantic, grass-green, grave, greenish, hazardous, helpless, heroic, honest, honourable, human, hypocritical, inactive, infamous, infrangible, inquisitive, instinctively, inward, irrecoverable, jeering, just, lasting, lawful, lightgreen, lovely, manifold, manly, milkwhite, moral, mortal, motley, obedient, oily, oldish, outward, participating, patient, patriarchal, praise-worthy, preferable, proof, quadruped, quarrelsome, quotidian, ready, regular, remarkable, repentant, respectable, revicend, rough, sea-sick, sensible, severe, shadowy, shallow, silly, sky-blue, slow, stonedeaf, stony, subterraneous, suitable (to), sure, surnamed, talkative, thankful, thank-worthy, theatrical, tolerable, true, useful, visible, wearable, willing.

119.

Translate :

### **The Royal Carpenter.**

Scene II.

Mrs. S. O, Michael, must you leave us again, so soon?

S. Yes, mother; I have stayed too long already. I came to see you and Katerina at the risk of my life; and, apart from the danger, if I remain longer I shall lose my situation at Saardam and all my hopes for the future. You know I was made a soldier against my will, and hated the army life the more I saw of it. But as a carpenter I am free and independent, and should be quite happy, if only you and Katerina would come with me, and take care of my wages.

Mrs. S. Ah, Michael, I am too old now to leave home; and as for Katerina — you are surely not able yet to maintain a wife?

S. That is too true, mother; the more need, therefore, for me to go back to my trade at once. Besides, I am really in danger here. (A knock.) Ah! how every knock makes me start. Stop, mother; don't open the door until I get out of sight. (He slips behind a screen.)

Enter Peter, hastily. Come out, old comrade! Don't be hiding yourself; did I not see you through the window? Surely you are not afraid of me?

S. Peter! is it possible? I am right glad to see you again. But how on earth come you to be here in Moscow? There is no ship-building going on so far inland.

P. No, but there is in St. Petersburg, the new city that the Czar is building.

S. They say that the Czar is in Moscow just now.

P. Yes. He passed through your street this morning.

S. So I heard, but I did not see him. Peter, how did you ever find me out?

P. Why, happening to see your mother's name over the door, it occurred to me, after I returned to the palace.

S. The palace!

P. Yes, I always call the place a palace where I put up. It is a fancy I have.

S. You were always a queer fellow!

P. As I was saying, it occurred to me that Mrs. Stanmitz might be the mother or the aunt of my old comrade, and so I put on this disguise.

S. Ha, ha! the disguise of a gentleman. Peter, where did you get such fine clothes?

P. (sternly). Don't interrupt me, sir!

S. What a strange tone to speak in to an old friend! But I am sure you mean well; and I thank you for wishing to hear something of me.

P. Ah, Michael, many's the big log we have chopped at together, through the long summer day, in Van Block's ship-yard.

S. That we have, Peter! I wish you were going back with me!

P. I can get better wages at St. Petersburg.

S. If it were not the fear of being called to account for my long walk that December morning, I would go with you.

— — — — —

## Forty-third Lesson. Drie en veertigste Les.

### De Poppenkast. (Vervolg.)

En dat rijke tooneel met de kist, waarin, na een hevigen huiselijken twist, Katrijn gestopt wordt, waarna hij de kist aan den jood verkoopt, die tot zijn vreeselijken schrik, als hij zijn koopje naar huis wil dragen, eensklaps Katrijn halverwege er uit ziet komen. Op het oogenblik, dat hij er haar verder uit wil trekken, nadert Jan Klaassen hem van achteren en in een ommezien stopt deze hem er bij in, springt in triump op de kist en blijft in die houding, in weerwil van de hopelooze pogingen van de gevangenen, die het deksel al op en neer doen klappen. Ik wil hier niet eens spreken van de tooneelen met den zwarten duivel met zijne spitse tong van rood laken, of van den witten Pierlala, die niet spreekt, maar alleen zijn geheimzinnig „brrrrrie! brrrrrie!“ laat hooren, dat de vertooner weet voort te brengen door te blazen op twee platte baleintjes, welke hij tusschen zijne lippen op elkander klemmt; — die wonderlijke

gedaante, die op het oogenblik, dat Jan Klaassen zijn rechterbeen met zijne beide handen heeft opgenomen om storm te loopen op den vreemden snoes, die hem met zijn eeuwig „brrrrrie!“ verveelt, plotseling tot eene ongehoorde lengte aangroeit, die ver boven den bovenkant van het theater uitsteekt.

### Formation of Verbs.

#### I. By means of prefixes.

§ 674. The prefixes by means of which verbs are formed are: *be*, *er*, *her*, *ge*, *ont* and *ver*.

§ 675. *Be* (= *bi*) has its original signification of: *at*, *by*, *near*, *on*, *to*, *upon* in a few verbs.

*Behooren* to belong (to), *belanden* to arrive (at), *beienden* to border (on), *berusten* to submit to.

*Be* forms transitive verbs from intransitive.

*Beguan* to tread upon, *bespringen* to attack, *betreuren* to lament, *bevaren* to navigate, *beveenen* to bewail.

*Be* also forms transitive verbs from nouns, though the primitive word is not used as a verb.

*Bekransen* to wreath, *belasten* to burden, *bevolken* to people, *bevoordeelen* to benefit, *beredigen* to satisfy.

Before some transitive verbs *be* alters or strengthens the meaning.

*Begrijpen* to seize or understand, *beplanten* to plant, *be-rooven* to rob, *besnoeien* to prune, *bevatten* to comprise or contain, *bezaiien* to sow, *bezingen* to sing (of).

In a few intransitive verbs *be* denotes a beginning of the action.

*Bekoelen* to cool, *bevriezen* to freeze, *bezinken* to clarify or settle.

§ 676. *Er* occurs in verbs which have been borrowed from the German only.

*Erachten*: *mijns erachtens* in my opinion, *zich erbarmen* (= *zich ontfermen*) to have mercy upon, *erkennen* to acknowledge, *erlangen* to acquire, *ervaren* (= *onder-vinden*) to experience; with a prefixed *h*: *herinneren* to remember.

By prefixing this *h* the new prefix *her* was very probably made, which belongs to modern Dutch only and is entirely absent in German.

*Herademem* to breathe again, *herbakken* to rebake, *herbouwen* to rebuild, *herdenken* to commemorate, *herdoen*

to do over again, *herdoopen* to rebaptize, *herdrukken* to reprint, *hereenen* to reunite, *herhalen* to repeat, *herkauwen* to ruminate, *herkennen* to recognize, *herleven* to revive, *herlezen* to read over again, *hernemen* to take again or reply, *hernieuwen* to renew, *herroepen* to recall, *hervormen* to reform, *herzien* to revise &c.

§ 677. *Ge* alters slightly or in some verbs not at all the signification of the primitive word.

*Gebeuren* or *geschieden* to happen, *gedragen* to behave, *gelooven* to believe, *genaken* to approach, *gewagen* to mention; cf.: *lijken* and *gelijken* to resemble, *lukken* and *gelukken* to succeed, *roelen* and *gevoelen* to feel, *winnen* and *gewinnen* to gain.

§ 678. *Ont* has still its original signification of *tegen*, *terug* (against, back) in some verbs.

*Onthouden* to withhold, *ontmoeten* to meet, *ontraden* to dissuade from, *ontzeggen* to deny, *ontzien* to respect.

In the following verbs it has the meaning of bringing into a new condition.

*Ontbranden* to take fire, *ontdooien* to thaw, *ontruimen* to evacuate, *ontslapen* to expire, *ontspruiten* to bud forth, *ontvreemden* to embezzle.

In other verbs it denotes a bereaving or depriving.

*Ontadelen* to deprive of nobility, *ontbinden* to dissolve, *ontdekken* to uncover or discover, *ontgrendelen* to unbolt, *ontluiken* to open, *ontsluiten* to unlock.

From the latter meaning follows that of *away*.

*Ontgaan* to avoid, *ontglippen* to escape or drop, *ontleenen* to borrow, *ontstelen* to rob, *ontvallen* to slip out of, *ontlieden* to escape.

§ 679. *Ver* denotes.

The opposite of what the primitive word expresses; or *evil*, *false*, *wrong*.

*Verachten* to despise, *verbeuren* to lose, *verdenken* to suspect, *vergissen* to err, *verleiden* to seduce.

A destruction or loss by means of the action.

*Verbranden* to reduce to ashes, *verbrijzelen* to crush, *verdrunken* to spend on drink (also to drown or to be drowned), *vermoorden* to murder, *verslapen* to oversleep oneself, *verspelen* to lose in playing, *vervliegen* to evaporate.



A change or transition.

*Verbedden* to change beds, *verhuizen* to remove, *verkleeden* to change one's dress, to disguise, *verkleinen* to diminish, *vernederen* to humiliate, *verschrikken* to frighten, *versteenen* to petrify.

A covering or secluding.

*Verbinden* to bandage, *vermommen* to disguise, *vernagelen* to spike, *verschansen* to fortify or intrench, *verzegelen* to seal.

## II. By means of suffixes.

§ 680. The suffixes by means of which verbs were formed or may be formed are: *el*, *er*, *j* (*ig*) and the foreign suffix *eer*; now-a-days verbs are generally formed from their primitive word without any suffix.

§ 681. The verbs that are formed from nouns denote an action which may be explained from the meaning of the primitive word.

*Boeren* (= *boer zijn*) to farm, *blozen* (= *eenen bloz hebben*) to blush, *doppen* (= *den dop doen verliezen*) to shell, *herbergen* to lodge, *huizen* to lodge or to live (with), *kleeden* to dress, *pakken* to pack up, *ploegen* to plough, *risschen* to fish.

§ 682. Such as are formed from adjectives denote causation — they cause someone or something to acquire the quality expressed by the adjective; they also signify being or becoming what the adjective expresses.

*Dartelen* (= *dartel worden*) to frolick, *dooden* (= *dood maken*) to kill, *groenen* to become green, *richten* to point, *rotten* to rot, *sterken* to strengthen, *suffen* to dote, *witten* to whitewash, *zuiveren* to purify.

§ 683. Some verbs have been formed from nouns or adjectives by means of *ig*.

*Eindigen* (from *einde*) to finish, *reinigen* (*rein*) to purify, *steenigen* (*steen*) to stone, *vestigen* (*vast*) to establish.

With prefixes.

*Bereyden* (*vrede*) to satisfy or pacify, *verkondigen* (*kond*) to proclaim or preach.

**Note.** These verbs are not to be confounded with such as are formed from adjectives ending in *ig*, as: *beveiligen* (*veilig*) to secure, *heiligen* (*heilig*) to sanctify, *rechtvaardigen* (*rechtvaardig*) to justify, *vervaardigen* (*vaardig*) to construct.

§ 684. The suffix **eer(en)** has been borrowed from foreign words as: *dineeren* to dine, *tracteeren* to treat; so it was used to form verbs from Dutch nouns and adjectives.

*Halveeren* (*half*) to halve, *stoffeeeren* (*stof*) to furnish, *trotseeren* (*trots*) to defy, *verkleineeren* (also *verkleinen*) to diminish, *voeteeren* (*voet*) to go on foot, *waardeeren* (*waarde*) to value.

**Note.** Besides (*na*)*bootsen* to imitate we have also the verb *bootseeren* to model from *bootse* (French *bosse* model).

§ 685. Originally verbs were formed from substantives or adjectives ending in **el** or **er**, some of which are no longer in use.

*Roosteren* to roast, *schulderen* to paint, *waggelen* to stagger, *wandelen* to walk, *wankelen* to waver, *weigeren* to refuse.

Afterwards many verbs were formed in this way by means of the suffixes **el**, **er** from verbal roots; they denote the repetition of the action named in the rootword: hence they are usually named **Frequentative Verbs**.

*Duikelen* (from *duiken*) to dive, *klapperen* (*klappen*) to chatter, *krabbelen* (*krabben*) to scratch, *schuifelen* (*schuiven*) to shuffle, *wentelen* (*wenden*) to welter or wallow.

§ 686. The **Intensive Verbs** stand beside other verbs but with a strengthened meaning: the root-vowel has changed into a short one, hence the doubling of the final consonant.

*Bukken* (*buigen*) to bow or stoop, *hikken* (*hijgen*) to hiccough, *stikken* (*steken*) to stitch, *verspillen* (*spelen*) to waste, *wikken* (*wegen*) to consider or weigh.

Some have also acquired a frequentative ending.

*Bibberen* (*beven*) to shiver, *dribbelen* (*drijven*) to trot, *jakkeren* (*jagen*) to hurry, *kabbelen* (*kauwen*) to ripple, *kibbelen* (*kijren*) to quarrel, *knabbelen* (*knauwen*) to nibble.

§ 687. The **Causative Verbs** are formed from the roots of strong verbs by means of vowel-change.

*Drenken* (from *drank* — *drinken*) to drench or water, (*ge*)*hengen* (*hang* — *hangen*) to allow, *klooven* (*kloof* — *klieren*) to cleave, *leggen* (*lay* — *liggen*) to lay, *leiden* (*leed* — *lijden*) to lead, *neigen* (*neeg* — *nijgen*) to incline, *vellen* (*val* — *vallen*) to fell, *voeren* (*voer* — *varen*) to convey, *wenden* (*wand* — *winden*) to turn, *zetten* (*zat* — *zitten*) to set, *zoogen* (*zoog* — *zuigen*) to suckle.

§ 688. The verb *mijnen* to buy at a public sale by calling mine, is formed from the possessive pronoun *mijn*.

The following verbs are formed from particles.

*Bejegenen* (*jegen*) to treat, *bevorderen* (*voort*) to promote, *innen* (*in*) to gather, *naderen* (*nader*) to approach, *opperen* (*opper*) to propose, *uiten* (*uit*) to utter, *vernederen* (*neder*) to humble, *veroveren* (*over*) to conquer.

### III. Composition.

§ 689. As the rules about the formation of compound verbs have already been given in Lesson 22, we only mention here the peculiar formation of some verbs consisting of a verbal root with a noun denoting part of the body. These compounds departing from the general rules of compounds are used in colloquial Dutch with a comical meaning.

*Druipstaarten* to be abashed or sneak away, *klappertanden* to chatter (one's teeth), *klapwieken* to clap the wings, *knarsetanden* to gnash the teeth, *knikkebollen* to nod or doze, *knipoogen* to wink, *kortwieken* to clip (the wings), *plukharen* to catch each other by the hair, *reikhalzen* to long for, *schoorcoeten* to hesitate, *stampvoeten* to stamp (one's feet), *suizebollen* to grow giddy, *trekkenbekken* to bill or coo.

### Exercises.

#### 120.

Which verbs are formed from the following words:

Beven, blos, boer, buigen, dartel, dood, dop, drijven, drinken, duiken, einde, groen, half, hangen, heilig, herberg, hijgen, huis, in, jagen, jegen(s), kauwen, kijken, klappen, kleed, klein, klieven, knabbelen, kond, krabben, liggen, lijden, mijn, nader, neder, nijgen, opper, over, pak, ploeg, recht, rechtvaardig, rein, rooster, rot, schilder, schuiven, spelen, steen, steken, sterk, stof, suf, trots, uit, vaardig, vallen, varen, vast, veilig, visch, voet, vrede, waarde, wegen, wenden, winden, wit, zitten, zuigen, zuiver.

#### 121.

Translate:

To acknowledge, to acquire, to approach, to arrive at, to attack, to avoid, to be abashed, to behave, to believe, to belong to, to benefit, to bewail, to bill, to border on, to borrow, to breathe again, to burden, to catch each other by the hair, to celebrate, to change beds, to chatter (one's

teeth), to clarify, to clip the wings, to comprise, to confide in, to cool, to crush, to deny, to deprive of nobility, to despise, to diminish, to dine, to discover, to disguise, to dissolve, to dissuade from, to do over again, to embezzle, to err, to escape, to evacuate, to evaporate, to experience, to expire, to feel, to flap the wings, to fortify, to freeze, to gain, to gnash the teeth, to grow giddy, to happen, to have mercy upon, to humiliate, to hesitate, to lament, to long for, to lose, to lose by sleeping, to lose in playing.

## 122.

To meet, to mention, to model, to murder, to navigate, to nod, to open, to paint, to people, to petrify, to plant, to prune, to read over again, to rebake, to rebaptize, to rebuild, to recall, to recognize, to reduce to ashes, to reform, to refuse, to remember, to remove, to renew, to repeat, to reprint, to resemble, to return to life, to reunite, to revise, to rob, to ruminate, to satisfy, to seal, to seduce, to seize, to shun, to slip out of, to sow, to spend on drink, to spike, to sprout, to stamp, to succeed, to suspect, to take fire, to thaw, to tie, to tread upon, to treat, to unbolt, to unlock, to walk, to wink, to withhold, to wreath.

## 123.

Translate :

### The Royal Carpenter.

Scene II. (End.)

P. How came you to venture back here?

S. This old mother of mine was longing so to see me; and then Katerina — she has waited all this time for me, dear girl! If only I were not so poor! But next year, if I have luck at my trade in Van Block's, I may be able to make a run back and marry her, and then get my old mother persuaded to come along with us.

P. I could get a pretty sum just now by informing on a deserter.

S. Pray don't joke on that subject, Peter! I know you are only joking, but it frightens mother. — Well, Peter, it is a pleasure to have seen you again! I am going off to-night — any message to the old set? (A loud knock at the door. He peeps through the window.) Soldiers, and an officer with them! What can it mean? Peter, excuse me, I must disappear.

P. Stay! I assure you it is not you they want. They are friends of mine.

S. Oh, in that case I may remain. But, do you know,

one of those fellows looks wonderfully like my old commander?

Enter Officer. An important despatch from St. Petersburg, your Majesty, requiring your instant attention.

Mrs. S. Majesty!

S. Majesty! Peter, what does this man mean?

Officer. Down, sir! do you not know who this is? Down on your knees to Peter the Great, Czar of Russia!

Mrs. S. (falling on her knees). Oh, your Majesty! your Majesty! have mercy on my poor boy! he is my only son! he did not know what he was doing!

S. Nonsense, mother! This is only one of Peter's jokes. Ha! ha! ha! keep it up, Peter! It's very good.

Officer. You impudent rascal! let me look at you more closely. I think we have met before. — Soldiers, arrest this fellow! he is a deserter! ✓

S. (with a gesture of despair). It's all over with me now! O Peter, Peter! can you not help an old comrade? How can you go on reading so composedly?

Mrs. S. (wringing her hands). O good Mr. Officer, spare my boy!

Officer. He must go before a court-martial. He ought to be shot.

P. (looks up suddenly from reading the despatch). Officer, I have occasion for the services of your prisoner. Release him.

Officer. Your Majesty's will is absolute.

S. (aside). Majesty again! What does it all mean? A light breaks in upon me. There were rumours in Holland, when I left, that the Czar had been working in one of the ship-yards. Can my Peter be the Emperor?

P. Stanmitz, you have my secret now.

S. And you are —

P. The Czar. (S. falls on his knees.) Rise, my friend! Rise, old woman; your son, Baron Stanmitz, is safe.

Mrs. S. Baron Stanmitz!

P. I require his services to superintend my shipbuilding yard at St. Petersburg. You must both prepare to leave for the new city at once. Michael, make your Katerina a baroness to-morrow, and bring her with you. Hush, no thanks! I have urgent business claiming my care, so I cannot attend the wedding. Here is a purse of ducats. One of my secretaries will call with orders in the morning. Farewell!

S. O Peter! Peter! — I mean your Majesty! your Majesty! I'm so completely bewildered, I do not know

what to say, or how to thank you! Forgive me, your Majesty! friend Peter! — I'm surely in a dream!

P. Ha! ha! good-bye, old comrade! We shall meet again soon. Commend me to your Katerina. (Exit.)

S. Mr. Officer, when do you think that court-martial you spoke of is likely to be held?

Officer. Baron, I take my leave. I hope you will speak a good word for me to his Majesty, when you have an opportunity.

S. Now for Katerina! What a story I have to tell her!

## Forty-forth Lesson. Vier en veertigste Les.

### De Poppenkast. (Slot.)

Daar zijn nog eene menigte andere tooneelen, die gij alle kent, als die van het wiegen, van den schareslijp enz., waar hij overal de hoofdpersoon is, overal even groot, overal overwinnaar door list of door geweld, waar overal de houten koppen geweldig tegen elkander kletsen, en waardoor overal gejuich en gejubel wordt opgewekt. Kortom, — want ik moet een einde aan de uiting van mijn gevoel maken, hoewel het mij moeilijk is, ik beken het, want de zaak gaat mij ter harte — dāt hoop ik maar, wat er in de wereld ook vooruit moge gaan, als 't dan toch zoo wezen moet — dat men mijn ouden vriend in zijne oorspronkelijke waarde zal laten. Verfraai hem niet, sier hem niet op, tracht hem niet te verbeteren, breid uwe philanthropie niet over hem uit; maak omwentelingen, zooveel gij wilt — maak de geheele wereld tot republiek, maar laat hem op zijn troon, en gun ons, die nog een beetje van den ouden tijd zijn, dat we op de laatste kermis, die we zullen mogen beleven, nog ten minste één ding kunnen zien, dat nog juist zoo is, als het was in onze jonge jaren — laat mij dien eenen troost, dat ik mij niet dertig jaar lang heb vermaakt met iets, waar een kleuter van vijf jaar, als ik een oud man zal wezen, zijn neus voor zal optrekken, omdat Jan Klaassen en Katrijn niet aan de regels van zijnen kunstsmaak voldoen.

Lodewijk Mulder.

### Formation of Numerals.

§ 690. The Indefinite Numeral *geen* has been formed from *neg* (not) and *een*.

Of the Cardinal Numbers the following deserve notice:

**twintig** instead of *tweetig*, originally *twenty* with *n* inserted, *e* changed into *i*;

**dertien** and **dertig** are used instead of *dretien* and *dretig*, the first part of which (*dre*) was originally *dri* = *drie* without the inflectional ending *e*;

**veertien** and **veertig** beside *vier* as *ie* changed into *ee*;

**tachtig** instead of *achtig* from an old form *antúchtig* which at first became *entachtig*, afterwards *etachtig* and at last *tachtig*;

**veertig**, **vijftig**, **zestig**, **zeventig** from *vier*, *vijf*, *zes*, *zeven*, by changing *v* and *z* into *f* and *s* under the influence of *t* from the old prefix **ant**, although *v* and *z* are still written; see §§ 27, 33, 113, 117.

### Formation of Adverbs.

§ 691. From the root of the pronouns **hij**, **die**, **wie** are formed: *hier*, *heen*, *henen*, *daar* (*der*, *er*), (*van*)-*daan*, *dan*, *toch* (instead of *doch*), *toen* (formerly *doe*), *waar*, *wann(eer)*, *hoe* and the words: *her(waarts)*, *der(waarts)*, *wer(waarts)* which are used very seldom now-a-days. From **die** the Gen. Sing. Neuter is used as an Adverb: *dies* (= *daarom*), *des*, *dus*.

§ 692. The old ending *e* which was used to form Adverbs from Adjectives is now to be found in a few words only: *alreede*, *dichte* (*bij*), *luide*, *verre*; this *e* has also been dropt, hence many Adverbs have the same form as the Adj. and afterwards many more Adj. and even Participles were used in this way as Adverbs.

*Verleden* lately, *volmaakt* completely, *voortdurend* continually, *razend knap* extremely clever, *gloeiend mooi* awfully nice, *kokend heet* boiling hot.

Such Adverbs however may be distinguished from the Adjectives by adding **lijk**:

*Gelijkelijk* equally, *gemeentlijk* commonly, *gewisselijk* surely, *gewoonlijk* usually, *herhaaldelijk* repeatedly, *heuschelijk* courteously, *voorzichtiglijk* prudently, *waarachtiglijk* certainly, *waarlijk* truly &c.

§ 693. As Substantives in the Acc. may be used as adverbial adjuncts of time, value &c., some of them became real Adverbs: *altijd* always, *eenmaal* once.

Some Substantives in the Dative also became Adverbs:

*heinde* from *hand*, *midden* from *mid* (still in *mid**dag*), *vaak* (often) instead of *vake* from *rak*, *wijlen* from *wijle*, *mijnentirege* and *onzenthalf(n)* with an inserted *t*.

The Genetive was originally the case in which many words were used as adverbial expressions. Hence:

Substantives, as: *daags*, *deels*, *steeds*, and with the article: *'s avonds*, *'s morgens*, *'s nachts*.

Adjectives, as: *anders*, *onlangs*, *rechts*, *reeds*, *slechts*, *straks*; especially with a diminutive ending: *netjes*, *warmpjes*, *zachtjes*, *zoetjes*, *stillekens*, *zachtken*.

Participles, as: *onverhoeds*, *onverwachts*, and with a dropped *d*: *doorgaans*, *vervolgens*, *wetens*, *willens*.

The Numeral: *eens*.

§ 694. Some Compounds consist of an Adjective and a Substantive having both the Genetive ending:

*alleszins*, *anderszins*, *blootshoofds*, *geenszins*, *goedsmoeds*, *grootendeels*.

Also feminine Substantives are connected with Adjectives, if they are used figuratively:

*halverwegen* (cf.: *allerwegen* with a Pl. Genetive form), *gewapenderhand*, *langzamerhand*, *middeleerwijl*.

If however the Substantives are used in their real signification, the adverbial expressions are written in two words:

*onverrichter zake*, *ouder gewoonte*, *spottender wijze*, *vergelijkender wijze*, *vragender wijze*, *zaliger gedachtenis*.

This word *wijze* has also been connected with Substantives in the Genetive:

*boogswijze*, *stukswijze*, *trapswijze*; with a verbal root in: *steelswijze*.

The adverbial character was further strengthened by *ge*:

*groepsgewijze*, *steelsgewijze*, *trapsgewijze*.

§ 695. As the old Genetive form of the Adverbs was no longer considered as such, the *s* was taken as a suffix by which Adverbs are formed, hence it was added to words which should not have it as weak Genetives or Datives: *overigens*, *trouwens*, *minstens*;



Accusatives: *altoos, dikwijls, somtijds*; it was even added to Substantives or Adjectives with prepositions:

*achterbaks* (cf. back), *bijkans* (= *bij den kant*), *omstreeks*, *thans* (= *te hande*), *terloops*, *namaals*, *voormuuls*, *vanzins*, *tevens*, *nevens*, *vannieuws*, *aanstonds*.

In the following words the preposition has taken *s*: *binnenlands*, *binnensmonds*, *buitenslands*, *insgelijks*, *voorshands*.

Also the endings *lijks*, *lings*, *waarts*:

*dagelijks*, *blindelings*, *voorwaarts*.

§ 696. Compound Adverbs may be formed from two Adverbs:

*evenzeer*, *hoeveel*, *hoererre*, *zoolang*, *zooveel*, *zooverre*, *weleer*.

Such are also the combinations:

*achterover*, *bijna*, *bovenaan*, *bovenop*, *kortaf*, *onderdoor*, *onderin*, *rechtzaf*, *rondom*, *ronduit*, *tusschenin*, *volop*, *voorover*.

And the pronominal adverbs: *vandaar*, *vanhier*, *vanwaar* in their figurative signification.

§ 697. Compounds consisting of a preposition with a Substantive, or an Adjective in a figurative signification, are:

*bijgeval*, *integendeel*, *omtrent*, *onderweg*, *onderwijl*, *overeind*, *overhoop*, *terug*, *voorhanden*, *weg* (instead of *weg*, from *enweg*); with an article: *bijdehand*.

The following are formed from a preposition with an Adjective used substantively:

*eerlang*, *opnieuw*, *overkort*, *overlang*, *overluid*, *tegelijk*, *tegoed*, *terecht*, *voorgoed*, *voortlang*, *voortwaar*, *voorzeker*.

§ 698. Some Compound Adverbs are formed from a preposition with the numeral *al* or *een* which have assumed the character of adverbs in these Compounds:

*aaneen*, *achtereen*, *alleen*, *allengs*, *bijeen*, *dooreen*, *ondereen*, *overal*, *vaneen*, *vooral*.

### Formation of Prepositions.

§ 699. The root-words were originally the same as the adverbs, so:

*aan*, *bij*, *door*, *in*, *na*, *om*, *op*, *uit*, *voor*, *met* (adverb *mede*), *te* (adverb *toe*).

Compounds are: *tot* = *to* + *te*, *van* = *af* + *aan*.

§ 700. Some Prepositions are derived from adverbs by means of **ter**, **er**, **en**:

*achter*, *naar* (instead of *naher*), *onder*, *over*, *sedert* (with **t** added, beside *sinds*), *zonder*.

With the prefix **be**:

*beneden*, *binnen*, *boven*, *buiten*.

*Tegen* is formed from *te* and *jegen* beside *jegens* with an adverbial **s**; this *tegen* has been composed once more with *over* in *tegenover*.

*Naast* is the Superlative of the adverb *na*.

§ 701. Adjectives used adverbially have become Prepositions in *langs* and *tusschen* (originally from *twee*).

Substantives in the Dative with an adverbial **s** occur in: *krachtens*, *tijdens*, *wegens*.

Substantives in the Genetive in: *ondanks* and *trots*.

Substantives with the Preposition **bij** in: *behalve*, *bezijden*; with other Prepositions in: *ingevolge*, *nerens*, *omstreeks*, *omtrent*.

§ 702. Participles which have become Prepositions (with or without **s**) are:

*aangaande*, *behoudens*, *gedurende*, *niettegenstaande*, *nopens*, *volgens*.

### Formation of Conjunctions.

§ 703. Of the co-ordinate Conj. only *en* (originally *ende*), *of* (originally *ofte*) and *noch* were exclusively used as Conj. in old Dutch. The sentence which they connect with the preceding has the logical order of words; such is also the case with *want* (formerly also adverb), *doch* (adverb *toch*) and *maar* (also adv.). The expression *wel is waar* may be used as an adverb and as a co-ordinate Conj.; all the other co-ordinate Conj. are originally adverbs.

§ 704. The subordinate Conj. *of* (originally = if) must not be confounded with the co-ordinate *of* (from *ofte*); it is the only one which was used exclusively as a Conj. in old Dutch.

In *ofschoon* the second part (*schoon*) has strengthening force only, cf.: *ofschoon het regent* with *of het al regent* and with *of* (subordin.) *het regent of* (co-ordin.) *niet, wij gaan toch uit*.

§ 705. A pronominal root occurs in *zoo* (= if), which is also an adverb; it is connected with *al* (= entirely in *alzoo*), which is a Conj. and an Adverb. This *alzoo* was afterwards weakened to *alse*, *als* (= if), which is used as a Conj. only, also in *zoodra als*.

§ 706. Of the interrogative Adverbs the following have become real Conjunctions:

*waarom* (= for which reason), *wanneer* (= *als*), borrowed from the German *wen*, *weshalve*, *hoe* (= how-soever); the Compounds: *hoevel* and *hoezeer*.

§ 707. The following subordinate Conj. are formed from an Adverb and *dat*:

*zoodat*, *zonder dat*, *behalve dat*; — *dan dat*, *eer dat*, *mits dat*, *sedert dat*, *sinds dat*;

the latter of which may be used without *dat*, as the Adverbs then become Conjunctions. In the same way the following Adverbs have now become Conjunctions:

*dewijl*, *nademaal*, *nu*, *ten einde*, *terwijl*, *toen*.

§ 708. Several Conjunctions were originally Prepositions with the Dative or Accusative of the Sing. Neuter of the Demonstrative Pronoun followed by *dat*. Some of them became Conj. when *dat* was omitted:

*bijaldien*, *doordien*, *indien*, *naardien*.

Of some others the Demonstrative Pronoun was omitted:

*omdat* (= *om dien dat*), *opdat*, *doordat*.

*Dat* may even be omitted and then the Preposition is used as a Conjunction, so in:

*naardat*, *nadat*, *totdat*, *voordat*.

§ 709. In analogy with the above-mentioned words, some Participles have become Conjunctions:

*aangezien* = *dit aangezien zijnde dat*, *niettegenstaande* = *niet tegenstaande dit dat*.

*Dat* must be used in: *gedurende dat*, *uitgezonderd dat*, *aangenomen dat*, *gesteld dat* &c.; by omitting *dat* these expressions are no longer Conjunctions; cf.: ***gesteld dat*** *hij uitging* and ***gesteld*** *hij ging uit*.

Without *dat* are used generally:

*hetzij* = *het moge zijn dat*, *tenzij* = *het moge niet zijn dat*, *tencare* (= *het mocht niet zijn dat*).

**Exercises.**

124.

Which Adverbs are formed from:

ander, avond, blind, boog, dag, deel, dicht, een, eind, gelijk, gemeen, geval, gewis, gewoon, gloeien, half, hand, herhaald, heusch, hoop, kant, kort, lang, loop, luid, maal, mid, morgen, nacht, net, nieuw, recht, slecht, stil, stond, strak, streek, stuk, tijd, vak, ver, volmaken, voortduren, voorzichtig, waar, warm, wijle, zacht, zeker, zin, zoet.

125.

Which Prepositions are formed from:

aangaan, behouden, duren, gevolg, in, tegen, kracht, lang, na, nopen, ondank, streek, tegenstaan, tijd, uit, volgen, weg, zijde.

126.

Which Conjunctions are formed from:

behalve, dan, dien, door, einde, maal, mits, om, op, sedert, sinds, wjl, zonder, zoo.

127.

Translate:

**Circular announcing the Establishment<sup>1</sup> of a  
Commercial House<sup>1</sup>.**

Rotterdam, 1<sup>st</sup> February, 1912.

Messrs. . . . .

Gentlemen,

I beg leave to inform you that I have to-day established  
**a Wine Trade**

in this city, which I shall conduct on my own account under  
the firm of

**K. P. Aalsteker.**

I have acquired, by being active for many years in respectable houses of this branch, a competent experience in business matters and the necessary knowledge of the branch, so that, supported by sufficient funds, I may consider myself able to manage the business of my house successfully.

The principle of the strictest loyalty will serve me as a guide in all my undertakings, and it will always be my endeavour to justify the confidence I now solicit and to bestow all possible care on the execution of the orders which you may be pleased to give me.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Oprichting van eene (handels)zaak.*

Requesting you to take notice of my signature subjoined, I have the honour to be, Gentlemen,  
most respectfully Yours,  
Karel P. Aalsteker,  
who will sign: K. P. Aalsteker.

128.

**Circular announcing the Foundation of a  
Factory Business.**

Haarlem, 15<sup>th</sup> February, 1912.

Gentlemen,

I take the liberty of apprising you that I have established a manufactory of

**Metal-Bindings,**

the business of which I shall carry on, from and after this day, in my own name and on my own account.

A good water-power as well as all the latest improvements, in connection with a thorough knowledge of the above line of business and the necessary capital resources, enable me to manufacture, at reasonable prices, an article substantial and able to defy competition. An order by way of trial will convince you that my fabrics may rival those of other manufactures, both for their beauty and soundness, and that, besides, they are somewhat cheaper than those.

I shall consider it an honour to see you among my customers, and you may be confident that I shall give you satisfaction in every respect.

I subjoin my price-list, begging you to believe me, Sir,

Your obedient servant,  
Ferd. Witsenhoven.

129.

**Circular announcing the Sale of a Business.  
Seller's Circular.**

The Hague, 15<sup>th</sup> April, 1912.

Gentlemen,

I have to inform you that I have sold to Mr. Theod. Slips the Factory-business hitherto carried on by me on my account under the firm of

**Mineraalwaterfabriek La Haye, Ph. Korthuis.**

Mr. Slips will continue my business under the old firm, taking upon himself all the assets (there are no debts) and I request you to transfer to him the confidence with which you have honoured myself.

I return you my best thanks for the favour and support that I enjoyed at your hands on many occasions, and reserve to myself to acquaint you subsequently of my further enterprises.

Meanwhile I remain, Gentlemen, Yours truly,  
Ph. Korthuis,  
who ceases to sign: Mineraalwaterfabriek La Haye,  
Ph. Korthuis. ✓

130.

**Circular announcing the Sale of a Business.  
Buyer's Circular.**

The Hague, 15<sup>th</sup> April, 1912.

Gentlemen,

You will learn by the above circular that, from this day forth, I have purchased the factory hitherto worked by Mr. Ph. Korthuis under the style of

**Mineraalwaterfabriek La Haye,**

and I request you to grant me a continuance of the confidence with which you have honoured my predecessor.

I shall do my best to maintain the good reputation which Mr. Ph. Korthuis always enjoyed, and I shall always consider it a duty to act upon the principle of the strictest integrity, which the said gentleman observed on all occasions, hoping that those whose support and goodwill I solicit, will see therein the best guaranty for the solidity of my business.

Be sure that I shall make a point of despatching to your satisfaction all the orders with which you may honour me from this day, and believe me, Gentlemen, to be

Your most obedient servant,

Theod. Slips,

who will sign: Mineraalwaterfabriek La Haye.

Theod. Slips.

131.

**Proxy given.**

Nimwegen, 1<sup>st</sup> March, 1912.

Gentlemen. — My foreign affairs repeatedly keeping me abroad for weeks and even months, I have this day given my procuration to Mr. Joh. Zeeman, for seven years my zealous assistant. I request you to consider all that he will do in future in my name, as if it had been done by myself.

Calling your attention to Mr. Zeeman's signature, which you will find here below, and embracing the opportunity to

solicit a continuance of your custom and favours, I remain,  
Gentlemen, Your obedient servant,

P. Dorpers.

Mr. Joh. Zeeman will sign: P. Proc. P. Dorpers,

Joh. Zeeman.

## Forty-fifth Lesson. Vijf en veertigste Les.

### Bilderdijk.

Op mijn dagelijkschen weg naar het Leidsche Gymnasium, werd, in 1822, bij de Ruïne, mijne aanlucht eens bijzonder getrokken door een eerder klein dan middelsoortig-groot man; een met slepend been (à la Byron) strompelend voortstappenden grijsaard, met driekantigen of punthoed, een gekleeden of staatsierok, een korte broek, lang vest, alles defftig zwart, en met strikschoenen aan de voeten. In de rechterhand hield hij een steunstok, maar zijne linker rustte op den rechterschouder van een knaapje, dat hem een paar kinderstappen vooruitging, op de wijze, zooals men Belisarius wel ziet afgebeeld met een jongske, dat den ouden blindeman begeleidt. Dat was Bilderdijk, van zijn tienjarig zoontje, Lodewijk Willem, vergezeld. Zoo zag ik den dichter voor 't eerst, en te meer nog bleef ik op het vreemdsoortig koppel staren, dewijl een burgerman dien ouden heer, als tegen wil en dank, scheen staande te houden, doch van hem geen ander antwoord kreeg, dan het duidelijk hoorbaar: „je vermoordt me met je briefjes!“, waarmee hij dan ook eindelijk genoeg moest nemen en werd afgescheept. — Finantiëel bezwaar was hier merkbaar in het spel. — Datzelfde jaar schreef hij aan Michiel De Haas, een vriend in den Haag: „Gij vraagt mij acht gulden te leen: ik heb ze niet, doch heb ze geleend. Ziedaar het geld! Mijn toestand brengt mee, dat ik nooit meer geld in huis heb, dan van tijd tot tijd volstrekt noodig is. Maar ik bid u, pijnig mij niet meer.“ — „Tusschen geldbezit en dichtkunst is van ouds de betrekking nooit zeer nauw geweest: van Homerus tot op Camoens en Cervantes, en van deze tot op Vondel en Bilderdijk“ — zegt Da Costa — „loopt eene onuitwisschbare spoorlijn, genaamd Geldgebrek, over het uitgestrekte, dorre veld van nationale ongevoeligheid.“

*Dr. Wap.*

### Grammatical Figures.

§ 710. Vowel-changes which some words have undergone, besides those of Declination or Conjugation,

by adding or losing a letter, by contracting or inversion, are called *grammatische figuren* or *woordfiguren*.

§ 711. Prosthesis (*voorvoeging*):

*lommer* (French: l'ombre) shadow, *naarstig* (ernst) diligent, *nevens* (even), *nijver* (ijver), *herinneren* (erinneren), *hekel* (cf.: *akelig*) in the expression *eenen hekel hebben* to hate (one).

§ 712. Apheresis (*afwerping*):

*er* instead of *der* or *daar*, *'k* = *ik*, *'t* = *het*, *arreslede* (*narreslede*) sledge, *azuur* (*lasuur*), *abberdaan* (*labberdaan*), *aak*<sup>1</sup> long boat, *adder*<sup>1</sup> viper, *okkernoot* (*nokkernoot*) walnut, *muts* (*amutse*) cap, *sperge* (*asperge*) asparagus, *pul* (*apul*) jug.

§ 713. Paragoge (*achtervoeging*):

*iemand* and *niemand* (*man*), *arend* (*Arnhem*, cf.: *adelaar*), *burcht* (*schouwburch*, cf.: *burcher*, *burgwal*), *borst* lad, *schoen* shoe, *toen* (orig. *doe*); also *t* behind *mijnen*, *zijnen*, *onzen*, *uwen*, *haren*, *hunnen* in: *te mijnent*, *te uwent* &c., *mijnentwege(n)*, *onzenthalse(n)*.

§ 714. Apocope (*afkapping*):

*vergif* (*vergift*), *is* instead of *ist*:

the personal ending is always dropped when *je* follows:

*heb je*, *ga je*, *kom je*;

especially the unaccented *e* is dropped in many words:

*als* (*ulse*), *asch* (*asche*), *bed* (*bedde*), *hart* (*harte*), *heer* (*heere*), *krib* (*kribbe*), *ik neem* instead of *neme*, *ik meen* instead of *meene*, *ik dacht* instead of *dachte* &c.

In old Dutch all weak Substantives ended in *e*; also the 1<sup>st</sup> Person Sing. of the Present Ind. and the 2<sup>d</sup> Person Sing. of the Imperative of weak verbs.

§ 715. Assimilation (*gelijkmaking*):

*korrel* instead of *kornel* (*koorn*), *niettemin* instead of *niet de min*, *uientreuren* (*uit den treuren*), *balling* (*banling*) exile, *misschien* = *het mag geschien* perhaps.

The following consonant has been assimilated in: *en* (*enne* inst. of *ende*), *el* and *elleboog* (*elne*), *klimmen* (*klimben*), *om* (*omme* inst. of *ombe*), *penning* (*pending*, cf.: *pand*).

<sup>1</sup> German: *Nachen*, *Natter*.



The preceding consonant has been assimilated in: *rillen* instead of *ridlen* (the obsolete *rede* = fever), *as* axle, *bus* box, *das* badger, *dissel* adze, *os* ox, *vlas* flax, *vos* fox, *was* wax, *wassen* to grow, *wissel* change or bill of exchange, *zes* six.

§ 716. Syncope (*uitstooting*):

*Fransch* (*Franksch*), *koomenij* (*koopmannij*), *boogaard* (*boomgaard*), *kost* (*konst*, *konde*); *blusschen* (*belesschen*), *vreten* (*vereten*), *pruik* (French: *perruque*), *krant* (*courant*), *kraal* (*koraal*), *krent* (*korint*);

**d** has been dropped in:

*blaar* (*blader*) *blist*, *bleu* (*bloode*), *gruag* (*gradeg* hungry), *keu* (*keude*, cf.: *kodde* stick), *paarlemoer* (*paarlemoeder*), *vleermuis* bat, *vlier* elder, *vlerek* (*vlederik*)<sup>1</sup> wing, *Dirk* (*Diederik*).

The **e** of the prefixes **be** and **ge** has been dropped in many words:

*blijven* (*belijven*), *blok* (*belok*, cf.: *beluiken* to enclose), *glimp* (*gelimp*), *gluipen* (*geluipen*) to sneak, *gluren* (*geluren*) to leer.

§ 717. Elision (*uitlating*):

*binnen* (*be-innen*), *boven* (*be-oven*, cf.: *over*), *buiten* (*be-uiten*), *bang* (*be-ang*, cf.: *angst*). — *tevens* (*te-ecen-s*), *telkens* (*te-elken-s*), *thuis* (*te huis*), *thans* (*te hands*), *althans* (*al te hands*); but *nochtans* (from *nochdans* = nevertheless) without **h**.

In poetry elision occurs very often:

*liefd' en haat*, *aard' en hemel*.

§ 718. Synalepha (*samensmelting*):

*elkaur* (*elkaër* instead of *elkander*), *ter* = *te der*, *ten* = *te den*, *samen* = *te zamen*, hence also *saamenkomen*, *saamenstelling* with **s**, but *gezamenlijk*, *inzamelen*, *verzamenen* &c. with **z**.

**Ds** became **s** in:

*willens en wetens* (*willends en wetends*), *volgens* (*volgendes*) &c., also in: *'s morgens*, *'s avonds* (*des morgens*, *des avonds*);

**ts** or **tz** became **s** in:

*sedert*, *sinds*, *schorsen* to suspend, *best*, *lest* (*laatst*), *ver-*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. the German words *Fledermaus* (bat) and *Flederwisch* (goose-wing).

*sieren* to adorn, *versagen* to despair, *sidderen* to tremble, *grens* border, *krans* wreath, *schans* redout, *walsen* to waltz; **w** has been dropped in:

*dol* (*dul*, *dwalen*), *zoel* instead of *zwoel*, *zoet* instead of *zwoet* (cf.: sweet), *zuster* instead of *zwuster* sister.

§ 719. Epenthesis (*invocging*):

**s** behind gutturals preceding **ke**, **ken**:

*jaksken*, *vlagsken*, *jongsken*;

**n** in compositions, see § 633; **e** sometimes before **ling**, **lijk**, **loos**, **nis**, cf.:

*zinloos* senseless and *zinneloos* insane, *werkloos* without any work and *werkeloos* idle;

**d** in:

*bestuurder* (*besturen*), *diender* (*dienen*), *daalder* (*dollar*), *partijdig* instead of *partijig*, *wijden* (cf.: *wijwater*); — cf.: *zindelijk* clean and *zinnelijk* sensual;

**d** has been inserted also behind **i** preceding (**e**)**n** in: *belijden*, *bevrijden*, *geschieden*, *kastijden*, *spieden*, *vlieden*; behind **l**, **n**, **r** preceding (**e**)**r** in:

*elders*, *helder*, *kelder*, *selderij*, *kolder*, *zolder*, *beenderen*, *boender*, *bunder*, *donder*, *dragonder*, *gaanderij*, *vaandrig*, *spaanders*, *hoenders*;

also in most of the names of persons formed from verbal roots ending in **r** and in the Comparative of Adj. ending in **r**, see § 215.

Other consonants have been inserted in:

*korporaal* (French: caporal), *komfoor* (Fr. *chauffoir*), *plaveien* (Fr. *paver*), *pleisteren* (Fr. *paitre* from *paistre*), *bluffen* (instead of *buffen*) to boast, *stroop* (Fr. *sirope*), *scheidsmann* arbiter, *kindsheid* childhood, cf.: *kindschheid* second childhood.

The insertion of **e** between two consonants often enlarges the word by one syllable:

*doren* or *doorn* thorn, *horen* or *hoorn* corn, *koren* or *koorn* corn, *lantaren* or *lantaarn* lantern, *merel* or *meerl* black-bird, *parel* or *paarl* pearl, *coren* or *voorn* furrow.

§ 720. Metathesis (*omzetting*); it occurs especially with **r**:

*barnen* and *barnsteen* (*branden*) to burn and amber, *borst* breast, *bord* (German: Brett) board, *derde* and *dertien*

(*drie*), *dorschen* to thrash, *gort* (*grut*) groats, *godsvrucht* (G. Gottesfurcht) piety, *kerstmis* (*Christus*) Christmas, *nooddruft* (G. Notdurft) indigence, *pers* (*pressen*) press, *torsen* (*tros*) to carry on the back, *versch* (*frisch*) fresh, *vorst* (*vriezen*) frost, *wrat* (G. Warze) wart.

Metathesis of *l* in: *naald* (G. Nadel) needle, and of two consonants in: *kabeljauw* instead of *bakeljauw* codfish.

### Exercises.

Translate :

132.

### Informations asked and given, concerning the Prices of Goods.

Rotterdam, 3<sup>d</sup> April, 1912.

Mr. Fr. Knoppers, Machine Manufacturer, Venlo.

Sir,

Being indebted for your address to Mr. C. Max of this place, we transmit you annexed the surveys of 3 Key-Groove Engines, requesting you to let us know by return of post at what price and within what time you will be able to deliver them. We note at the same time that the affair is very urgent, and the period of delivery must not be beyond the 1<sup>st</sup> of May.

If you serve us well and at a fair price, we shall, most likely, give you some more orders, as for completing the accommodations of our factory we still want rather a great number of engines.

Your obedient servants,  
Gerards & Kroese.

133.

Venlo, 5<sup>th</sup> April, 1912.

Messrs. Gerards & Kroese, Rotterdam.

Gentlemen,

I am glad to see from your favour of the 3<sup>d</sup> inst. that you wish to charge me with making three Key-Groove Engines, and declare that I am prepared to deliver them to you by the 1<sup>st</sup> of May.

Calculated from your surveys, the 3 engines will cost Fl. 1400,—, delivered here for cash, viz. No. 1, Fl. 550,—, No. 2, Fl. 500,—, and No. 3, Fl. 350,—.

In quoting those prices, I have made you all possible allowance, so that, a good workmanship supposed, my competitors will not make any cheaper offers; therefore I venture to hope you will charge me with manufacturing the said engines; in which case I request an immediate answer, because the period for delivery is a very short one.

Your obedient servant,

Fr. Knoppers. /

134.

**Letter to request the Permission to make Bills payable at a certain Banking-house.**Kampen, 15<sup>th</sup> March, 1912.

Messrs. Zadelhof &amp; Timmermans, Amsterdam.

Gentlemen,

I take the liberty of asking you whether and upon what terms you would permit me to domiciliate my bills at your respected house.

The mentioned bills would comprise transactions of about Fl. 80000,—, and the amounts of the single appoints always be considerable: very seldom less than Fl. 2000,—, and never less than Fl. 1000,—.

I should deem it my duty always to provide you with funds some days before expiration.

Looking forward to your answer, I remain, Gentlemen,

Yours respectfully,

Jan Knap.

135.

**Answer to the preceding Letter.**Amsterdam, 18<sup>th</sup> March, 1912.

Mr. Jan Knap, Kampen.

Sir,

In reply to your favour of 15<sup>th</sup> inst., we have the honour to state that we willingly agree with your wish to make the drafts on you payable at our house.

Considering you promise transactions of Fl. 80000,— per annum, payable in appoints not less than Fl. 1000,—, we will charge you a commission of 1<sup>o</sup>/<sub>00</sub> only, and send you the honoured bills post-paid.

We hope you will accept the moderate conditions which we offer you, and look forward to your answer.

Your obedient servants,  
Zadelhof & Timmermans.

136.

**Letter of Introduction.**Rotterdam, 1<sup>st</sup> May, 1912.

Messrs. Hoffmann &amp; Bär, Vienna.

Gentlemen,

We have the pleasure of introducing to you Mr. Adolf Strelitski, bearer of the present, who is going to start for your town in order to prepare new business connections. You will oblige us very much by aiding him with your counsels and local knowledge.

As Mr. S. is an able and respectable man of business, we may recommend him to you, and request you to receive him in a friendly manner.

We thank you beforehand for all kindness you will evince towards Mr. S., and remain

Yours respectfully,  
Wijnandts & Fock.

137.

### **Letter of Credit.**

Amsterdam, 15<sup>th</sup> May, 1912.

Mr. Francesco Cirio, Milan.

Sir,

I have the honour to open with you a credit for £ 12000,—, I say Twelve Thousand Lires, in favour of Mr. A. Harinxma, partner of the most respectable house Harinxma & Co.

Please to make payments to my friend, to the amount of the said sum, without deducting your charges, and to re-imburse yourself at your convenience for what I shall owe you, after having transmitted me beforehand one of the duplicate receipts.

I am, Sir, very truly,

Your obedient servant,  
T. Borromeo.

Signature of Mr. A. Harinxma: Aug. Harinxma,  
of the house Harinxma & Co.

138.

### **Order given to sell Shares.**

Middelburg, 18<sup>th</sup> May, 1912.

Messrs. Schaap & Bonte, Amsterdam.

Gentlemen,

Herewith I send you

Fl. 12000,— Rotterdam Tramway Shares, which please to sell at the best price possible, but not below 95; the net proceeds you will be so kind as to hold at my disposal.

Looking forward to your news, Gentlemen, I remain

Yours obediently,  
P. C. de Graaf.

139.

### **Order effected.**

Amsterdam, 21<sup>st</sup> May, 1912.

Mr. P. C. de Graaf, Middelburg.

Sir,

The Fl. 12000,— Rotterdam Tramway Shares, which you sent us with your letter of the 18<sup>th</sup> inst., we have

succeeded in selling at the rate of  $95\frac{1}{2}$ , free of charges, and credited you accordingly for

Fl. 11400,—, which amount we keep at your disposal.

If you might intend to invest this sum again in shares, we recommend to your attention as a solid paper the course of which is constantly rising, the shares of the Amsterdam Building Company à  $87\frac{1}{4}$ .

Subjoining our latest exchange-list, we remain, Sir,

Yours respectfully,  
Schaap & Bonte. /

140.

### **Application for Employment.**

Kampen, 1<sup>st</sup> May, 1912.

Messrs. Bastings Brothers, Rotterdam.

Gentlemen,

Mr. E. Pronk of the firm of Pronk & Co. of this town informed me that in a short time the place of corresponding clerk would become vacant, and I take the liberty of tendering you my services for filling it in; allow me, therefore, to describe to you the career I have hitherto had.

I am the son of the manufacturer H. K. Zandvliet at Tiel, and I was educated at Arnhem. At the beginning of my 15<sup>th</sup> year I commenced my articles with Mr. C. H. Klaverweide at Arnhem, who when I had completed my time of apprenticeship gave me the certificate annexed, in which he confirms that till the end I had conducted myself to his full satisfaction.

It was on the 15<sup>th</sup> of Oct. 1885 that, as a clerk entrusted, with the invoices, I entered the Paper-Mill of Kampen, in which I have been up to this day as corresponding clerk.

If, considering all that I have said, you resolve to confide to me the place in question, you may be sure that I shall do my best to fill it to your satisfaction.

Requesting you to favour me with your confidence, which I should not fail to justify, I express my hope to receive favourable news from you, and remain, Gentlemen, with the assurance of my particular esteem,

Yours obediently,  
Joh. Zandvliet.

# Appendix.

## I. Homonyms.

*ai* [= *e*]  
*mail* [*mél*] mail  
*pair* [*pér*] pair

*ee* [= *e*]  
*meel* meal  
*peer* pear.

*au* [= *u*]  
*flauw* [*flou*] feeble, silly  
*gauw* [*gou*] quick, speedy  
*kauw* [*kou*] jack-daw  
*lauw* [*lou*] luke-warm  
*rauw* [*rou*] raw, uncooked  
*wouw* [*wou*] favourable (of the wind)

*ou* [= *u*]  
*flouw* partridge-net  
*gouw* celandine  
*kouw* cage  
*kou* (= *koude*) cold  
*louw* tench  
*rouw* mourning  
*wouw* weed; kite.

*e* [= *e*]  
*beren* [*berén*] (S. *beer*) bears  
*beten* [*betén*] (S. *beet*) bits  
*degen* [*degén*] sword  
*delen* [*delén*] (S. *deel*) planks or thrashing floors  
*gene* [*gené*] that, those  
*helen* [*helén*] to receive stolen goods  
*heren*<sup>1</sup> [*herén*] (S. *heer*) armies  
*keren* [*kerén*] to sweep  
*kweken*<sup>2</sup> [*kwekén*] to quack  
*leger* [*legér*] army  
*leken* [*lekén*] to run  
*lenen*<sup>3</sup> [*lenén*] to lean  
*rede* [*redé*] speech; reason  
*schelen* [*scheleén*] to differ, to ail  
*sleepen* [*sleepeén*] to drag; trains (S. *sleep*)  
*stenen*<sup>4</sup> [*steneén*] to groan  
*veren* [*vereén*] (S. *veer*) feathers; ferries  
*verweeren* [*verweereén*] to defend  
*weken* [*wekén*] (S. *week*) weeks  
*wezen* [*wezeén*] to be; creature

*ee* [= *e*]  
*beeren* (S. *beer*) boars; moles; buttresses; rammers  
*beeten* (S. *beet*) beet-roots  
*deegen* (S. *deeg*) pastes  
*deelen* parts; volumes; to divide  
*geene* (S. *geen*) no, none  
*heelen* to heal  
*heeren* (S. *heer*) gentlemen  
*keeren* times (S. *keer*); to turn  
*kweeken* to raise, to cultivate  
*leeger* (comp. of *leeg*) emptier  
*leeken* (S. *leek*) laymen  
*leenen* to lend; to borrow; fiefs  
*reede* road  
*scheelen* (S. *scheel*) covers  
*sleepen* to train  
*steen* (adj.) of stone. stones (S. *steen*)  
*veeren* springs (S. *veer*); (adj.) of feathers  
*verweeren* to get weather-beaten  
*weken* to soak  
*weezen* (S. *wees*) orphans.

<sup>1</sup> Or *heiren* (S. *heir*). — <sup>2</sup> Also *kwekken* or *kwaken*.

<sup>3</sup> Or *leunen*. — <sup>4</sup> Also *steunen*.

*ei [= ei]*

*bereiden* [bə'reiðən] to prepare  
*blei* [blei] bleak  
*brein* [brein] brain  
*ei* [ei] egg

*eik* [eik] oak  
*eiken* [eikən] oaken; oaks  
*eisch* [eis] claim, demand  
*feit* [feit] fact, deed  
*gebeid* [gəbeid] (*beiden*) waited  
*gerei* [gərei] implements  
*greinen* [greinən] camlet; grains  
 (S. *grein*)

*hei(de)* [hei(də)] heath  
*karwei* [karwei] job, labour  
*lei* [lei] slate  
*leiden* [leidən] to lead  
*mei*<sup>2</sup> [mei] bough  
*Mei* [mei] May  
*meiden* [meiðən] (S. *meid*) ser-  
 vants, girls  
*neigen* [neign] to incline, to bow  
*peil* [peil] water-mark  
*prei* [prei] leek  
*rei* [rei] chorus  
*reiken* [reikən] to reach

*rein* [rein] pure, chaste  
*reis* [reis] journey; time  
*reizen* [reizen] journeys; to travel  
*steil* [steil] steep  
*veil* [veil] ivy; venal mercenary  
*vermeiden* [vərmeiðən] (*zich*) to  
 amuse oneself

*vleien* [vleien] to flatter  
*wei* [wei] whey; meadow  
*weiden* [weidən] to graze, to feed  
*weit*<sup>1</sup> [weit] wheat  
*zeil* [zeil] sail  
*zei(de)* [zei(də)], *ik*, *hij* *zei(de)*  
 I, he said

*ie [= i]*

*kopie* [kopi] copy

*o [= o]*

*hopen* [hopən] to hope

*horen* [horən] (*hoorn*) horn

*ij [= ei]*

*berijden* to ride  
*blij(de)* glad  
*brijn* salt-water, brine  
*IJ* canal (*Amsterdam ligt aan  
 het IJ*)

*ijk* standard, verification  
*ijken* to stamp, to verify  
*ijs* ice  
*ijst* whitlow  
*gebijt* biting  
*gerij* riding, driving  
*grienen*<sup>1</sup> to weep, to grumble

*hij* he  
*karwij* caraway  
*lij* lee  
*lijden* to suffer  
 | *mij* me  
 | *nijden* to avoid

*nijgen* to courtesy  
*pijl* arrow  
*prij* carion, hag  
*rij* row  
*rijken*, *de rijken* the rich: em-  
 pires (S. *rijk*)  
*Rijn* the Rhine  
*rijs* birch  
*rijzen* to rise  
*stijl* stile; style, method  
*rijl* file  
*vermijden* to avoid

*clijen* to lay down, to suit  
*wij* we  
*wijden* to consecrate, to dedicate  
*wijd* wide  
*zijl* canal  
*zij(de)* side; silk.

*ij [= i]*

*kopij* manuscript.

*oo [= o]*

*hoopen* to heap up; heaps (S.  
*hoop*)

*hooren* to hear

<sup>1</sup> Or *grienen*. — <sup>2</sup> *Mei(doorn)* = hawthorn. — <sup>3</sup> Or *tarwe*.



*hozen* [*hozən*] (S. *hoos*) stockings

*kolen* [*kolən*] (S. *kool*) coals

*koper* [*kopər*] copper

*poten* [*potən*] to plant

*roven* [*rovən*] to take the crust off

*sloten* [*slotən*] (S. *slot*) locks;  
castles; balances

*sloven* [*slovən*] to drudge

*tonen* [*tonən*] (S. *toon*) tones

**oi** [= *o*]

*oir*<sup>2</sup> [*or*] heir, issue

**ou** [= *ou*]

*hou* [*həu*] hold! *hou en trouw*  
loyal and faithful

*jou* [*ju*] = *u* you

**b** [= *p*]

*krib* [*krip*] crib

*schrab* [*srap*] scratch

*slib* [*slip*] silt

**c** [= *k*]

*commies* [*kəmis*] government  
clerk

*doctor* [*doktər*] doctor (degree)

*locaal* [*lokal*] (adj.) local

**c** [= *s*]

*cent* [*sɛnt*] cent (fifth part of a  
penny)

**ch** [= *x*]

*doch* [*dɔx*] but, yet

*gelach* [*gɛlax*] laughter

*lach* [*lax*] laugh

*licht* [*lɪxt*] light; easy(ly)

*noch* [*nɔx*] neither, nor

**d** [= *t*]<sup>3</sup>

*blood(e)* [*blɔt*] timorous

*bond* [*bɔnt*] confederation

*boud* [*bɔut*] bold(ly)

*end* [*ɛnt*] end, termination

*gemoed* [*gɛmut*] mind, heart

*hoozen* to scoop; waterspouts  
(S. *hoos*)

*koolen* (S. *kool*) cabbage

*kooper* purchaser

*pooten* (S. *poot*) feet, paws

*rooven* to rob

*slooten* (S. *sloot*) ditches

*slooven* (S. *sloof*) aprons

*toonēn* to show; toes (S. *toon*)<sup>1</sup>.

**oo**

*oor* ear.

**ouw**

*houw* cut, felling

*jouw* hooting.

**p**

*krip* crape

*schrab* dash, stroke

*slip* skirt, corner.

**k**

*kommies* customhouse-officer

*dokter* physician

*lokaal* locality.

**s**

*sent* rail, ribbon.

**g** [= *x*]

*dog* mastiff

*gelag* share, score

*lag, hij lay* he lay

*ligt, hij ligt* he lies

*nog* still, yet.

**t**<sup>3</sup>

*bloot* bare, naked

*bent* variegated, medley, fur

*bout* bolt; leg (of a fowl or of  
a mutton)

*ent* graft

*gemoet, te — gaan* to go to meet

<sup>1</sup> Or *teen*, *teenen*.

<sup>2</sup> The only word in which [*o*] is written *oi*.

<sup>3</sup> Cf.: *bod* [*bɔt*] bid, offer and *bot* [*bɔt*] flounder; bone; blunt, bluntly.

*genood* [gənot] frequent invitation  
*graad* [grat] degree, grade  
*hard* [hart] hard  
*kruid* [kræyt] herb  
*lood* [lot] lead  
*luid* [ləyt] loud  
*meid* [meit] servant, girl  
*mild* [milt] generous, liberal  
*moed* [mut] courage

*nood* [not] need  
*oord* [ort] place

*paadje* [patjə] footpath  
*raad* [rat] counsel, advice  
*rad* [rat] wheel  
*tod(de)* [tət] rag  
*wand* [vant] wall

*wed* [vet] horse-pond; wager  
*wijd* [veit] wide  
*wild* [vilt] game; wild

**kw** [= kv]

*kwint* [krint] trick, knack

**s, ss** [= s]

*as* [as] axle  
*bos* [bus] bunch  
*bossen* [busən] bunches  
*bruts* [bruts] wooden couch  
*fries* [fris] frieze; *Fries* Fries-  
 lander

*gans* [gans] goose  
*kies* [kis] grinder  
*lessen* [lesən] (S. *les*) lessons  
*lis*<sup>2</sup> [lis] loop  
*mars* [mars] top, hamper  
*mos* [mus] moss  
*ras* [rus] race; rash; whirlpool  
*ras* (adv.) soon, fast  
*Rus* [rrs] Russian

*schots* [sxots] block of ice

*steeds* [stets] always  
*struis* [strøys] ceruse; ostrich  
*tas* [tas] heap  
*trots* [trøts] pride; in spite of

*was* [vas] wax

*genoot* companion  
*graat* fish-bone  
*hart* heart  
*kruit* powder  
*loot* shoot, offspring  
*luit* lute  
*mijt* mite, heap  
*milt* milt  
*moet* spot; *ik (hij) moet* I (he)  
 must

*noot* nut, note  
*oort* = two doits (one cent and  
 a quarter)

*paatje* papa, daddy  
*raat* honey-comb  
*rat*<sup>1</sup> rat  
*tot* till  
*want* glove (without fingers),  
 mitten; rigging; for  
*wet* law  
*weit* wheat  
*wilt, gij wilt* you will.

**qu** [= kv]

*quint* fifth.

**sch, ssch** [= s]

*asch* ashes  
*bosch* wood  
*bosschen* woods  
*Britsch* British  
*Friesch* Frisian

*gansch* all, whole  
*kiesch* delicate  
*lesschen* to quench  
*lisch* flag, flower-de-luce  
*marsch* march; away!  
*mosch*<sup>3</sup> sparrow

| *rasch* (adj.) quick, fast

*rusch* rush

| *schotsch* rude  
 | *Schotsch* Scottish

*steedsch* townish  
*struisch* (adj.) vigorous  
*tasch* pouch, satchel  
*trotsch* (adj. and adv.) proud,  
 proudly  
*wasch* wash

<sup>1</sup> Or *rot*. — <sup>2</sup> Or *lus*. — <sup>3</sup> Or *musch*.

*wassen* [*vasən*] to grow  
*wis* [*vis*] certain, sure(ly)

*wasschen* to wash  
*wisch* twig; clout.

*s* [= *z*]

*z*

*lensen* [*lenzən*] to harpoon; harpoons (S. *lens*)

*lenzen* to empty; lenses (S. *lens*).

## II. Idiomatical Expressions.

*Zij keken ons met den nek aan* they gave us the cold shoulder.

*Aanspraak maken* op iets to lay claim to a thing.

*Hij zit er achter* he is at the bottom of it.

*Het gaat hem zeer ongelukkig af* it comes from him with a very bad grace.

*Iemand iets aftroggelen* to wheedle a person out of.

*Hij bedacht zich en keerde terug* he changed his mind and went back.

*Deze school bedruipt zich zelve* this school pays its own way.

*Na eenig beraad* on second thoughts.

*Een middelweg bewandelen* to hit upon a middle course.

*Jongens blijven* jongens boys will be boys.

*Dat is een mooie boel* here's a fine situation!

*Iemand tot den bedelstaf brengen* to reduce one to beggary.

*Derangee* u voor mij niet do not put yourself to any inconvenience on my account.

*Die is goed, hoor* that's a good one!

*Iemand een dienst bewijzen* to do one a kind turn.

*Eene bestelling doen* to give an order.

*Ik zou het dol graag hebben* I should like it of all things.

*Iets door de vingers zien* to connive at a thing.

*Den draak steken* met to make fun of.

*Zij droegen roem op hun afkomst* they prided themselves on their birth.

*Op zijn duimpje kennen* to know at one's finger's ends.

*Eenmaal, — andermaal, — 't is verkocht* going, — going, — gone.

*Ik heb mij erin gewerkt* I have committed myself.

*Iets om het lieve geld* doen to work for the loaves and fishes.

*Met iemand gelijk op deelen* to go halves with one.

*Door de pokken geschonden zijn* to be marked by the small-pox.

*Wat is er aan de hand* what's up now?

*Op handen en voeten kruipen* to go on all fours.

*Van verbazing de handen ineenslaan* to have one's breath taken away with amazement.

*Van zijn hart een moordkuil maken* to smother one's real feelings.

*De hekken zijn verhangen* the tables are turned.

*Vraag hem, hoe laat het is* ask him the time.

*Wij zullen uwe handteekening honoreeren* we shall do the needful for your bill of exchange.

*Iemand op de hoogte brengen* to put one up the ropes.

*Zijn ontslag indienen* to tender one's resignation.

*Ik kan hiervoor instaan* I can answer for it.

*Het kind van de rekening zijn* to have to pay the piper.

*Zij is knap van uiterlijk* she is a good-looking girl.

*Zijne luimen den teugel rieren* to give loose to one's whims.

*Hij maakte mij zoo akelig* he gave me such a turn.

*Iemands portret maken* to take a person's photo.

*Zich verkeerde voorstellingen maken* to entertain false notions.

*Hij blijft altijd malen* over zijn ongelukken his head keeps running on his misfortunes.

*Met man en muis vergaan* to go down with all hands on board.

*Zij was het mikpunt aller blikken* she was the observed of all observers.

*Dit is de moeite waard* this is worth (our) while.

*Hij moest chirurgijn worden* he was intended for a surgeon.

*Het portret moest Bilderdijk voorstellen* the picture was intended for a likeness of B.

*Wat moet dat* what's the meaning of all this?

*Wat moet je* what do you want?

*Zij namen hunne toevlucht tot verraad* they betook themselves to treachery.

*Neerslachtig zijn* to be in low spirits.

*Hij werd neerslachtig* his spirits fell.

*Ik laat mij niet om den tuin leiden* I think I know what is what.

*Iemand om den tuin leiden* to lead one by the nose.

*Fouten van ondergeschikten aard* minor blemishes.

*Ik kan deze twee niet van elkaar onderscheiden* I cannot tell which is which.

*Het oneens worden* to fall out.

*Ik ontdeel mij van mijn overjas* I took off my great coat.

*Ik outgaf het mij* I thought no more of it.

*Iemand iets ontroggelen* to coax a person out of a thing.

*Opgeweekt zijn* to be in high spirits.

*Eene zaak bij zich zelf overleggen* to turn a matter over in one's mind.

*Eene advertentie plaatsen* to insert an advertisement.

*Daar heb je de poppen aan het dansen* there's the devil to pay.

*Dat is alles één potnat* it comes to the very same thing.

*Ik was hem te slim af* I was one too many for him.

*Stand houden* to keep firm (one's ground).

*Zij staken overal den neus in* they poked their noses into every one's business.

*Ik zal deze gelegenheid te baat nemen* I shall avail myself of this opportunity.

*Hij is den koning te rijk* he would not call the king his cousin now.

*Iemand ten val brengen* to undo a person.

*Terrein verliezen* to lose ground.

*Dat komt mij toe* that is my due.

*Hij legde er zich op toe zich bemind te maken* he laid himself out to be ingratiating.

*Een hoogen toon aanslaan* to ride the high horse.

*Zij gingen twee and twee weg* they went off in pairs.

*Veld winnen* to gain ground.

*Ik veroorloof mij nu en dan de weelde van een fijne cigar*

I indulge in a fine cigar now and then.

*Ze alle vijf bij elkaar hebben to have all one's wits about one.*

*Zij zou vijf pooten aan een schaap willen hebben she would have her cake and eat it.*

*Ik, voor mij, heb er steeds aan getwijfeld I for one have doubted of it all along.*

*Hij liet zich veel voorstaan op . . . he piqued himself very much on . . .*

*Van den wind leren to live by one's wits.*

*Twee maal twee is vier two times two make four.*

### III. Proverbs and Proverbial Sayings.<sup>1</sup>

*De aanhouder wint constant dropping wears the stone.*

*Aanzien doet gedenken seeing makes remember.*

*Al draagt een aap een gouden ring, hij is en blijft een leelijk ding an ape's an ape, a varlet's a varlet, though they be clad in silk or scarlet.*

*Als de hemel invalt zijn we allen dood if the sky falls the pots will be broken.*

*Twaalf ambachten, dertien ongelukken Jack of all trades, and master of none.*

*De appel valt niet ver van den stam like sire, like son.*

*Armoede zoekt list poverty is the mother of all arts.*

*Alle beetjes helpen every little helps.*

*Wie kaatst, moet den bal verwachten if you play at bowls you must look out for rubbers.*

*Beter bedrogene dan bedriegen to suffer wrong is better than to do wrong.*

*Het zijn sterke beenen, die de weelde kunnen dragen it needs strong legs to bear wealth.*

*Wie veel begint, eindigt weinig all covet, all lose.*

*Alle begin is moeilijk all beginnings are difficult.*

*Belofte maakt schuld promises make debts.*

*Gouden bergen beloven to promise Rome and Tom.*

*De berg baart een muis the mountain has brought forth a mouse.*

*Bezint eer ge begint look before you leap.*

*Bezit baart zorg he who has land, has warfare.*

*In 't land der blinden is éénoog koning in a country of blind people, the one-eyed man is king.*

*Het is niet alles goud wat er blinkt all is not gold that glitters.*

*Borgen baart zorgen he that goes a borrowing, goes a sorrowing.*

*Borgen is niet kwijtschelden forbearance is no acquittance.*

*'t Is alle dagen geen kermis Christmas comes but once a year.*

<sup>1</sup> See also the Exercises 77 and 99 and the Dutch translation in my Key to this Grammar under the same numbers.

A collection of the most usual Proverbs and Prov. Sayings has been edited by me at Haarlem (De Erven Bohn) under the title of *Verzameling van Spreekwoorden en Spreekwoordelijke Utdrukkingen in vier talen* (Dutch, French, German, English).

*Als het kalf verdronken is, dempt men den put* when the steed is stolen, the stable-door is shut.

*De eene dienst is de andere waard* one good turn deseryes another.  
*Doe wel en zie niet om never fear men*, but God, and keep his commandments.

*Eerst gedaan en dan bedacht, heeft menigeen in leed gebracht* do a thing in haste, and you will repent of it at leisure.

*Nu gedaan werk is 't goed rusten* after the work is done, repose is sweet.

*Gedane zaken hebben geen keer* what is done cannot be undone.  
*Des eenen dood is des anderen brood* one man's meat is another man's poison.

*Er is geen erger doove, dan die niet wil hooren* none so deaf as those who will not hear.

*Alle goede dingen bestaan in drie* never two but three.

*Droomen zijn bedrog* dreams are vain.

*Eendracht maakt macht* union makes strength.

*Eenmaal is geen maal* once is no custom.

*Eere wien eere toekomt* give honour to whom honour is due.

*Eerlijk duurt het langst* honesty is the best policy.

*Een half ei is beter dan een ledige (leege) dop* half a loaf is better than no bread.

*Einde goed, alles goed* all's well that ends well.

*Het einde kroont het werk* the end crowns all.

*Een ezel stoot zich niet tweemaal aan één steen* a burnt child dreads the fire.

*Dat is boter aan de galg gesmeerd* it is labour lost.

*Geduld overwint alles* patience, time and money accommodate all things.

*De gekken krijgen de kaart* fools have the best luck.

*Geld dat stom is, maakt recht wat krom is* money rules the roast  
*Geen geld, geen Zwitsers* no silver, no servant.

*Veel geschreeuw en weinig wol* much ado about nothing.

*Wie het gevaar zoekt, komt er in om seek danger*, and you shall come to grief.

*Gissen doet missen* guess twice and guess worse.

*Het grondsop is voor de goddeloozen* the dregs are for the wicked.

*Alles op haren en snaren zetten* to leave no stone unturned.

*Eigen haard is goud waard* home is home, be it (n)ever so homely.

*Haast en spoed is zelden goed* }  
*Hoe meer haast hoe minder spoed* } the more haste, the less speed.

*Haast u langzaam* fair and softly goes far.

*Van den hak op den tak springen* to talk rigmarole.

*Vele handen maken het werk licht* many hands make quick works.

*Waar het hart vol van is, loopt de mond van over* what the heart thinks the mouth speaks.

*Hebben is hebben, en krijgen is de kunst* to have is to have, but to get is the thing.

*Het hemd is nader dan de rok* close is my shirt, but closer is my skin.

*Groote honden bijten elkander niet* one crow will not pick another crow's eyes.

*Blaffende honden bijten niet* a barking dog seldom bites.  
*Al etende krijgt men honger* one shoulder of mutton drives down another.  
*Elk huis heeft zijn kruis* there is no house without a skeleton in the cupboard.  
*Jong gewend, oud gedaan* once a use and ever a custom.  
*Kasteelen in de lucht bouwen* to build castles in the air.  
*Elk kere roor zijn eigen deur* sweep before your own door.  
*Hij heeft kind noch kraai* he has kith nor kin.  
*Het kind bij zijn rechten naam noemen* to call a spade a spade.  
*Er is een kink in de kabel* there is a hitch somewhere.  
*Twee vliegen in één klap slaan* to kill two birds with one stone.  
*Vele kleintjes maken een groote* many a little makes a mickle.  
*Iemand knollen roor citroenen verkoopen* to make one believe, that the moon is made of green cheese.  
*Oude koeien uit de sloot halen* to bring up old stories.  
*Veel koks bederven de brij* too many cooks spoil the broth.  
*Krakende wagens duren het langst* a creaking door hangs long on its hinges.  
*De kruik gaat zoo lang te water, totdat zij breekt* so long goes the pitcher to the well, till at last it comes home broken.  
*Holland is in last (nood)* Hannibal before the gates!  
*Ledigheid is des duivels oorkussen* idleness is the root of all evil.  
*Eigen lof stinkt self-praise* is no recommendation.  
*Het is lood om ond ijzer* six of one, and half a dozen of the other.  
*De medaille heeft hare keerzijde* there is another side to the shield.  
*Dat is mostaard na den maaltijd* after meat, mustard.  
*Ieder is zich zelven de naaste* charity begins at home.  
*Nood breekt wet* necessity knows no law.  
*Onbekend is onbemind* unknown never made beloved.  
*Een ongeluk komt zelden alleen* misfortunes seldom come alone.  
*Zocals de ouden zongen, zoo piepen de jongen* as the old cock crows, so the young one.  
*Het beste paard struikelt wel* even the best horse may stumble.  
*De pot verrijt den ketel, dat hij zwart is* the pot calls the kettle black.  
*Na regen komt zonneschijn* after rain comes fair weather.  
*Geen roos zonder doornen* no rose without a thorn.  
*Door schale wordt men wijs* bought wit is best.  
*Schijn bedriegt* appearances are deceptive.  
*Wien de schoen past, trekke hem aan* whom the cap fits, let him wear it  
*Soort zoekt soort* birds of a feather flock together.  
*Met spek vangt men muizen* fools are caught with chaff.  
*Tijd gewonnen, geld gewonnen* time is money.  
*Komt tijd, komt raad* let time shape.  
*Ieder meent zijn uil een valk te zijn* a man thinks his own geese swans.  
*Uitstel is geen afstel* omittance is no quittance.  
*Verkwisters lijden later gebrek* waste not, want not.  
*Visch wil zwemmen* fish must swim thrice.  
*Eén vogel in de hand is beter dan twee in de lucht* a bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.

*Vrijheid, blijheid* nothing like freedom.

*Goede waar prijst zich zelve* good wares make quick markets.

*Van den wal in de sloot raken* from the frying-pan into the fire.

*Goede wijn behoeft geen krans* good wine needs no bush.

*Recht door zee gaan* to steer a straight course.

*Eéne zwaluw maakt den zomer niet* one swallow does not make a summer.

#### IV. Titles in Dutch letters.

In Dutch correspondence we must pay attention to 1. the address, 2. the beginning and 3. the end of the letter.

A. In ordinary, especially in commercial correspondence the simplest titles are used:

1. (Address) *Den Heer W. Doorweg, Winkelier, te Amsterdam (Oude Gracht Nr. 10).*
2. (Beginning) *Mijnheer!*
3. (End) *Uw dienstwillige dienaar* (generally *Uw dw. dr.*).

B. To persons of the middle-class we write:

1. *Den Welledelen Heer T. van Wegen, Wijnhandelaar, te Utrecht.*
2. *Weledele Heer!*
3. *Uw dw. or dc. (= dienstvaardige) dr.*

C. To persons of higher-class:

1. *Den Weledelgeboren Heer, den Heer M. Turfboer te Groningen.*
2. *Weledelgeboren Heer!*
3. *Uw onderdanige dienaar* or *Uw Weledelgebs. onderdanige dienaar.*

D. To clergymen:

1. *Den Weleerwaarden Heer, den Heer L. Zegers, Kapelaan (Pastoor, Predikant), te Rotterdam.*
2. *Weleerwaarde Heer!*
3. *Uw dw. dr.*

If they possess the title of D. D.:

*Den Weleerwaarden, Zeergeleerden Heer etc.*

E. To persons possessing the degree of doctor, excepted the D. D. and D. of Laws:

*Den Welledelen (or Weledelgeboren), Zeergeleerden Heer etc.*

F. To lawyers:

*Den Welledelen (or Weledelgeboren) Zeergestrengen Heer, den heer Mr. G. Jurgens, Advocaat, te Maastricht etc.*

If they possess the title of LL. D.:

*Den Welledelen (or Weledelgeboren), Zeergestrengen Heer, de heer Mr. Dr. G. Jurgens, Advocaat, te Maastricht etc.*



## G. To persons of the lower nobility:

1. *Den Hoogedelgeboren Heer Jhr. (= Jonkheer) A. van Goren, te Leiden.*
2. *Hoogedelgeboren Heer!*
3. *Uw Hoogedelgebs. onderdanige dienaar.*

## H. To a baron:

*Den Hoogwelgeboren Heer C. Baron van Dijkersloot, te Dalen etc.*

## I. To a count:

*Den Hooggeboren Heer F. G. Graaf van Hoogenwal, te 's-Gravenhage etc.*

## J. To a lieutenant or a captain:

*Den Weledelgestrengen Heer etc.*

## K. To a major, colonel etc.:

*Den Hoogedelgestrengen Heer etc.*

## L. To a general, a Minister etc.:

1. *Aan zijne Excellentie den heer X., generaal der Infie. etc.*  
*Aan zijne Excellentie den heer Minister van Buitenlandsche Zaken te 's-Gravenhage.*
2. *Excellentie!*
3. *Van Uwe Excellentie, de (meest) onderdanige dienaar.*

## M. To the King:

1. *Aan Zijne Majesteit den Koning der Belgen.*
2. *Sire!*
3. *Van Uwe Majesteit de gehoorzaamste dienaar en getrouwe onderdaan.*

## N. To the queen:

1. *Aan Hare Majesteit de Koningin der Nederlanden.*
2. *Mevrouw! etc.*

## O. To unmarried ladies and all women of the lower classes:

1. *Mejuffrouw M. Gooiker, te Gouda.*
2. *Mejuffrouw!*
3. *Uw dw. dr.*

## P. To married ladies:

1. *Mevrouw W. Draaier, geb. (= geboren) Zegers, te Arnhem.*
2. *Mevrouw! etc.*

## Q. To unmarried ladies of the nobility:

*Aan de Hoogwelgeboren (or Weledelgeboren) Freule, Freule C. D. van Groenenweg, te Alkmaar etc.*

## R. To married ladies of the nobility:

*Aan de Hoogwelgeboren (or Weledelgeboren) Vrouwe etc.*

# Vocabulary.

## 1. Dutch-English.

This vocabulary contains the most difficult words of all the *Gesprekken* and of the Reading-lessons of the Second Part (2nd and 3d Book).

<i>Aamborstig</i> [ <i>ambɔrstɔx</i> ] asthmatic	<i>aanwezig</i> [ <i>anwezɔx</i> ] present; in store
<i>aanbevelen</i> [ <i>anbɔvelən</i> ] to recommend	<i>aanwijzen</i> [ <i>anweizən</i> ] to assign, to show
<i>aanbiddeijk</i> [ <i>anbɪdɛlək</i> ] adorable	<i>aanzienlijk</i> [ <i>anzɪnlɛk</i> ] distinguished
<i>aanbieden</i> [ <i>anbɪdən</i> ] to offer	<i>aarde</i> [ <i>ardɔ</i> ] earth
<i>aanbod</i> [ <i>anbɔt</i> ] offer	<i>aardig</i> [ <i>ardɔx</i> ] nice, pretty
<i>aanbrengen</i> [ <i>anbreɣən</i> ] to bring, to supply	<i>achterblijven</i> [ <i>axtərbleivən</i> ] to stay behind
<i>aandacht</i> ( <i>trekken</i> ) [ <i>andaxt</i> ( <i>trekən</i> )] attention	<i>achterdocht</i> [ <i>axtərdɔxt</i> ] suspicion
<i>aandoen</i> ( <i>een haven</i> ) [ <i>andun</i> ( <i>ən harən</i> )] to touch at (a port)	<i>achterdochtig</i> [ <i>axtərdɔxtɔx</i> ] suspicious
<i>aaneen</i> [ <i>anen</i> ] together	<i>achterscherf</i> [ <i>axtərsxɛrm</i> ] back-ground of the theatre
<i>aanguande</i> [ <i>angandɔ</i> ] concerning	<i>adem</i> [ <i>adəm</i> ] breath
<i>aangenaam</i> [ <i>angənəm</i> ] agreeable	<i>aderlaten</i> [ <i>adərlatən</i> ] to bleed
<i>aangezicht</i> [ <i>angəzɪxt</i> ] face	<i>afbeelden</i> [ <i>afbeldən</i> ] to represent
<i>aangroeien</i> [ <i>angruɪən</i> ] to grow	<i>afbranden</i> [ <i>afbrandən</i> ] to burn down
<i>aanhoudend</i> [ <i>an'houdənt</i> ] continuous, continual	<i>afdrogen</i> [ <i>afdrogən</i> ] to wipe off
<i>aanlokken</i> [ <i>anlɔkən</i> ] to attract	<i>afgevaardigde</i> [ <i>afgəvərdəgdə</i> ] representative
<i>aanlokkelijk</i> [ <i>anlɔkɛlək</i> ] alluring	<i>afgeven</i> [ <i>afgəvən</i> ] to deliver
<i>aanloopen</i> [ <i>anlopən</i> ] to run on	<i>afhalen</i> [ <i>afhalən</i> ] to fetch, to call for
<i>aannemelijk</i> [ <i>anəmɛlək</i> ] acceptable	<i>afhangen</i> [ <i>afhangən</i> ] to depend
<i>aanvennen</i> [ <i>anvənən</i> ] to rush upon	<i>afkeerig</i> [ <i>afkɛrɔx</i> ] averse to
<i>aansluiten, zich</i> [ <i>zɪx anslœytən</i> ] to join	<i>afkorten</i> [ <i>afkɔrtən</i> ] to shorten
<i>aanspraak maken op</i> [ <i>ansprak makən ɔp</i> ] to have a claim	<i>afleggen</i> ( <i>afstand</i> ) [ <i>aflegən</i> ( <i>afstant</i> )] to cover (a distance)
<i>aanspreken</i> [ <i>ansprekən</i> ] to accost	<i>afleiden</i> [ <i>afleidən</i> ] to derive
<i>aanstaande</i> [ <i>anstandɔ</i> ] future, next	<i>afloop</i> [ <i>aflop</i> ] issue
<i>aanstands</i> [ <i>anstɔnts</i> ] directly	<i>afschepen</i> [ <i>afsxɛpən</i> ] to ship; to put off
<i>aanval</i> [ <i>anval</i> ] attack	<i>afsnijden</i> [ <i>afsnɛidən</i> ] to cut off
<i>aanvallen</i> [ <i>anvalən</i> ] to attack	

afpraak [afsprak] agreement  
 afstand [afstant] distance  
 afstand doen [dun] to renounce  
 afstappen [afstapən] to alight  
 aftimmeren [aftimərən] to finish  
 one's carpentering  
 afvallig [afvaləx] faithless  
 afwasschen [afwasən] to wash  
 afwijken [afreikən] to deviate  
 afwijking [afreiking] divergence  
 algemeen [algəmen] common;  
 public; over het — [ovər het  
 —] in general  
 afwisselen [afwissələn] to vary  
 alhier [alhir] here  
 alleen [alən] alone  
 allengs [aləpkx] gradually  
 allergezelligst [alərgəzələxst] very  
 sociable  
 allerleerendigst [alərlerəndəxst]  
 most lively  
 altoos [altos] always  
 alsoo [alzo] thus  
 ambt [ampt] office  
 ambtenaar [amptənər] function-  
 ary, clerk  
 amper [ampr] scarcely  
 angst [ənst] anxiety  
 ankeren [ənkərən] to drop anchor  
 ankertouw [ənkərtəu] cable  
 arbeid [arəbit] work  
 arbeiden [arəbidən] to work  
 arbeidslieden [arəbitlidən] work-  
 men  
 arm [arm] arm  
 armenschool [arməns.scol] charity-  
 school  
 armoede [armuədə] poverty  
 armoedig [armuədix] poor  
 arond [av. . .]  
 arondlied [ . . .]  
 arondschool [arənts.scol] evening-  
 school  
 azijn [azəin] vinegar.

**Baardscheerder** [bartsxerdər]  
 barber

baas [bas] fore-man, master  
 balein [baləin] whale-bone  
 balk [balxk] beam, rafter  
 balspel [balspel] tennis  
 band [bant] band, tie

bandje [bantjə] binding, volume  
 bang zijn voor [baŋ zəin vor]  
 to be afraid of  
 bankbiljet [baŋkbiłjet] banknote  
 banketbakker [baŋketbakər] con-  
 fectioner  
 barnsteen [barnstən] amber  
 bed [bet] bed  
 bedanken [bədaŋkən] to thank  
 bedaren [bədarən] to quiet  
 beddelaken [bədələkən] sheet  
 bederven [bədərvən] to corrupt  
 bedienen [bədinən] to wait(serve)  
 at table  
 bedoelen [bədulən] to intend, to  
 mean  
 bedreigen [bədreigən] to threaten  
 bedrijven [bədrəivən] to commit  
 bedwelmen [bədrəlmən] to intoxi-  
 cate  
 beeld [belt] figure  
 been [ben] leg; vlug ter — [vlr  
 ter —] to be nimble-footed  
 beenderen [bəndərən] bones  
 beetje [betjə] little, a little bit  
 begeerlijk [bəgerlək] charming  
 begeerte [bəgerlə] desire  
 begeren (zich) [bəgerən] to  
 repair to  
 begieten [bəgiten] to water  
 beginletter [bəginlətər] initial  
 beginnen [bəginən] to begin  
 begluren [bəglyrən] to eye, to  
 ogle  
 begrijpen [bəgreipən] to under-  
 stand  
 begrip [bəgrɪp] idea  
 behagen [bəhaɡən] to please  
 behangselpapier [bəhaŋsəlpapir]  
 wall-paper  
 beheerschen [bəhersən] to govern,  
 to rule  
 behelzen [bəhelzən] to contain  
 behendig [bəhəndəx] clever(ly)  
 behoeften [bəhuftən] needs  
 behoeren [bəhuvən] to need  
 behooren [bəhorən] to belong  
 behoorlijk [bəhorlək] proper, fit  
 behoudens [bəhəudəns] except,  
 save  
 bekenden [bəkəndən] acquaint-  
 tances

*belang* [bəlay] importance  
*belangrijk* [bəlayrɛik] important  
*beleefd* [bəleɪft] polite  
*beleggen* [bəlegərən] to besiege  
*beleven* [bələvən] to live to see  
*beloven* [bələvən] to promise  
*bemesting* [bəməstriŋ] manuring  
*bemind* [bəmɪnt] beloved; *zich*  
*— maken* [zɪx — makən] to  
 make one's self —  
*beneden* [bənedən] down-stairs,  
 below  
*beoefenen* [bəʊfənən] to study,  
 practise  
*bepalen* [bəpalən] to fix  
*bepplanten* [bəplantən] to plant  
*beproeven* [bəpru:vən] to try  
*bereiden* [bəreɪdən] to prepare  
*bereiken* [bəreɪkən] to reach  
*berekenen* [bərekənən] to calcu-  
 late  
*bergen* [bərgən] to store, to put  
 by  
*beroemd* [bərumt] celebrated  
*beroep* [bərup] profession, trade  
*berucht* [bərxɪt] notorious  
*beschaving* [bəsxavɪŋ] civilization  
*beschikking* [bəsxɪkɪŋ] disposi-  
 tion; *ter — liggen* [tɛr —  
 lɪgən] to be at one's disposal  
*beschouwing* [bəsxɔuwiŋ] con-  
 templation  
*beschrijving* [bəsxrɛivɪŋ] des-  
 cription  
*beslissen* [bəslɪsən] to decide  
*besluiten* [bəslɔytən] to resolve  
*bespieden* [bəspɪdən] to spy, to  
 watch  
*bespoedigen* [bəspudəgən] to  
 hasten  
*bestaand* [bəstant] existing  
*bestellen* [bəstələn] to order  
*bestemming* [bəstɛmɪŋ] destina-  
 tion  
*bestrijden* [bəstreɪdən] to combat  
*bestudeeren* [bəstyderən] to study  
*betalen* [bətalən] to pay  
*betrekken* [bətrekən] to move into  
 a house; to get cloudy  
*betrekking* [bətrekɪŋ] relation  
*betreuren* [bətrɔrən] to deplore  
*bevaarbaar* [bəvarbar] navigable

*bevalen* [bəvalən] to like, please  
*beraen zeeman* [bəvarən zeman]  
 experienced sailor  
*bevelhebber* [bəvɛlthɛbər] com-  
 mander  
*berestigen* [bərestəgən] to con-  
 firm  
*bewaken* [bəvakən] to watch  
*beweging* [bəveɪɪŋ] movement;  
*in — brengen* [ɪn — brɛgən]  
 to set (a thing) going  
*bewindhebber* [bəvɪnthɛbər] ma-  
 nager  
*bewonderen* [bəvʊndərən] to ad-  
 mire  
*bewondering* [bəvʊndərɪŋ] ad-  
 miration  
*bewoner* [bəvɔnər] inhabitant  
*bewustzijn* [bəvrstseɪn] con-  
 sciousness  
*bezichtigen, bezien* [bəzɪxtəgən,  
 bɔzi:n] to view, to look at  
*bezigheden* [bəzɪχhedən] business  
*bezitten* [bəzɪtən] to possess  
*bezoeken* [bəzʊkən] to visit  
*bezwaar* [bəzvar] objection  
*biechtstoel* [bɪxtstul] confessional  
*bij* [bei] bee  
*bijgevolg* [bəɪgɔvɔlg] accordingly  
*bijkomen* [bəɪkɔmən] to come to  
*bijl* [bei] hatchet  
*bijtijds* [bəɪtɛɪts] in time [(by)]  
*bijzonder* [bɪzvʊndər] particular  
*billijk* [bɪlək] just  
*bint* [bɪnt] joist  
*blaar* [blar] blister  
*blaasbalg* [blasbalx] pair of  
 bellows  
*blaker* [blakər] candlestick  
*blazen* [blazən] to blow  
*bleek* [blek] pale  
*blijkbaar* [bleɪkbar] evident(ly)  
*blijven* [bleɪvən] to stay  
*blik* [blɪk] glance, look  
*bliksem* [blɪksəm] lightning  
*bliksemafleider* [blɪksəmafteɪdər]  
 lightning-rod  
*bloem* [blum] flower  
*blusschen* [blɪsən] to extinguish  
*boeier* [buiər] yacht  
*boekbinder* [bukbrɪndər] book-  
 binder

*boender* [bʊndər] rubbing-brush  
*boezem* [bʊzəm] bosom  
*bok* [bʊk] he-goat  
*bom* [bʊm] bomb  
*bont* [bʊnt] motley, variegated  
*hoodschap* [bʊtsxap] send (word)  
*boord* [bʊrt] board; *aan — gaan*  
     [an — xan] to go aboard;  
     *ran — gaan* [van — xan] to  
     debark  
*boot* [bʊt] boat  
*borst* [bʊrst] breast; lad  
*bouwen* [bʊwən] to build  
*bouurstijl* [bʊusteil] style of  
     building  
*bocenkant* [bʊvənkant] upper-  
     side  
*brandspuit* [brantspœyt] fire-  
     engine  
*brandstof* [brantstɔf] fuel  
*breedvoerig* [bretfuræx] ample  
*brief* [brif] letter, note  
*broek* [bruk] trousers  
*brommen* [brʊmən] to grumble  
*bruidsgift* [brœytsɔft] wedding-  
     present  
*buiten, van — kennen* [bœytən,  
     van — kennən] to know by  
     heart  
*buitengewoon* [bœytəŋəvən] ex-  
     traordinary  
*buitenland* [bœytənlant] foreign  
     country, abroad  
*buitensporigheden* [bœytənsɔræx-  
     hedən] extravagances  
*bundel* [brʊndəl] bundle, collec-  
     tion  
*bunder* [brʊndər] hectare  
*burgeravondschool* [bʊrgərəvənt-  
     sɔl] evening-school  
*burgerkrijg* [bʊrgərkrœiæ] civil-  
     war  
*burgerlijk* [bʊrgərliək] civil  
*buurman* [byrman] neighbour.

*Centraalstation* [sentrəlstasiɔn]  
     central railway-station  
*coulisse* [kulisə] side-scenes.

*Daarmede* [darmedə] with it  
*dadelboom* [dadəlbom] date-tree  
*dagblad* [dagblat] newspaper

*dak* [dak] roof  
*daverend gejuich* [davərənt ɡə-  
     jœyæ] loud applause  
*deel* [del] part  
*deerniswaardig* [dɛrnisvɑrdəx]  
     pitiable  
*deftig* [deftæx] grave, stately  
*degenstoot* [deɡənstɔt] thrust  
*deining* [dɛniŋ] surge, swell  
*dek* [dek] deck  
*deksel* [dɛksəl] cover  
*denken* [denkən] to think, ima-  
     gine  
*desnoods* [desnɔts] if need be  
*destijds* [dɛstɛits] then  
*deugd* [dœrt] virtue  
*dichter* [dɪrtər] poet  
*dienst* [dɪnst] service; — *bewijzen*  
     [— bəvɛizən] to render a —  
     in — *nemen* [in — nemən]  
     to engage (one); *van — zijn*  
     [van — zɛin] to oblige (one)  
*diergaarde, dierentuin* [dirɡardə,  
     dirəntœyn] zoological gardens  
*dominee* [domine] clergyman  
*donker* [dʊpkər] dark  
*doodsbleek* [dɔtsblek] deadly pale  
*doorgaan* [dɔrgan] to walk (tra-  
     vel) on; to take place (con-  
     cert)  
*doorgaans* [dɔrgans] generally  
*doorrijden* [dɔrciɪdən] to ride  
     (drive) all over  
*doorschrijven* [dɔrsxreivən] to  
     write on  
*doof* [dɔrə] deaf person  
*dop* [dɔp] cover, shell  
*dor* [dʊr] barren  
*draaien* [draiən] to turn  
*draak* [drak] dragon; *den —*  
     *steken* [den — stekən] to make  
     a fool of  
*draineeren* [dreinerən] to drain  
*driekantig* [drikantæx] three-  
     edged  
*dronken* [drʊpkən] intoxicated  
*druk* [drrk] edition  
*drukfout* [drrkfɔut] printer's  
     error  
*duidelijk* [dœydələk] clear(ly)  
*duiden, ten kwade —* [dœydən,  
     ten kvadə —] to take amiss

*duivel* [dæyvrəl] devil  
*dulden* [dʁldən] to allow, suffer  
*dun* [dʁn] thin, small  
*dunken* [dʁpkn] to seem  
*duren* [dʁyn] to last  
*duur* [dyr] duration  
*dwaas, dwaselijk* [dras, drasələk] foolish, strange.

*Eens* [ens] once  
*eensdeels* [ensdels] partly  
*eenvoudig* [envʉudɔx] simple, simply  
*eerlang* [erlay] soon  
*eerstceertrekkende* mailboot [erst-værtrekdə melbɔt] firstavailable mailsteamer  
*eetbaar* [etbar] eatable  
*eetmachine* = maag [etmaʃinɔ = ma:x] stomach  
*eeuwig* [euw] eternal  
*eigen* [eigən] peculiar, own  
 . . . . .

*elastiek* [elastik] elastic  
*erfelijk* [erfələk] hereditary  
*ernstig* [ernstɔx] earnest(ly)  
*erven (de)* [ervən] heirs  
*evel* [ovəl] evil  
*euveldaad* [ovəldat] crime  
*evenredig* [evənredɔx] proportional  
*evenredigheid* [evənredɔxheit] proportion  
*ever* [evər] wild boar.

*Fabeldichter* [fabəldɔxtər] fabulist  
*flauw vallen* [fləu valən] to faint  
*flink* [flɪk] clever; — *optreden* [— vptredən] to act in a resolute manner  
*flinke brand* [flɪkə brant] great fire, conflagration  
*fluit, stoomfluit* [flœyt, stomflœyt] steam-whistle  
*fluweel* [flyvel] velvet  
*Franschman* [fransman] Frenchman.

*Gaan* [gan] to go  
*gaanderij* [gandəri:] gallery

*gaarne* [garnə] willingly  
*gadeslaan* [gadəslan] to watch  
*galg* [galx] gallows: — *planten* [— plantən] to erect the —  
*galjoot* [galjot] galiot  
*gang* [gax] gait, walk  
*garnizoen* [garnizun] garrison  
*gast* [gast] guest  
*gastmaal* [gastmal] banquet  
*gauwedief* [goudif] petty thief  
*gave (gaaf)* [gavə (gaf)] talent; gift  
*gebeten, ik kan 't niet* — [*gebeten, ik kan't nit*] I cannot help it  
*gebeuren* [gəborən] to happen  
*gebied* [gəbit] territory  
*gebouw* [gəbou] building  
*gebrek* [gəbrek] fault  
*gebrekkig* [gəbrekəx] disabled  
*gebruik* [gəbrœyk] use  
*gebruiken* [gəbrœykn] to make use  
*gedaante* [gədantə] figure, appearance  
*gedeelte* [gədelte] part [morial  
*gedenkteken* [gədenktekən] memorial  
*gedicht* [gədxɪt] poem  
*gedruisch* [gədrœys] great noise  
*geducht* [gədxɪt] formidable  
*geest* [gest] spirit  
*geestdrift* [gestdrɪft] enthusiasm  
*geestelijke* [gestələkə] clergyman  
*geheel* [gəhel] whole  
*geheimschrijver* [gəheimsxreivər] secretary  
*geheimzinnig* [gəheimzɪnəx] mysterious  
*gehoorzaam* [gəhorzəm] obedient  
*gehucht* [gəhɪxt] hamlet  
*gejubel, gejuich* [gəjybal, gəjœyɪx] acclamation, applause  
*gek* [gɛk], *gekke dingen* [gɛkə dɪŋən] mad, strange things  
*gekleed* [gɛklet] dressed  
*gelaat* [gləat] face  
*geldbezit* [gəldbəzɪt] possession of money  
*gelden* [gəldən] to avail, cost  
*gelegen* [gəlegən] situated  
*gelegenheid* [gəlegənheit] opportunity

geldgebrek [geltxəbrek] want of money  
 gelijikheid [gəliːkheit] conformity  
 geloofbaar [gəloʊvbaːr] credible  
 geloofwaardig [gəloʊvvaːrdɪx] reliable  
 gelooven [gəloʊvən] to believe  
 geluk [gəˈlʊk] luck, fortune  
 gelukken [gəˈlʊkən] to succeed  
 gelukkig [gəˈlʊkɪx] fortunate  
 gelukwensch [gəˈlʊkvrɛns] congratulation  
 gemakkelijk [gəmakəˈlɛk] easy  
 gemakkelijikheid [gəmakəˈlɛkheit] ease  
 gemeenschap onderhouden [gəˈmɛnsxap ʊndərˌhʊdən] to keep up the intercourse  
 gendarme [ʒəndarmə] police-man  
 geneesheer [gəˈnɛʃɛr] doctor  
 geneeskundige [gəˈnɛskʏndəʒə] physician  
 genieten [gəˈniːtən] to enjoy  
 genoeg [gəˈnʊg] plenty (time)  
 genoegē [gəˈnʊgən] pleasure  
 genoegē nemen met [gəˈnʊgən nɛmən mɛt] to content oneself: naar genoegē vinden [naːr — vrɪndən] to take delight in  
 genot [gəˈnɔt] enjoyment  
 Germaansch [gərmɑns] Teutonic  
 gerust [gəˈrʏst] quiet(ly)  
 geschiedkundig [gəˈsiːtkʏndɪx] historical  
 geschiedschrijver [gəˈsiːtsxrɛivər] historian  
 geschil [gəˈʃɪl] quarrel  
 gestand, zijn woord — doen [zɛɪn vɔrt ʒəˈstɑnt dʊn] to keep one's word  
 gevaar [gəˈvaːr] danger  
 geval [gəˈvɑl] case  
 gevangen nemen [gəˈvɑŋgən nɛmən] to take prisoner  
 gewatheid [gəˈvathɛit] cleverness  
 gevoel [gəˈvʊl] feeling  
 gerolg [gəˈvʊlɪx] consequence;  
 train  
 geweld [gəˈvɛlt] force, violence  
 geweldig [gəˈvɛldɪx] violent  
 gewijd aan [gəˈvɛit an] devoted to

gewone trein [gəˈvʊnə trɛɪn] slow train  
 gewoon(lijk) [gəˈvʊn(lɛk)] usual(ly)  
 gewoonte [gəˈvʊntə] custom  
 gewrocht [gəˈvrɔxt] production  
 gezag [gəˈzɑx] authority  
 gezantschap [gəˈzɑntsxap] embassy  
 gezicht [gəˈziːxt] view, prospect  
 gezichtseinder [gəˈziːxtsɛɪndər] horizon  
 gietijzer [giːtɛizər] pig-iron  
 glas [glas] glass, window  
 glimp [ɡlɪmp] show  
 gloeiend [ɡlʊɛnt] glowing  
 gluipen [ɡlʊɛpən] to sneak  
 gluren [ɡlʏrən] to leer  
 godsdienst [ɡɔtsdɪnst] religion  
 godspraak [ɡɔtsprɑk] oracle  
 goedvinden [ɡudvrɪndən] to approve  
 golf [ɡɔlf] gulf, wave  
 gooien [ɡoɪən] to throw  
 gort [ɡɔrt] barley  
 goud [ɡəʊt] gold  
 goudgalon [ɡəʊtɡalɔn] gold-lace  
 graad [ɡrɑt] degree  
 gracht [ɡrɑxt] canal  
 graag iets doen [ɡrɑx ɪts dʊn] to like  
 graven [ɡrɑvən] to dig  
 grens [ɡrɛns] frontier  
 grillig [ɡrɪlɪx] capricious  
 groenen [ɡrʊnən] to grow green  
 groepje [ɡrʊpɔjə] little group  
 grondwet [ɡrʊntvɛt] fundamental law  
 groeten [ɡrʊtən] to salute  
 grootsch [ɡrɔts] sublime  
 gymnasium [ɡɪmnɑzɪəm] grammar-school.

**Haard** [hart] hearth  
 haasten, zich — [hɑstən] to hasten  
 hakken [hakən] to cut to pieces, to chop  
 halen [halən] to fetch; laten — [latən —] to send for  
 halverwege [həlvərɛʒə] half way  
 hand, de — geven [hant, də — gəvən] to shake hands; iemand

de — boren het hoofd houden  
 [imant də — borən het hof  
 hōdən] to take one's part  
 handelen [handələn] to act, to  
 trade  
 handelsvolk [handəlsvɔlk] com-  
 mercial people  
 handig [handɪx] handy  
 handwerk [hantrɛrk] business,  
 handicraft  
 handwerkslieden [hantrɛrksli:dən]  
 workmen  
 hartelijk [hartələk] cordial(ly)  
 haten [hatən] to hate  
 heel wat [hel vat] a great deal of  
 heen en weer [hen ɛn vɛr] to and  
 fro  
 heenstappen over [henstapən ovɛr]  
 to pass over; to disregard  
 heester [hestər] shrub  
 herdersdans [herdɛrsdɑns] pas-  
 toral dance  
 herfst [hɛrfst] autumn  
 herinneren [hɛrɪnɛrən] to re-  
 member, to remind of  
 herkennen [hɛrkenən] to recog-  
 nize  
 hersens [hɛrsəns] brain  
 herstellen [hɛrstɛlən] to recover  
 herstelling [hɛrstɛlɪŋ] recovery  
 heuschheid [hosheit] courteous-  
 ness  
 heuvel [høvəl] hill  
 hevig [hevɪx] violent  
 hinken aan een euvel [hɪŋkən an  
 ɛn øvəl] to be given to a fault  
 hoek [huk] corner  
 hoen [hun] hen  
 hoereelheid [huvɛlheit] quantity  
 hofmeester [hofmɛstər] steward  
 hol [hɔl] cavern; hollow  
 hongerig [hʊŋgɛrɪx] hungry  
 hongersnood [hʊŋgɛrsnot] famine  
 hoofdpersoon [hoftpɛrsoʊn] prin-  
 cipal person  
 hoofdplaats [hoftplats] capital  
 hoogte, op de — van [vɔp də  
 hɔxtə van] to be well up in  
 hooischuur [hoisxʏr] hay-barn  
 hoorbaar [horbar] audible  
 hooren [horən] to hear  
 hotel [hotɛl] hotel

houding [hʊdɪŋ] attitude  
 houtrijk [houtrɛik] woody  
 hoveling [hovɛlɪŋ] courtier  
 huis, te — blijven [tə hœys blɛivən]  
 to stay at home  
 huiselijk [hœysələk] domestic  
 huisgenooten [hœysxno:tən] in-  
 mates, persons living in the  
 same house  
 huisheer [hœysher] landlord  
 huishouden [hœyshʊdən] house-  
 hold  
 hut [hɪt] cabin  
 huur [hyr] lease, rent.

**IJ**, het — [hɛt ɛi] Y  
 ijzeren [ɛizərən] iron  
 immers [ɪmɛrs] indeed  
 ingaan [ɪŋgən] to enter  
 ingang [ɪŋgɪŋ] entrance  
 inhoud [ɪnhʊt] contents  
 inkt [ɪŋkt] ink  
 innemen [ɪnɛmən] to take  
 inrichten [ɪnrɪxtən] to arrange  
 inslan [ɪnslan] to strike by  
 lightning  
 intekenen [ɪntɛkənən] to sub-  
 scribe  
 incaart [ɪnvart] entrance  
 invloed [ɪnvlu:t] influence  
 inwilligen [ɪnvɪlɪgən] to comply  
 with  
 inzage, ter — [tɛr ɪnzagə] for  
 perusal.

Jacht [jɔxt] hunting  
 jeugd [jɔxt] youth  
 jongen [jɔŋgən] boy, lad  
 jonkheid [jɔŋkheit] youth  
 Jood [jot] Jew  
 juist [jœyst] right(ly), exact(ly).

Kaars [kars] candle  
 kaartspel [kartspɛl] playing at  
 cards  
 kabel [kabɛl] cable  
 kade [kadə] quay  
 kalf [kalf] calf  
 kamer [kamɛr] room  
 kanonvuur [kanʊnvʏr] canno-  
 nade



*kantoorbediende* [*kantorbədində*] clerk

*kast* [*kast*] closet, cupboard

*kastelein* [*kastleɪn*] inn-keeper

*kastenmaker* [*kastə(n)makər*] cabinetmaker

*kastijden* [*kasteɪdɛn*] to chastise

*katuil* [*katœy!*] screech-owl

*kennen* [*kenən*] to know

*kennismaking* [*kenəsmakɪŋ*] acquaintance

*kennisneming* [*kenəsneɪmɪŋ*] investigation

*kenschetse* [*kensxetsənt*] characteristic

*kerel* [*kerəl*] fellow

*kermis* [*kərmɪs*] fair

*kerseboom* [*kərsəbom*] cherry-tree

*keten* [*kɛtən*] chain

*keukenmeid* [*køkə(n)mɛit*] cook

*Keulenaar* [*kolnər*] inhabitant of Cologne

*keus* (*keuze*) [*kɔs* (*kɔzə*)] choice

*kiesbaar* [*kizbər*] eligible

*kijken* [*kɛikən*] to look

*kinderachtig* [*kindəraxtɪx*] childish

*kist* [*kɪst*] box, chest

*klaar zijn* [*klar zɛɪn*] to be ready

*klappen* [*klapən*] to clap

*kleermaker* [*klermakər*] tailor

*kleinigheid* [*kleɪnsxɦɛit*] trifle

*klemmen* [*klemən*] to pinch

*klerk* [*klerk*] clerk

*kletsen* [*kletsən*] to smack

*kletteren* [*kletərən*] to clash

*kleuter* [*kløtər*] little boy (girl)

*klok* [*klɔk*] bell, clock

*klomp* [*klɒmp*] wooden shoe

*klooster* [*klostər*] cloister

*kloosterleven* [*klostərlevən*] monastic life

*knal* [*knal*] explosion

*knecht* [*knɛxt*] man-servant

*knikkeren* [*knɪkərən*] to play at marbles

*knoop* [*knɒp*] button

*knoopgat* [*knɒprat*] button-hole

*knop* [*knɒp*] bud, knob

*koek* [*kuk*] cake [tioner]

*koekbakker* [*kukbakər*] confec-

*koel* [*kul*] cool

*koelbloedigheid* [*kulbludəɦɛit*] coolness

*koetsier* [*kutsɪr*] coachman

*koffer* [*ktfər*] trunk

*koffiedrinken* [*kɔfɪdrɪŋkən*] lunch

*koken* [*kokən*] to cook; *zijn pot* — [*zɛɪn pɒt* —] one's dinner

*kolder* [*kɔldər*] leather jacket

*koninkrijk* [*konɪŋkrɛɪk*] kingdom

*komen bezoeken* [*komən bəzəkən*] to pay a visit

*koomenij* [*komənɛi*] grocer's shop

*koop* [*kɒp*] bargain

*koopman* [*kɒpmən*] merchant

*koopmansgoederen* [*kɒpmans-gudərən*] merchandise

*koordansen* [*kordənsən*] rope-dancing

*kop* [*kɒp*] head

*koppel* [*kɒpəl*] couple, pair

*korreltje* [*kɔrəltjə*] grain

*kostbaar* [*kɒstbər*] expensive

*kosten, ten — van* [*tɛn kɒstə vən*] at the expense of

*kracht* [*kraxt*] force; *met volle* — [*met vɒlə* —] full speed

*krijg* [*kreɪx*] war

*krijgen* [*kreɪgən*] to get, to obtain

*krijgshaftig* [*kreɪxshaftɪx*] warlike

*krijgsmansstand* [*kreɪxsmən-stant*] military profession

*krijt* [*kreit*] chalk

*kring* [*kriŋ*] circle, sphere

*krom* [*krum*] crooked, bent

*kromhouten* [*kromɦutən*] knees

*kruisigen* [*krœysɛən*] to crucify

*krullebol* [*krɪlɦɒl*] curly-headed person

*kundig* [*krɒdɪx*] expert

*kunstsmaak* [*krɒnstmak*] artistic taste

*kunstterm* [*krɒnstɛrm*] technical term

*kust* [*krɪst*] coast

*kwaadspreken* [*kratsprekən*] to calumniate

*kwartier* [*kvartɪr*] quarter (of an hour).

*Laat* [lat] late  
*luken* [lakən] cloth  
*land* [lant] country  
*landbouw* [landbou] agriculture  
*landbouwschool* [landbousrol] agricultural school  
*landbouwerktuigen* [landbou-  
*verktuigen*] implements of  
 husbandry  
*landsman* [lantsman] fellow-  
 countryman  
*langzaam* [lapksam] slow(ly)  
*langzamerhand* [lapksamərhand]  
 by and by  
*lastig* [lastəx] difficult  
*lederen* [ledərən] leather  
*leen* [len], *ter* — *krijgen* [ter —  
*kreigən*] to borrow from (of);  
*ter* — *vragen* [ter — vragən]  
 to borrow from, of  
*leenen* [lenən] to lend; to borrow  
*leeraar* [lerar] teacher  
*leeszaal* [lesal] reading-room  
*leiboom* [leibom] espalier  
*leiden* [leidən] to conduct  
*lente* [lentə] spring  
*lessenaar* [lesənar] desk  
*letterkunde* [letərkrundə] litera-  
 ture  
*leven* [levən] to live  
*levendig* [levəndəx] busy  
*levensgeraar* [levənsgevar] peril  
 of life  
*levenswijze* [levənsveizə] manner  
 of living  
*licht* [lɪxt] light  
*lichtgeloovig* [lɪxtgəlorəx] credu-  
 lous  
*lichtgrijs* [lɪxtgreis] light-gray  
*lichtrood* [lɪxtrot] light-red  
*lid* [lit] member  
*liefhebben* [lifheben] to love  
*lijfwacht* [leifwaxt] life-guard  
*links* [lɪŋks] left  
*linksom gaan* [lɪŋksəm gan] to  
 turn to the left  
*linnen* [lɪnən] linen  
*lip* [lɪp] lip  
*list* [list] trick  
*logeren* [lozərən] to stay at a  
 person's house [room]  
*logeerkamer* [lozərkamər] spare-

*logement* [lozəment] hotel, inn  
*logisch* [logɪs] logical  
*loopen* [lopən] to run; to go  
*loepend* [lopənt] current  
*losgooien* [losgoiən] to loosen  
*losheid* [losheit] ease, looseness  
*lossen* [lɔsən] to unload  
*loven* [lovən] to praise  
*lucht* [lɪxt] sky  
*luchtig* [lɪxtəx] airy, light  
*luchtreis* [lɪxtreis] aerial voyage  
*luiden* [lœydən] to ring  
*luim* [lœym] humour  
*lust hebben* [lɪst heben] to have  
 a mind.

*Maal* [mal] time  
*maaltijd* [malteit] meal  
*maatschappij* [matsxapɛi] com-  
 pany, society  
*machine* [masiən] engine  
*machtig* [maxtəx] mighty  
*mail* [mel] mail  
*mal* [mal] mould  
*mank* [mayk] lame  
*mannelijk* [manlək] manly, mas-  
 culine, male  
*massa* [masa] mass  
*mededeelen* [medəlelən] to com-  
 municate  
*meebrengen* [mebreŋən] to bring  
*meenemen* [menemən] to take  
 with  
*meer* [mer] lake  
*meerekenen* [merekənən] to in-  
 clude  
*meetbaar* [metbar] measurable  
*melk* [mɛlk] milk  
*melkrouw* [mɛlkvrɔu] milk-  
 woman  
*menigte* [menəxtə] multitude,  
 number  
*mennen* [menən] to drive  
*merkbaar* [mɛrkbar] evident(ly)  
*merkwaardig* [mɛrkwardəx] re-  
 markable  
*metselaar* [mɛtsələr] mason  
*meubel* [mɔbəl] piece of furni-  
 ture  
*meubelmagazijn* [mɔbəlmagazi:n]  
 upholsterer's store  
*middagmaal* [mɪdarmal] dinner

*middelbaar* [midəlbər] average, moderate  
*Middellandsche Zee* [midəlantʃəzə] Mediterranean  
*midden, het* — [het midən] middle  
*milddadig* [mildədɪx] charitable  
*mislukken* [mislʏkən] to miscarry  
*missen* [mɪsən] to miss, to fail  
*moedertaal* [mudərtal] native tongue  
*moeielyk* [muɪələk] difficult  
*molen* [molən] mill  
*munt* [mrnt] coin  
*muntten* [mrntən] coinage  
*muntsysteem, muntstelsel* [mrnt-sistem, mrntstelsəl] monetary system  
*muur* [myr] wall.

*Naam, uit* — *van* [æyt nam van] in the name of  
*naaste, ten* — *bij* [ten nastə bei] almost

*nabootsen* [nabotsən] to imitate  
*nacht* [naxt] night  
*nachtegal* [naxtəgal] nightingale  
*nachtelyk* [naxtələk] nightly  
*nalezen* [nalezən] to glean  
*namaken* [namakən] to counterfeit

*naropen* [narupən] to call after  
*natuurstaat* [natyrstət] state of nature

*naauw* [nəu] narrow  
*nauwelijks* [nəuələks] scarcely  
*naukeurig* [nəukorɪx] exact(ly)  
*nauwlettend* [nəuletənt] very attentive

*nek* [nek] neck: *den* — *toekeeren* [tukərən] to turn one's back  
*net van pas* [net van pas] in the right nick of time

*nieuwsgierig* [niusxirɪx] inquisitive

*nood* [not] need; *in geval van* — [in ɣəval van —] in case of —  
*nooddwang* [nodvɔŋ] exigency  
*noodig hebben* [nodɪx hɛbən] to want

*noodwendig* [notvɛndɪx] necessary  
*noodzaken* [notsakən] to force.

*Oever* [urər] bank, shore  
*olifant* [olifant] elephant  
*olifantstand* [olifantstənt] elephant's tooth

*omarmen* [vmarmən] to embrace  
*omdragen* [vmdragən] to carry about

*omgeving* [vmgevɪŋ] environs  
*omkleeden* [vmkledən] to envelop

*ommezien, in een* — [in en vməzin] in a trice

*omstandigheid* [vmstandɪxheit] circumstance

*omvaren* [vmvarən] to circumnavigate

*omwenteling* [vmvɛntəlɪŋ] revolution  
*omwerken* [vmvɛrkən] to rewrite; to recast

*onafhankelijk* [vnafhəŋkələk] independent

*onbekend* [vnbəkent] unknown

*onbemerkt* [vnbəmerkət] unobserved

*onberekenbaar* [vnbərekənbar] incalculable

*onberaagen* [vnbəraɣən] unbiased

*ondanks* [vndəŋks] in spite of

*ondernemen* [vndərnɛmən] to undertake

*onderwijzen* [vndərveɪzən] to teach

*onderzoeken* [vndərzukən] to examine

*ondragelyk* [vndrɑxələk] insufferable

*ongehoord* [vŋgəhɔrt] unheard of  
*ongehoorzaam* [vŋgəhɔrɔzɑm] disobedient

*ongeluk* [vŋgəlɪx] misfortune

*ongeveer* [vŋgəvɛr] about, almost

*ongevoeligheid* [vŋgəvulɪxheit] insensibility

*ongewoon* [vŋgəvɔn] unused

*ongezond* [vŋgəzɔnt] unhealthy

*onhandig* [vnhandɪx] awkward

*onmiddelbaar* [vnmidəlbər] at once

*onmiddellijk* [vnmidələk] immediately

*onmisbaar* [vnmɪzbar] indispensable

onnavigbaar [ʋnarʋlgbar] inimitable  
 onrecht plegen [ʋnrɛxt plɛgən] to do injustice  
 ontbijt [ʋntbeɪt] breakfast  
 ontbinden [ʋntbindən] to dissolve  
 onterven [ʋnterrən] to disinherit  
 ontfermen [ʋntfermən] to have mercy on  
 onthoofden [ʋnthofdən] to decapitate  
 ontkomen [ʋntkomən] to escape  
 ontkurken [ʋntkʏrkən] uncork  
 ontleden [ʋntledən] to dissect  
 ontrukken [ʋntrʏkən] to snatch away  
 ontrallen [ʋntfalən] to slip out of  
 ontvangen [ʋntfagən] to receive  
 ontvangst [ʋntfagst] receipt  
 ontrouwen [ʋntfʋən] to unfold  
 ontwikkelen [ʋntrikələn] to develop  
 onuitwischaar [ʋnœytrisbar] indelible  
 onveilig [ʋnveɪlɪx] unsafe  
 onverschrokken [ʋnvɛrsɛrɔkən] undaunted  
 onverwachts [ʋnvɛrvaxts] suddenly  
 onvoorzichtigheid [ʋnvʋrɔzɪxtəxheɪt] imprudence  
 onweer [ʋnveɪ] thunderstorm  
 oogenblik [ʋgʋnblɪk] moment  
 oogmerk [ʋʋmerk] aim  
 ooit [ʋɔɪt] ever  
 oor [ʋɔ] ear  
 oordeel [ʋɔrdɛl] judgment, opinion  
 oorlog [ʋɔrlɔx] war  
 oorlogschip [ʋɔrlɔxɔɪp] man of war  
 oorspronkelijk [ʋɔsprɔŋkɛlək] original  
 oorzaak [ʋɔzak] cause, origin  
 Oost, de — [də ɔst] the East  
 oostelijk [ʋɔstələk] Eastern  
 opdoen [ʋpɔdʋn] to get, to lay up  
 openbaar [ʋɔpənbar] public  
 opendoen [ʋɔpəndʋn] to open  
 opensluiten [ʋɔpənslœytən] to unlock

openspringen [ʋɔpənsprɪŋən] to burst  
 opgeven [ʋpgɛvən] to give up  
 opgewonden [ʋpgəvʋndən] excited  
 ophalen [ʋphalən] to draw up  
 ophebben met [ʋphebən mɛt] to make much of  
 ophemelen [ʋphemələn] to extol  
 opklaren [ʋpklarən] to clear up  
 oplossen [ʋplɔssən] to dissolve; to solve  
 opmerken [ʋpmerkən] to observe  
 opofferen [ʋpɔfərən] to sacrifice  
 opperbevelhebber [ʋpərbəvɛlhebər] commander-in-chief  
 opperbestuur [ʋpərbɛstʏr] supreme power  
 oprichten [ʋprɪxtən] to erect  
 opsieren [ʋpsirən] to trim, to adorn  
 opstaan [ʋpstan] to rise  
 opstoken [ʋpstokən] to poke up  
 optrekken, den neus — [dən nəʋʋptrekən] to pull up the nose  
 opraren [ʋprarən] to steam up  
 opwekken [ʋprekən] to raise  
 opzettelijk [ʋpzetlək] on purpose  
 orde, in — brengen [ɪn ɔrdəbrɛŋən] to put in order  
 orgelspeler [ʋrgɛlspeɪlər] organist  
 oriënteeren, zich — [z. ɔriɛntərən] to see one's way  
 oud-hoogleeraar [ʋut-hoʋxlɛrar] late professor  
 ouds, van — [vən ɔuts] of old  
 overal [ʋɔvəral] everywhere  
 overbrengen (groeten) [grʏtən ɔvərbɛŋən] to remember one to  
 overdrijven [ʋvərdreɪvən] to exaggerate  
 overeind zetten [ʋvəreɪnt zɛtən] to erect  
 overeenstemming [ʋvəreɪnstɛmɪŋ] agreement  
 overjas [ʋvərjas] great coat  
 overlaten, te wenschen — [təvɛnsən ɔvərlatən] to fall short of  
 overoud [ʋvərɔut] very old  
 overtocht [ʋvərtɔxt] passage

overtreffen [*ovərtrefən*] to surpass

overtrek [*ovərtrek*] case, cover

overtrekken [*ovərtrekən*] to cross

overtuigen [*ovərtuɣən*] to convince

overvallen [*ovərvalən*] to overtake

overwinnaar [*ovərwinar*] conqueror

overzuinig [*ovərzəynɔx*] very sparing(ly).

*Paal* [*pal*] pole, stake

*paar* [*par*] couple; a few

*paardekracht* (nominaal) [*pard-kraxt* (nominal)] nominal horse-power

*paardenmennen* [*pardəmənən*] to drive

*paarlemoer* [*parləmur*] mother of pearl

*pak kleeren* [*pak klerən*] suit of clothes

*pakje* [*pakjə*] parcel

*pakjesdrager* [*pakjəsdragər*] porter

*pakketboot* [*paketbot*] packet-boat

*paleis* [*paleis*] palace

*paleisgraaf* [*paleisgraf*] castellan

*pand* [*pant*] pledge

*paraplu* [*paraply*] umbrella

*partijdig* [*parteidɔx*] partial(ly)

*pas* [*pas*] step; scarcely

*pen* [*pən*] pen

*pennemes* [*pənəməs*] pen-knife

*penning* [*penny*] penny, medal

*piertala* [*piertala*] jack-pudding

*pijnigen* [*peɪnɣən*] to torment

*plaats* [*plats*] place

*plagen* [*plagən*] to tease, to vex

*plan, van — zijn* [*van plan zɛin*] to intend

*plat* [*plat*] flat

*plein* [*plein*] square

*pletten* [*pletən*] to flatten

*pleziertochtje* [*pləzirtɔxtjə*] pleasure-trip

*plotseling* [*plotsəlmɪŋ*] sudden(ly)

*plunderen* [*plɪndərən*] to plunder

*plunderziek* [*plɪndərzi:k*] rapacious

*poging* [*pogɪŋ*] attempt

*poort* [*port*] gate

*pop* [*pɔp*] doll, puppet

*poppenkast* [*pɔpəkast*] puppet-show. Punch and Judy-show

*postduif* [*pɔstdœyf*] carrier-pigeon

*posterij* [*pɔstəri*] mail-service

*posthuis* [*pɔsthœys*] post-office

*postkantoor* [*pɔstkantor*] post-office

*postpakket* [*pɔstpaket*] postal parcel

*prachtband* [*praxtbant*] edition de luxe

*prachtig* [*praxtɪx*] beautiful

*prachtingave* [*praxtœygtava*] edition de luxe

*precies* [*prɛsɪs*] just

*prettig* [*prɛtɪx*] agreeable

*prijsgeren* [*prɛɪsgərən*] to abandon

*proeven* [*pruvən*] to try, to taste

*puin* [*pœyn*] ruins

*punthoed* [*prnthut*] pointed hat

*puts* [*pɪts*] bucket.

*Raad* [*rat*] advice, counsel;

*geen — weten* [*gen — vɛtən*] to be at one's wit's end

*raadplegen* [*ratplɛgən*] to consult

*raadsman* [*ratsman*] councillor

*rade, te — worden* [*te rade vɛr-ɔdn*] to resolve

*raden* [*radən*] to guess

*rakelings* [*rakəlɪŋs*] close to

*raken* [*rakən*] to touch

*rand* [*rant*] border

*rechtbank* [*rextbank*] tribunal

*rechter* [*rextər*] judge

*rechterbeen* [*rextərben*] right leg

*rechtsgeleerde* [*rextsɣələrdə*] lawyer

*redden* [*redən*] to save

*rededeelen* [*redədələm*] parts of speech

*reden, zich — geven van* [*z. redən gərən van*] to be conscious of

*reede* [*redə*] road

*regeeringsvorm* [*rəgərɪŋsvɔrm*] system of government

*regel* [regəl] rule  
*regelrecht* [regəlrext] straight  
*regenbui* [regənbœy] shower of rain  
*reis* [reis] journey, voyage; *op — gaan* [ʊp — ɡan] to go on a journey  
*reisgids* [reisxits] guide; timetable  
*reiziger* [reizəgər] traveller  
*rekenen* [rekənən] to count  
*residentie* [rezidensi] residence  
*reusachtig* [roʊsəxt] gigantic  
*rijden* [reɪdən] to ride; to drive  
*rijk* [reik] rich  
*rijksmuseum* [reiksmuzeem] National Museum  
*rijtoer* [reitʊr] drive  
*rijtuig* [reitʊyχ] cab, carriage  
*ringmuur* [riŋmyr] circular wall  
*roem* [rum] glory  
*roemen* [rumən] to praise  
*roemrijk* [rumreik] glorious  
*roepen* [rupən] to call  
*roes* [rus] drunkenness  
*roman* [roman] novel  
*rooken* [rokən] to smoke  
*rooven* [rovən] to rob  
*ros* [rɔs] horse  
*rug* [rʌr] back  
*ruggelings* [rygɔlɪŋs] backward(s)  
*ruimte* [rœymtə] room, space  
*ruit* [rœyt] rhomb  
*ruiter* [rœytər] horseman  
*ruiterwacht* [rœytərrəxt] horse-guards  
*rukwind* [rykrɪnt] gust of wind  
*rustig* [rɪstəχ] calm(ly).

*Samen* [samən] together  
*schaap* [ʃxap] sheep  
*schaarsch* [ʃxars] scarcely  
*schaarslijper, schareslijp* [ʃxar-sleɪpər, ʃxarəsleɪp] knife-grinder  
*schadeloosstelling* [ʃxadəlostelɪŋ] indemnification  
*schande* [ʃxandə] shame  
*schapenveesch* [ʃxapə(n)vles] mutton  
*scheepsbouw* [ʃxepsbəʊ] ship-building

*scheepvaart* [ʃxeprərt] navigation  
*schijnbaar* [ʃxeɪnbər] apparent(ly)  
*schijnen* [ʃxeɪnən] to shine, to seem  
*schikken, zich — naar* [zɪχ ʃxɪkən nar] to accommodate oneself to  
*schilder* [ʃxɪldər] painter  
*schilderachtig* [ʃxɪldərəxtəχ] picturesque  
*schilderen* [ʃxɪldərən] to paint  
*schulderij* [ʃxɪldəreɪ] picture  
*schildering* [ʃxɪldərɪŋ] description  
*schipper* [ʃxɪpər] boatsman  
*schoen* [ʃxu:n] shoe  
*schoenenflik* [ʃxu:n(n)flɪk] cobbler  
*schoenmaker* [ʃxu:nmakər] shoemaker  
*schotel* [ʃxotəl] dish  
*shoulder* [ʃʃəʊlə] shoulder  
*schouwburg* [ʃxəʊbrʌχ] theatre  
*schouwspel* [ʃxəʊspəl] spectacle, sight  
*schrede* [ʃxredə] step  
*schreeuw* [ʃxreu] cry  
*schreeuwen* [ʃxreʊən] to cry  
*schrijver* [ʃxreɪvər] author; clerk  
*schroef* [ʃxru:f] screw  
*schroefstoomboot* [ʃxru:fstombot], *schroefstoomschip* [ʃrrufstom-sɪp], *schroefboot* [ʃrrʌvbot] screw-steamer  
*schuif* [ʃxœyff] bolt  
*schuilen* [ʃxœylən] to hide oneself  
*schutsluis* [ʃxɪrtsləys] sluice  
*schutten* [ʃxɪtən] to pass through a sluice  
*secretaris* [sekrətərɪs] secretary  
*selderij* [seldəreɪ] celery  
*sidderen* [sɪdərən] to tremble  
*sigaar* [sɪgər] cigar  
*slachterij* [sləxtəreɪ] butchery  
*slang* [slɑŋ] snake  
*slangebeet* [slɑŋbet] bite of a serpent  
*slap* [slap] supple, limp  
*slechts* [slɛxts] only  
*slepend* [slepənt] lame

*slingeren* [slɪŋərən] to toss, to fling  
*slokken* [slʊkən] to swallow  
*slurf* [slʏrf] trunk  
*smadelijk* [smadɛlək] scornful(ly)  
*smal* [smal] narrow  
*snel* [snɛl] quick  
*sneltrein* [snɛltrɛɪn] fast train  
*snelvarende (boot)* [snɛlvarəndə (bot)] quickeest boat  
*snoes(haan)* [snus(han)] brag-gart, boaster  
*soldij* [sɔldɛi] pay  
*sop, het ruime* — *kiezen* [hɔt rœymə sɔp kizən] to put to sea; in het ruime — [in het rœymə —] on the open sea  
*spuander* [spandər] chip  
*speelsch* [spɛls] playful  
*spel, in het* — *zijn* [in het spɛl zɛɪn] to be the cause of  
*spelen* [spɛlən] to play  
*spijt, tot mijn* — [tɔt mɛɪn spɛɪt] I am sorry  
*spijten* [spɛɪtən] to be sorry  
*spits* [spɪts] point, pointed  
*splinter* [splɪntər] splinter  
*spoedig* [spudɛx] soon [tals  
*spoorlijn* [sporlɛɪn] railway, me-  
*spoorweg* [sporvɛxnet] system of railways  
*stam, blijven* — [blɛivən stan] to stop  
*staande houden* [standə hɔudən] to stop (one)  
*staat, in* — *zijn* [in stat zɛɪn] to be able  
*staatsierok* [stasirɔk] court-dress  
*staatsman* [statsman] statesman  
*staken* [stakən] to cease, to strike work  
*stampen* [stampən] to stamp  
*stund* [stant] position  
*stappen* [stapən] to step  
*staren* [starən] to gaze, to stare  
*steeds* [stɛts] always  
*steiger* [steigər] pier, quay  
*stellig* [stɛləx] surely  
*stelling* [stɛlɪŋ] hypothesis  
*steunstok* [stɔunstɔk] stick to lean upon  
*sterven* [stɛrvən] to die

*stevan* [stevən] stem, prow; *den* — *wenden* [vɛndən] to set sail for  
*stevig* [stɛvɛx] solid  
*stil houden* [stil hɔudən] to stop  
*stille* [stɪltə], in — privately, secretly  
*stoken, vuurtje* — [vɛrtjə stɔkən] to make fire  
*stoomboot* [stombot] steamer  
*stoomvaartmaatschappij* [stom-vartmaatsxapɛi] steam-naviga-tion company  
*stoomwerktuig* [stomvɛrktœyɔ] steam-engine  
*stoppen* [stɔpən ɪn] to put into  
*stormloopen* [stɔrmlɔpən] to make a run upon  
*stout* [stɔut] bold; naughty  
*straat* [strat] street; *op de* — *uitzien* [œyztɛɪn] to look out upon the street  
*straf* [straf] punishment  
*streek* [streɔk] part of a country, region  
*streek, van* — *geraken* [gɛrəkən] to be upset  
*streelen* [strelən] to stroke  
*strengste, ten* — [tɛn strɛŋstə] most severely  
*strijd* [streɪt] fight  
*strijdperk* [streɪtɛrk] field of battle  
*strikschoenen* [striksxɔnən] laced boots  
*stompelen* [strɔmpɔlən] to stumble  
*strooleger* [strolegər] bed of straw  
*stroom* [strom] stream  
*stroomen* [stromən] to stream  
*stroovisch* [stroovɪs] wisp of straw  
*strop* [strɔp] rope; *tot den* — *veroordeelen* [vɛrɔrdɛlən] to condemn to be hanged  
*stuk* [strɔk] piece.

*Taak* [tak] task; *zich tot (ten)* — *stellen* [stɛlən] to set one-self the task  
*taal* [tal] language  
*taalboek* [talbɔk] grammar  
*taaleigen* [taleɪgən] idiom

*tal van* [*tal van*] a great number of

*talrijk* [*talreik*] numerous

*teekenen* [*tekanen*] to draw

*tegelijk* [*tegaleik*] at once

*tegemoet gaan* (*toekomst*) [*təgəmut gan*] to have fine prospects

*tegenspreken* [*tegənsprekən*] to contradict

*telkens* [*telkens*] at every time

*terecht komen* (*kogel*) [*tərext komən*] to alight, to strike

*terugkomen* [*tərɪxkoman*] to return

*terugkomst* [*tərɪxkʊmst*] return

*tevens* [*terəns*] at once, at the same time

*t'huis* [*təys*] at home

*timmerman* [*tɪmərman*] carpenter

*titel* [*titəl*] title

*toch niet* [*təx nit*] not at all

*toeigenen* [*tucigənən*] to appropriate

*toegenegen* [*tugənegən*] affection

*toehalen* [*tuhələn*] to tie tighter

*toekomstig* [*tu'kʊmstəx*] future

*toelaten* [*tulətən*] to permit

*toeschrijven* [*tusərxɪvən*] to ascribe

*toestaan* [*tustən*] to grant

*toestand* [*tustənt*] state, situation

*toeren* [*turən*] to tarry

*toevertrouwen* [*tuvərtrəuvən*] to entrust

*tolk* [*tɔlk*] interpreter

*ton* [*tʊn*] tun

*tong* [*tʊŋ*] tongue

*tonnemaat* [*tʊnəmat*] tonnage

*tooneel* [*tonel*] scene, stage

*tooneelmatig* [*tonelmatəx*] theatrical

*tooverachtig* [*tovərəxtəx*] magic

*toren* [*torən*] tower

*torenklokken* [*torə(n)klɔkən*] church-bell

*touwtje* [*toutjə*] string

*traan* [*tran*] tear

*trachten* [*traxtən*] to endeavour

*trap* [*trap*] stairs; *de — afgaan* [*afɾan*] to go down-stairs

*trillen* [*trilən*] to shiver, to tremble

*troost* [*trost*] comfort, consolation

*trouw* [*trəu*] faithful, faith

*tuig* [*təyɪx*] harness

*tusschengerechten* [*tɪrsəŋgərəxtən*] entremets

*twist* [*trɪst*] quarrel.

*Uitbaggeren* [*æytbagərən*] to dredge out

*uitbarsten* [*æytbərstən*] to burst out

*uitbotten* [*æytbɔtən*] to bud forth

*uitbreiding* [*æytbreɪdɪŋ*] development

*uitbrengen* [*æytbreyŋən*] to utter

*uitdrukking* [*æytdrɪkɪŋ*] expression

*uiteenspringen* [*æytensprɪŋən*] to burst

*uiteinde* [*æyteɪndə*] end, extremity

*uitgaan* [*æytxan*] to go out

*uitgang* [*æytxaŋ*] outlet, exit

*uitgave* [*æytxavə*] edition

*uitgestrekt* [*æytxəstrekt*] large, extensive

*uiting* [*æytrɪŋ*] uttering, expression

*uitleggen* [*æytleŋən*] to explain

*uitmonden* [*æytmʊndən*] to flow into

*uitnoodigen* [*æytnodəŋən*] to invite

*uitsluitend* [*æytsləyɪtənt*] exclusively

*uitspanning* [*æytspanɪŋ*] recreation; baiting-place

*uitsteken* [*æytsstekən*] to surpass

*uitstrekken* [*æytsrekən*] to extend

*uitverkoren* [*æytforkorən*] elect

*uitvoerig* [*æytfurəx*] ample, detailed

*uitvoering* [*æytfurɪŋ*] performance, execution

*uitwerking* [*æytrɛrkɪŋ*] effect

*uitzicht* [*æytsɪxt*] view.

*Vaak* [*vak*] often

*vaandrager* [*vandrager*] ensign

*vaarwel* [*varvəl*] farewell

*vacantie* [*vakansi*] holidays



*valsch* [vals] false; — *doen* [dun] to play false  
*vandaag* [vandaɪ] to day  
*vangen* [vayŋ] to seize  
*vanzelf volgen* [vanzɛlf vɔlgən] to be a matter of course  
*vast* [vast] fast; *vaste slaap* [slap] sound sleep; *vaste tijd* [tɛit] regular hour  
*vasthouden* [vastɦoudən] to hold  
*vaststellen* [vaststɛlən] to fix  
*vat* [vat] grip, hold; *geen — hebben* [gɛn — ɦɛbən] to have no hold upon  
*veld* [vɛlt] field  
*ver* [vɛr] far  
*verachten* [vɛrɔxtən] to despise  
*veranderen* [vɛrandərən] to alter  
*verantwoordelijk* [vɛrantvordɛlək] responsible  
*verbazend vol* [vɛrbazənt vɔl] awfully full  
*verbeiden* [vɛrbeidən] to await  
*verbergen* [vɛrbɛrgən] to conceal  
*verbeteren* [vɛrbɛtərən] to improve, to correct  
*verbinden* [vɛrbɪndən] to unite  
*verbitteren* [vɛrbɪtərən] to exasperate  
*verbranden* [vɛrbrændən] to burn  
*verbrijzelen* [vɛrbrcɪzələn] to crush  
*verder komen* [vɛrdər komən] to advance  
*verdieneu* [vɛrdinən] to deserve, to earn  
*verdrieten* [vɛrdritən] to grieve  
*verdwijnen* [vɛrdvɛinən] to disappear  
*veredelen* [vɛrɛdɛlən] to ennoble  
*verenigen* [vɛrɛnɛɣən] to unite  
*vereischen* [vɛrɛisən] to require  
*verfraaien* [vɛrfrɛiən] to embellish  
*vergaderen* [vɛrgadərən] to meet  
*vergezellen* [vɛrgɛzələn] to accompany  
*vergezicht* [vɛrgɛzɪxt] prospect  
*vergift* [vɛrgɪft] poison  
*verhalen* [vɛrɦalən] to tell  
*verhelderen* [vɛrɦeldərən] to brighten

*verhinderd zijn* [vɛrɦɪndərt zɛin] to be prevented from  
*verjaarsgeschenk* [vɛrjarsgɛsɛŋk] birth-day present  
*verkiezen* [vɛrkɪzən] to prefer  
*verkoelen* [vɛrkulən] to refresh  
*verkorten* [vɛrkvɔrtən] to shorten  
*verlangen* [vɛrlayən] to desire  
*verlaten* [vɛrlatən] to leave  
*verlegen* [vɛrlɛgən] at a loss  
*verlichting* [vɛrlɪxtɪŋ] illumination  
*vermaken, zich —* [z. vɛrmakən] to amuse oneself  
*vermeesteren* [vɛrmɛstərən] to conquer  
*vermeien, zich —* [z. vɛrmɛiən] to enjoy oneself  
*vermetel* [vɛrmɛtɔl] audacious  
*vermoedelijk* [vɛrmudɛlək] probably  
*vermoeden* [vɛrmudən] to presume  
*vermoeiend* [vɛrmuɛiənt] tiresome  
*vermoorden* [vɛrmordən] to murder  
*vernederen* [vɛrnɛdərən] to humble  
*veroorloven* [vɛrorlɔvən] to permit  
*veroorzaken* [vɛrorzakən] to cause  
*veroveraar* [vɛrovɛrar] conqueror  
*verplaatsing* [vɛrplɑtsɪŋ] removal  
*verraden* [vɛradən] to betray  
*verrassen* [vɛrasən] to surprise  
*verroesten* [vɛrustən] to rust  
*verrukkelijk* [vɛrɛkɛlək] delightful  
*verschcheidenheid* [vɛrsɛidənɦɛit] variety  
*verschijnen, doen —* [dun vɛrsɛɛnɪn] to publish  
*verschijning* [vɛrsɛɛnɪŋ] appearance  
*verschillen* [vɛrsɛilən] to differ  
*versieren* [vɛrsirən] to adorn  
*verslag* [vɛrslɑx] account  
*vertaalbaar* [vɛrtalbar] translatable  
*vertalen* [vɛrtalən] to translate

vertellen [vɛrtɛlən] to tell  
 vertoeren [vɛrtuɐən] to tarry  
 vertoonen [vɛrtɔnən] to show  
 vertooner van de poppenkast [vɛr-  
 tonər van dɔ pʊpəkast] pup-  
 pet-show  
 vertooning [vɛrtɔniŋ] show, spec-  
 tacle  
 vertrek [vɛrtrek] departure; room  
 vertrouwen [vɛrtɹuɐən] to trust  
 vervaard maken [vɛrvart makən]  
 to frighten  
 vervaarlijk [vɛrvarlɔk] fright-  
 ful(ly)  
 vervelen [vɛrvɛlən] to annoy  
 vervloeken [vɛrvlukən] to curse  
 verzoegen [vɛrvuŋən] to apply to  
 vervolgen [vɛrvɔlŋən] to persecute  
 verwant [vɛrvant] related, akin  
 verward [vɛrvart] confused  
 verwezenlijken [vɛrvezənlikən]  
 to realize  
 verwisselen [vɛrvisələn] to change  
 verwoest [vɛrvuɐst] devastated  
 verzekeren [vɛrzekərən] to assure  
 verzoeken [vɛrzuken] to beg, to  
 request  
 verzuimen [vɛrzuɪmən] to ne-  
 glect  
 vest [vɛst] waist-coat  
 vieren [viriən] to give (a) loose to  
 vin [vin] fin  
 vinger [vɪŋɐr] finger  
 vingerhoed [vɪŋɐrhut] thimble  
 viooltje [violtjɛ] violet  
 vlak over [vlak ovər] right op-  
 posite  
 vledermuis [vledɛrmɔys] bat  
 vleesch [vles] flesh, meat  
 vleeschmarkt [vlesmarkt] meat-  
 market  
 vlerk [vlɛrk] wing  
 vlieden [vliɔdən] to flee  
 vlieg [vliɛ] fly  
 vliegen [vliŋ] to fly  
 vliegwiel [vliɛvɪl] fly-wheel  
 vlier [vliɪr] elder-tree  
 vlinder [vlinɔdər] butterfly  
 vloot [vlot] fleet  
 vlug [vlyx] quick(ly)  
 vluggerd [vlygɛrt] a smart (cle-  
 ver) boy

vlugheid [vlyxheit] quickness  
 voeding [vuɔdiŋ] food  
 voegen, zich — naar [z. vuŋən  
 nar] to accomodate oneself  
 to  
 voeren, oorlog — [vɔlɔx vuɐən]  
 to carry on a war  
 voerman [vuɐman] coach-man,  
 cart-driver  
 voet, te — gaan [tɔ vut xan]  
 to go on foot  
 voldoen aan [vɔldun an] to ans-  
 wer, to satisfy  
 voldoende [vɔldundɔ] sufficient  
 volk [vɔlk] people  
 volkslied [vɔlksliɪt] national  
 hymn  
 volstrekt [vɔlstrekt] absolute  
 volstrekt geen haast [vɔlstrekt xən  
 hast] no hurry at all  
 voltooid [vɔltoɪɪ] finished  
 voorbijgaan [vorbeɪŋan] to pass  
 by  
 voorbijdragen [vorbeɪdɹaŋən] to  
 carry past  
 voordeel [vɔrdɛl] profit  
 roordoan [vɔrdiən] to do first  
 roorgaan [vɔrgan] to precede  
 roorganger [vɔrgaŋɐr] leader  
 roorhanden [vorhandən] in store  
 roorkomen [vorkomən] to show  
 oneself  
 roormaals [vormals] formerly  
 roormiddag [vormidax] forenoon  
 roornemen [vornemən] purpose  
 rooroordeel [vorɔrdɛl] prejudice  
 rooroerbuigen [vorɔvɛrbɔɪŋən]  
 to bend down  
 roorraad [vorat] provision  
 roorraadkamer [voratkamər]  
 store-room  
 roorraadschuur [voratsxuɪr] store-  
 house  
 roor spellen [vorspɛlən] to pre-  
 sage  
 roorstel [vorstɛl] proposal  
 roorstellen [vorstɛlən] to propose  
 roortbrengen [vortbrɛŋən] to pro-  
 duce  
 roortbrengsel [vortbrɛŋsɛl] pro-  
 duction  
 roortgaan [vortxan] to continue

voorstappen [vɔrtstapən] to step  
 on  
 vooruitgaan [vorœytran] to go on  
 voorwaarde [vorvɑrdə] condition  
 voorwaarts [vorvɑrts] forward  
 voorzegging [vorzægɪŋ] prediction  
 voorzien [vorzɪn] to foresee  
 vorst [vɔrst] prince  
 vragen [vrɑgən] to ask  
 vreemd [vrɛmt] strange  
 vreemde [vrɛmdə] foreign coun-  
 try, abroad  
 vreemdeling [vrɛmdəlɪŋ] foreigner  
 vreemdsoortig [vrɛmtsortɔx]  
 strange  
 vriendelijk [vrɪndlək] kind  
 vrijheid [vrɛiɦɛit] liberty  
 vrijmoedig [vrɛimudəx] bold(ly)  
 vroeg [vrux] early  
 vrucht [vrɛxt] fruit  
 vuur [vyr] fire.

Waar naar toe [vɑr nar tu]  
 whither  
 waarachtig [vɑrɑxtɔx] certain  
 waarborg [vɑrbɔrx] warrant  
 waard zijn [vɑrt zɛɪn] to be of  
 value  
 waarde [vɑrdə] value  
 waarschijnlijk [vɑrsœɪnlək] pro-  
 bable  
 wagen [vɑgən] to venture  
 wagen [vɑgən] carriage  
 wagenas [vɑgɪnas] axle-tree  
 wakker worden [vɑkər vɔrdən]  
 to awake  
 wal, aan — stappen [ɑn vɑl  
 stapən] to land  
 wandelaar [vɑndlɑr] walker  
 wandelen [vɑndlən] to walk  
 wandeling [vɑndlɪŋ] walk  
 wanneer [vɑnɛr] when  
 want [vɑnt] for  
 want [vɑnt] rigging  
 warmte [vɑrmtə] warmth  
 water [vɑtər] water  
 waterkant [vɑtərkɑnt] water's  
 edge  
 waterschade [vɑtərsxədə] damage  
 by water  
 watersnood [vɑtərsnot] inunda-  
 tion

wederantwoord [vɛdərɑntvɔrt]  
 reply  
 wederom [vɛdərɔm] again  
 week [vɛk] week  
 weelde [vɛldə] luxury  
 weergaloos [vɛrgalos] matchless  
 weergeven [vɛrgɛvən] to render  
 weerzien [vɛrzɪn] to see again;  
 tot weerziens [tɔt vɛrzɪns] good-  
 bye  
 weg [vɛx] way: onder — [ɔndər  
 —] on the way  
 wegblijven [vɛxblɛɪvən] to stay  
 away  
 weglaten [vɛxlatən] to omit  
 wegwijzer [vɛxvɛɪzər] guide,  
 handbook  
 weldadig [vɛldədɔx] beneficent  
 wemelen [vɛmɛlən] to swarm  
 wemeling [vɛmɛlɪŋ] swarm  
 wenden, zich — [z. vɛndən] to  
 turn; to apply  
 wenschen [vɛnsən] to wish  
 wereld [vɛrɛlt] world  
 wereldhandel [vɛrɛlthɑndəl] uni-  
 versal commerce  
 wereldsch [vɛrɛlts] worldly  
 werf [vɛrf] wharf  
 werk [vɛrk] work  
 werkelijk [vɛrkelɪk] real(ly)  
 werkmán [vɛrkmɑn] workman  
 werktuigelijk [vɛrktœyɣəlɪk]  
 mechanical  
 werkvolk [vɛrkvɔlk] work-people  
 west [vɛst] West  
 westkust [vɛstkrɪst] western coast  
 westwaarts [vɛstvɑrts] westerly  
 wet [vɛt] law  
 weten [vɛtən] to know  
 wetenschappelijk [vɛtənsxɑpəlɪk]  
 scientific  
 wezen [vɛzən] nature  
 wezenlijk [vɛzənlɪk] real(ly)  
 wieg [vɛɪx] cradle  
 wiegen [vɛɪgən] to rock  
 wijkplaats [vɛɪkplɑts] refuge  
 wijs [vɛɪs] wise  
 wijsbegeerte [vɛɪsbəɣɛrtə] philo-  
 sophy  
 wijsgeer [vɛɪsɣɛr] philosopher  
 wijsheid [vɛɪsɦɛit] wisdom  
 wijwater [vɛɪvɑtər] holy water

*wijze* [vɪzə] wise man; manner  
*wil en dank, tegen* — — —

[teɣən vɪl ɛn dɑŋk] in spite of  
 one-self

*winkelier* [vɪŋkəlɪr] shop keeper

*winterjas* [vɪntərjas] over-coat

*woede* [vudə] rage, fury

*woelig* [vulɪx] restless

*wonderlijk* [vʊndərliːk] mar-  
 vellous(ly)

*wonen* [vʌnən] to live, to dwell

*woord* [vort] word

*woordafleiding* [vortafleɪdɪŋ] de-  
 rivation of words [nary.

*woordenboek* [vordbʊk] dictio-

*Zaak* [zak] affair, thing

*zand* [zant] sand

*zandig* [zandɪx] sandy

*zandwoestijn* [zandrʊstɛɪn] desert  
 of sand

*zedeloos* [zedeɫos] immoral(ly)

*zeden* [zedən] manners, morals

*zee, ter* — [tɛr zɛ] to sea

*zeelucht* [zɛlɤxt] sea-air

*zeeman* [zɛmən] seaman

*zeeroover* [zerovʊr] pirate

*zeeraarder* [zevɑrdər] navigator

*zeevaart* [zevart] navigation

*zeeweg* [zeɛɤx] maritime route

*zeeziekte* [zezɪktə] sea-sickness

*zelden* [zɛldən] rarely

*zelfstandig* [zɛlfstandɪx] inde-  
 pendent

*zelfverloochening* [zɛlfvərloːxənɪŋ]  
 self-denial

*zet* [zɛt] move

*zetten op* [zɛtən ʊp] to put on

*ziek* [zɪk] ill, diseased

*ziekte* [zɪktə] illness

*zijd, wijd en* — [vɛɪt ɛn zɛɪt] far  
 and wide

*zijde* [zɛɪdə] silk

*zin* [zɪn] sentence

*zin hebben in iets* [zɪn hɛbən ɪn  
 ɪts] to have a fancy for

*zindelijk* [zɪndəlɪk] clean(ly)

*zitten* [zɪtən] to sit

*zoel* [zul] sultry

*zoet* [zut] sweet

*zoetwaterkanaal* [zutrətərkanal]  
 fresh-water canal

*zolder* [zɔldər] garret

*zonder* [zʊndər] without

*zoodanig* [zodanɪx] so, so much

*zoodra* [zodra] as soon as

*zooveel* [zoveɪ] as much as

*zorg* [zɔrx] care

*zorgen voor* [zɔrgən vor] to take  
 care of

*zwaar* [zvar] heavy

*zwaard* [zvart] sword

*zwaardrechter* [zvɑrdɤxtər] gla-  
 diator

*zweet* [zɛt] sweat

*zwier* [zvɪr] air, manner

*zuol* [zɹul] sultry.

## 2. English-Dutch.

This Vocabulary contains the most difficult words of the Exercises of the Second Part (Nr. 56—140). Irregular verbs, pronouns, numerals, adverbs, conjunctions and prepositions are not mentioned, except when they are used in a special meaning.

- Ability *bekwaamheid* [bəkram-heit]  
 able *bekwaam*, to be able *in staat zijn* [in stat zɛin]  
 aboard *aan boord* [an bort]  
 abolish (to) *afschaffen* [afsɔrafən]  
 abominable *afschuwelijk* [af-sɔy:ɔlək]  
 abroad *in den vreemde*, *buitenlands* [in den vremdə, bœyten-lants]  
 absence *afwezigheid* [afwezɪk-heit]  
 absolute *volstrekt*, *absoluut* [vɔl-strɛkt, apsɔlyt]  
 abstinence *onthouding* [onthou-dɪŋ]  
 absurd *dwaas*, *ongerijmd* [dvas, ŋgərsɛɪnt]  
 abundance *overvloed* [ovərɔvlu:t]  
 abuse *misbruik* [mɪsbry:k]  
 accident *ongeval*, *toeval* [ɪŋgəral, tural]  
 accommodation *verdrag*, *schikking* [vərdrax, sɛkɪŋ]  
 acquaintance *bekendheid*, *kennis* [bəkəntheit, kənɪs]  
 activity *werkzaamheid* [vɛrksam-heit]  
 actor *tooneelspeler* [tonɛlspɛlər]  
 acute *scherp* [sɛrɛp]  
 add (to) *bijvoegen* [bɛivɔgən]  
 address *adres* [adɛs]  
 admirable *beonderenswaardig* [bɔvɔndərɔnsvɑrdɪg]  
 admiral *admiraal* [atmɪral]  
 Adolph *Adolf* [adɔlf]  
 advance (to) *berorderen* [bɔvɔr-dərən]  
 advantageous *roordeelig* [vɔr-dɛləx]  
 adventure *voorraal*, *avontuur* [vɔr-val, avɔntyʁ]  
 advertisement *advertentie*, *bericht* [atvɛrtɛnsi, bɛrɪxt]  
 advice *adries*, *bericht*, *raad* [at-vis, bɛrɪxt, rat]  
 affair *zaak* [zak]  
 affection *toegenegenheid* [tu:gə-nɛgənheit]  
 afford (to) *leveren*, *verschaffen* [lɛvərən, vɛrsɔrafən]  
 afraid *bang* [baŋ]  
 afternoon (na) *middag* [namɪdax]  
 age *leeftijd* [lɛftɛɪt], to be of age *meerderjarig zijn* [mɛrdr-jarɪx zɛin], old age *vergetordeerde leeftijd* [vɛrgəvɔrdərdɛ lɛftɛɪt]  
 agree (to) with one *met iemand overeenstemmen* [mɛt iɛmant ovərɛn-stɛmən]  
 aid *hulp*, to lend aid *hulp verleen* [hɪlp vɛrlɛnən]  
 aim *doel*, *doelwit* [dɔlvɪt]  
 aim (to) at *zoeken*, *trachten naar* [zɔkən, traxtən nar]  
 air *lucht* [lɪxt]  
 alive *levend* [lɛvənt]  
 allow (to) *toestaan* [tɔstən]  
 allowance *verlof*, *vergunning* [vɛrlɔf, vɛrgɪnɪŋ]  
 allude (to) *doelen*, *zinspelen* [dɔlən, zɪnspɛlən]  
 ambassador *gezant* [gɛzant]  
 ambitious *eerzuchtig* [ɛrɛzɛtɪx]  
 amount *bedrag* [bɛdrax]  
 amount (to) *bedragen*, *beloopen* [bɛdrəgən, bɛlopən]  
 amusement *vermaak* [vɛrmak]  
 ancients *oude rollen* [ɔudə rɔl-kən]

animal *dier* [dir]  
 annexed (*hier*) *bijgeroegd, ingesloten* [beigeroegt, ingesloten]  
 answer *antwoord* [antvort]  
 anxiety *angst, begeerte* [angst, begert]  
 apart from *afgezien van* [af.ræzin van]  
 apoplexy *beroerte* [barurt]  
 appear (to) *blijken* [bleikən]  
 appearance *schijn* [sxein]  
 appetite *eetlust* [etlɪst], to give an appetite *den eetlust opwekken* [dən etlɪst ɔp.rækən]  
 apply (to) *oneself zich toeleggen* [zɪx toeləgən]  
 appoint (to) *bepalen, benoemen* [bəpalən, bənumən]  
 appreciate (to) *naar waarde schatten* [nar vards sɔtən]  
 apprentice *leerjongen* [lerjɔŋən]  
 apprenticeship *leertijd* [lertɛit], to complete one's time of apprenticeship *zijnen leertijd uildienen* [zeinən lertɛit ɔytdinən]  
 archduchess *aartshertogin* [arts.hertogin]  
 architecture *bouwkunst* [bɔw.krɪst]  
 Ardennes *Ardennen* [ardenən]  
 arrangement *schikking, overeenkomst* [sɔkɪŋ, ɔvərɛnkɔmst]  
 artist *kunstenaar* [krɪstənar]  
 ascent *opgang* [ɔp.gang]  
 ascribe (to) *toeschrijven* [tus.xrɛi.vən]  
 ashore *aan land (wal)* [an.lant (val)]  
 Asia *Azië* [aziə]  
 ask (to) *vragen* [vrægən]  
 assemble (to) *vergaderen* [vər.gadərən]  
 assertion *beuering* [bəvərɪŋ]  
 assets *nagelaten goederen* [nagəlatən gudərən]  
 assistant *helper* [hɛlpər]  
 assorted *gesorteerd* [gɔsɔrtɛrt]  
 assume (to) *aannemen, overnemen* [anəmən, ɔvərɛnəmən]  
 assurance *verzekering* [vər.zəkərɪŋ]

Athenian *Atheensch* [atens]  
 Atlantic *Atlantisch* [atlantis]  
 attack *aanval* [anval]  
 attempt (to) *beproeven, pogen* [bəpru:vən, pɔgən]  
 attend (to) *bijzonen* [bəvɔnən]  
 auction *openbare verkooping* [ɔpənbarə vɛrkɔpiŋ]  
 Austria *Oostenrijk* [ɔstən.rɛik]  
 Austrian *Oostenrijksch* [ɔstən.rɛiks]  
 author *schrijver* [sxrɛivər]  
 avow (to) *bekennen* [bəkənən].

Bait *aas, lokas* [as, lɔkas]  
 bake (to) *bakken* [bakən]  
 balance (to) *in evenwicht houden* [in ɛvənɪkɪt hɔudən]  
 bale *baal* [bal]  
 bankrupt *bankroet* [bankrut], to become a bankrupt *failliet gaan* [faljit gan]  
 banquet *banket, feestmaal* [ban.ket.fɛstmal]  
 bard *barde, zanger* [bards, zəŋər]  
 battle *slag, veldslag* [slax, vɛlt.slax]  
 beach *strand, wal* [strɛnt, val]  
 bear *beer* [ber]  
 bear (to) *verdragen* [vɛdrægən]  
 bearer of the present *brenger dezes* [brɛŋər dɛzəs]  
 beast *beest, wild dier* [best, vɪld dir]  
 beautiful *prachtig* [praxtɔx]  
 beauty *schoonheid* [sɔnɦɛit]  
 beer *bier* [bir]  
 beggar *bedelaar* [bedɛlar]  
 Belgium *België* [bɛlɔiə]  
 belief *geloof* [glɔɔf]  
 bell *bel* [bɛl]  
 bellicose *oorlogszuchtig* [ɔrlogzɪr.tɔx]  
 belong (to) *behooren* [bəhɔrən]  
 bend *buigen, spannen* [bəŋgən, spanən]  
 benefactor *weldoener* [vɛldunər]  
 benefit (to) *weldoen* [vɛldun]  
 bequeath (to) *bij erfmaking nalaten, vermaken* [bɛi ɛrfmakɪŋ nalatən, vɛrmakən]  
 bereave (to) *berooven* [bəro:vən]

berry *bes*, *bezie* [*bes*, *bezi*]  
 besiege (to) *belegeren* [*bəlegərən*]  
 bestow (to) *schenken* [*ʃrɛnkən*]  
 betray (to) *verraden* [*vərɑdən*]  
 bewildered *verbaasd*, *verstomd*  
     [*vərbaʃt*, *vərstɔmt*]  
 bid, to bid good afternoon  
     *goeden middag wenschen* [*ɡuðən*  
     *mɪdɑr ʁɛnsən*]  
 bill *snavel*; wissel [*snəvəl*; *vɪsəl*];  
 honoured bill *gehonoreerde*  
     *wissel* [*ɡəhonorɛrdə vɪsəl*]  
 bindings, nickelled bindings [*vər*-  
     *nikkeldə beslagen* [*vərnikəldə*  
     *bɛsləɡən*]  
 bird of prey *roofvogel* [*roʊfvogəl*]  
 birth *geboorte* [*ɡəbɔrtə*]  
 bishop *bisschop* [*bɪʃəp*]  
 black *zwart* [*zʁɑrt*]  
 blame (to) *laken*, *afkeuren* [*lakən*,  
     *ɑfkrən*]  
 blazing *lichtend*, *vlammend* [*lɪc*-  
     *tənt*, *vlɑmənt*]  
 blessing *zegen* [*zɛɡən*] [*ʁlɑː*]  
 blow *slag*, *windvlaag* [*slɑː*, *vɪnd*-  
     *blɔw* (to) *waaien* [*vɑɪn*]  
 blue *blauw* [*blɔw*]  
 blunder *fout* [*fɔʊt*]  
 boar *beer* [*bɛr*]  
 board *plank*, *boord* [*plɑŋk*, *boort*]  
 boat *boot* [*bɔt*]  
 body *lichaam* [*lɪtʃɑm*], body of  
     soldiers *troep soldaten* [*trɔp*  
     *sɔldɑtən*]  
 boil (to) *koken* [*kɔkən*]  
 boisterous *heftig*, *onstuimig* [*hɛf*-  
     *tɑː*, *ɔnstɔɪmɪg*]  
 boldly *stoutmoedig* [*stɔʊtmɔdɪg*]  
 boldness *stoutmoedigheid* [*stɔʊt*-  
     *mɔdɪgɦeɪt*]  
 book-seller *boekverkooper* [*buk*-  
     *vərkoʊpər*]  
 bottom *bodem* [*bɔdəm*]  
 bound, to be bound *gedwongen*  
     *zijn*, *moeten* [*ɡɛdʁɔŋɡən zɛɪn*,  
     *mɔtən*]  
 how *hoog* [*boː*]  
 branch *tak* [*tak*], branch of  
     study *studierak* [*stydirak*]  
 brave *dapper* [*dɑpər*]  
 break (to) out *uitbreken* [*œyt*-  
     *brɛkən*]

breakfast *ontbijt* [*ɔntɦeɪt*]  
 breath *adem* [*ɑdəm*]  
 breeze *bries*, *koelte* [*brɪs*, *kultə*]  
 bright *helder* [*ɦeldər*]  
 bring (to) up *ophalen* [*ɔphalən*]  
 Briton *Brit* [*brɪt*]  
 broad *breed* [*ɦrɛd*]  
 building *gebouw*, het *bouwen*  
     [*ɡəbɔw*, het *bɔurn*]  
 bull *bul*, *stier* [*bʊl*, *stɪr*]  
 Burgundy *Bourgondie* [*burgɔn*-  
     *dɪ*]  
 burnt down *afgebrand* [*ɑfrə*-  
     *brɑnt*]  
 business *bezigheid* [*bɛzɪɦeɪt*],  
 business matters *zaken*, *hand*-  
     *delzaken* [*zakən*, *ɦɑndəls*-  
     *zakən*]  
 busy  *bezig*, *druk* [*bɛzɪː*, *drɪk*]  
 butcher *slager* [*slɑɡər*]  
 buyer *koop* [*kɔpər*]  
 buzzard *harik*, *ralk* [*ɦərɪk*, *ralk*].  
 Cab (huur)rijtuig [*ɦyːrɪtɔɪg*]  
 cab-man *koetsier* [*kutsɪr*]  
 calamity *ellende*, *ramp* [*ɛləndə*,  
     *rɑmp*]  
 calling *beroep* [*bɔrɔp*]  
 calumny *laster*, *lastering* [*lastər*,  
     *lastərɪŋ*]  
 canoe *kano*, *schuitje* [*kano*,  
     *ʃrɛɪtjə*]  
 cap *muts*, *pét*, *kap* [*mɪts*, *pɛt*,  
     *kap*]  
 capital *hoofdstad* [*ɦɔftstɑt*]  
 captain *kapitein* [*kapɪtɛɪn*]  
 care *hoede* [*ɦudə*], to take care  
     of *passen op* [*pasən ɔp*], to  
     leave to the care of *ter be*-  
     *waring geven aan* [*tɛr bɔrɑrɪ*  
     *ɡevən ɑn*]  
 career *loopbaan* [*loʊpbaːn*], to run  
     a career *eene loopbaan beginnen*  
     [*ɛnə loʊpbaːn ɛɡɪnɔn*]  
 careful(ly) *zorgvuldig* [*zɔrgvʊl*-  
     *dər*]  
 carpenter *timmerman* [*tɪmərmaːn*]  
 carpet *tapijt* [*tɑpɛɪt*]  
 cart *kar*, *wagen* [*kar*, *vɑɡən*]  
 Carthaginians *bewoners van*  
     *Carthago* [*bɔvɔnərs vɑn kɑr*-  
     *tɑɡo*]

case *geval* [gəvəl]  
 cash *contante* (dadelijke) *betaling*  
 [kɒntəntə (dədələkə) bə'tælɪŋ]  
 castles in the air *luchtkasteelen*  
 [lɪxtkasteələn]  
 catchpoll *diecenvanger* [dɪvən-  
 vɑŋər]  
 catholic *katholiek* [kə'tolɪk]  
 cause *oorzaak, rede* [ɔːzək, redə]  
 celebrated *beroemd* [bə'rʊmt]  
 centre *midden, middelpunt*  
 [mɪdən, mɪdəlpʊnt]  
 century *eeuw* [eɪ]  
 ceremonial *plechtig* [plɛtʃər]  
 certificate *getuigschrift* [gɛtʊɪgs-  
 ʃrɪft]  
 chain *keten, ketting* [kɛtən, kɛtɪŋ]  
 chair *stoel, zetel* [stul, zɛtəl], chair  
 of state *regeringszetel* [rɛ-  
 gərɪŋsɛtəl]  
 chance *kans* [kəns], ill chances  
*slechte kansen* [slɛtə kənsən]  
 chapel *kapel* [kəpəl]  
 characterize (to) *karakteriseeren*  
 [kə'kətrɪzərən]  
 charge *last* [lɑst], to take charge  
 of *zich belasten met* [zɪk bə-  
 lɑstən mɛt]  
 Charles *Karel* [kə'ɹəl]  
 chase *jacht* [ʃɑt]  
 cheat (to) *bedriegen* [bɛdriːɡən]  
 cheek *wang* [vɑŋ]  
 cheer (to) *toejuichen* [tʊdʒeɪən]  
 chemist *scheikundige* [ʃɛkɪkən-  
 dʒə], *drogist* [drɒɡɪst]  
 cherish (to) *koesteren, verplegen*  
 [kʊstərən, vɜːplɛɡən]  
 chicken *kuiken* [kœɪkən]  
 chief *voornaamste* [vɔːnəməstə]  
 childhood *kindsheid* [kɪntsheɪt]  
 chilly *kil* [kɪl]  
 choice *keus* [kʊs], to make a  
 choice *eene keuze doen* [eɪnə  
 kʊzə duːn]  
 choose (to) *kiezen* [kɪzən]  
 chop (to) *at bekappen* [bə-  
 kəpən]  
 Christmas *Kerstmis* [kɛrstmɪs],  
 Merry Christmas *aangename*  
*Kerstmis* [əŋənəmə kɛrstmɪs]  
 chronicle *kroniek* [kronɪk]  
 church *kerk* [kɜːk]

cigar *sigaar* [sɪgər], cigar manu-  
 factory *sigarenfabriek* [sɪgərən-  
 fəbrɪk]  
 circular *circulaire* [sɪrkylərə]  
 circumstance *omstandigheid* [ɒm-  
 stændɪkəheɪt]  
 city *stad* [stat]  
 city-gate *stadspoort* [stətspɔːrt]  
 claim *eisch* [eɪs]  
 clap (to) *klappen* [kləpən]  
 claw (of a bird) *klaauw* [klaʊ]  
 clay *klei, leem* [kleɪ, lem]  
 clean *zuiver* [zʊɪvər]  
 clear *helder* [heldər]  
 clergyman *geestelijke* [ɡestələkə]  
 clever *handig* [hændɪk]  
 climate *klimaat* [klaɪmət]  
 close to *dicht bij* [daɪt biː]  
 closely, more closely *meer van*  
*nabij* [mɛər vən nəbeɪ]  
 clothing *kleding* [kleɪdɪŋ]  
 cloud *wolk* [vʊlk]  
 cloudless *wolkeloos* [vʊlkələs]  
 coat *rok* [rɒk], to cut one's coat  
 according to one's cloth *de*  
*tering naar de nering zetten*  
 [də tɛrɪŋ nəər də nɛrɪŋ zɛtən]  
 coating *stof, manufacturen* [stɒf,  
 mənɪfəktʃərən]  
 cobbler *schoenlapper* [skʊn-  
 ləpər]  
 cock *haan* [hæn]  
 coffee *koffie* [kɒfi], coffees *koffie-*  
*soorten* [kɒfɪsɔːrtən]  
 coffee-pot *koffiekan* [kɒfɪkən]  
 cogency *kracht, macht* [kraɪt,  
 maɪt]  
 coin *munt* [maɪnt]  
 cold *koud(e)* [kaʊd(ə)]  
 collect (to) (*zich*) *verzamelen*  
 [(zɪk) vɜːzəmələn]  
 collection *verzameling* [vɜːzəmə-  
 lɪŋ]  
 college-friend *studierriend* [stj-  
 dɪvɪrɪnt]  
 colonist *kolonist* [kə'lɒnɪst]  
 colony *kolonie* [kə'lɒni]  
 colour *kleur* [klaʊər]  
 come (to) off *plaats hebben* [pləts  
 hebən]  
 commanding officer *bevelvoerend*  
*officier* [bəvɛlvɔːrənt əfɪsɪər]



- commander-in-chief opperbevelhebber [*ʊpəbəvɛllhɛbər*]  
 commend me to K. groot K. van mij [*grut k. van mei*]  
 committed, to be aanbecolen zijn [*anbɛvɔlən zɛin*]  
 common gemeen, gewoon [*gəmen, gəvɔn*]  
 communion gemeenschap [*gəmen-schap*], to hold communion with *gemeenschap onderhouden met* [— *ʊndərɦəʊdən mɛt*]  
 companion makker, metgezel [*makər, mɛtɹɔzəl*]  
 compare (to) vergelijken [*vər-gəleikən*]  
 compel (to) dwingen [*driŋŋən*]  
 competent beroegd [*bəvɔrɛt*]  
 competition concurrentie [*kɛn-kyrɛnsi*]  
 competitor mededinger [*mɛd-ɔ-ɔŋŋər*]  
 complaint klacht [*klart*]  
 complete(ly) volledig [*vɔlɛdɔr*]  
 complication verwikkeling [*vər-ɛkɔlɪŋ*]  
 compliment groot [*grut*]  
 composedly kalm(pjes) [*kalm-(p)ɛs*]  
 composition samenstelling [*sa-mən-stɛlɪŋ*]  
 comprehend (to) omvatten [*ʊm-vatən*]  
 comprise (to) bevatten, inhouden [*bəvatən, ɪnhəʊdən*]  
 conceal (to) verbergen [*vərbergən*]  
 concert-hall concertgebouw [*kɔn-sɛrt-səbɔu*]  
 concur (to) with overeenkomen met [*ʊvərɛnkɔmən mɛt*]  
 condescend (to) inwilligen [*ɪn-vɪlɔgən*]  
 condition toestand; voorwaarde [*tʊstənt; vɔrvardə*]  
 conduct (to) oneself zich gedragen [*z. gɛdrəgən*]  
 confer (to) opdragen [*ʊpdrəgən*]  
 confess bekennen [*bəkənən*]  
 confidence vertrouwen [*vərtrəʊ-vən*]  
 confine (to) oneself zich beperken [*z. bɛpɛrkən*]  
 confinement opsluiting [*ʊpslœɪ-ɪŋ*], close confinement strenge opsluiting [*strɛŋə* —]  
 connection kennis [*kɛnis*]  
 connoisseur kenner [*kənər*]  
 considerably aanzienlijk [*anzin-lək*]  
 consist (to) of bestaan uit [*bə-stən ɔɪt*]  
 consort makker, metgezel [*makər, mɛtɹɔzəl*]  
 conspirator samenweerder [*sa-mən-zvɛrdər*]  
 construct (to) bouwen, samenstellen [*bəʊvən, sənəmstɛlən*]  
 continued vervolg [*vərɔvɔk*]  
 convenience gemak [*gɛmak*]  
 convince (to) overtuigen [*ʊvər-tœɪgən*]  
 copper koperen [*kɔpərən*]  
 coral-rock koraalrots [*kɔralɔrts*]  
 corn koren, graan [*kɔrən, grən*]  
 corner hoek [*ɦuk*]  
 correspondence briefwisseling [*brɪfɪsɔlɪŋ*]  
 corresponding clerk correspon-dent [*kɔrɔspɔndənt*]  
 cottage hut [*ɦʊt*]  
 count graaf; rekening [*graf; rɛkənɪŋ*]  
 country land [*lant*], all over the country door het geheele land [*dɔr ɦet ɡəɦɛls* —]  
 courageously dapper [*dapər*]  
 court-martial krijgsraad [*kreɪts-rat*] [*plats*]  
 court-yard binnenplaats [*bɪnən-cousɪn neef*] [*nef*] [*bant*]  
 cover omslag, band [*ʊmslɑr*], cover (to) bedekken [*bɛdɛkən*]  
 cowardly lafhartig [*lafɦartɔk*]  
 creature schepsel [*sɛpsəl*]  
 credit (to) one iemand crediteeren [*ɪmɑnt kredɪtərən*]  
 creditor crediteur [*kredɪtɔr*]  
 crew scheepsvolk [*sɛpsvɔlk*]  
 crop (to) out uitteken boven [*œytsɛkən bɔvən*]  
 cross (to) oversteken [*ʊvərstɛkən*]  
 crowd menigte [*mɛnɪɦtə*]  
 crowded geruld, volgepropt [*gɔ-vrɛlt, vɔlgɔpprɔpt*]

crown *kroon* [*kron*]  
 crusade *kruistocht* [*krøystɔt*]  
 cunning *listig* [*listər*]  
 cup *beker, kop* [*bekər, kɔp*]  
 custom *gewoonte; klandisie* [*gə-  
vontə; klandizi*]  
 customer *klant* [*klant*].

**Daily News** *Nieuws van den Dag*  
*[niʊs van den dɑː]*

damage *schade, nadeel* [*sɔːdə,  
nadel*]

Danes *Denen* [*denən*]

dangerous *gevaarlijk* [*gəvɑːrlɪk*]

dart (to) away *wegwerpen, weg-  
vliegen* [*vɛːvɛrɪpən, vɛːvliɪən*]

dash (to) open *opendoelen* [*ɔpən-  
stɔtən*]

dear *lief, waard* [*lif, vɑːt*]

death *dood* [*dot*]

debate *debat* [*debat*]

debt *schuld* [*sɜːrlt*], to run into  
 debt *schulden maken* [*sɜːrl-  
dən məkən*]

deceased *overleden(e)* [*ɔvər-  
ledən(j)*]

deceive (to) *bedriegen* [*bədriɪən*]

deceiver *bedrieger* [*bədriɪər*]

declare (to) *verklaren* [*vɛːklɑːrən*]

decline (to) *afslaan, afwijken*  
*[afslɑːn, afvɛikən]*

decorated *versierd* [*vɛːsɪrt*]

deduct (to) *afrekken, korten* [*af-  
trɛkən, kɜːtən*]

deem *oordeel* [*ordel*]

deer *hart* [*hɛrt*]

defend (to) *verdedigen* [*vɛːdɛ-  
dəɪən*]

defence *verdediging* [*vɛːdɛdəɪɪŋ*]

defy (to) *uitdagen* [*uɛytdɑːɪən*]

degree *graad* [*grat*], by degrees  
*langzamerhand* [*lɑŋksɑːmər-  
hɑːnt*]

delicacy *kieschheid; lekkernij*  
*[kɪʃhɛit; lɛkərniː]*

delight *genot, bekoorlijkheid* [*gə-  
nɔt, bɛkɔrlɪkɦɛit*]

delightful *bekoorlijk* [*bɛkɔrlɪk*]

delivery *aflevering* [*aflevərɪŋ*]

delude (to) *misleiden* [*mɪslɛidən*]

deny (to) *loochenen* [*lɔːxənən*]

depart (to) *vertrekken* [*vɛːtrɛkən*]

depend (to) on *afhangen van*  
*[afhɑŋən van]*

dependent *afhankelijk* [*afhɑŋkə-  
lɪk*]

depressed *verdrukt, gedrukt* [*vɛː-  
drɪkt, gɛdrɪkt*]

description *beschrijving* [*bəsɛrɪ-  
vɪŋ*]

deserter *deserteur* [*desertɔr*]

deserve (to) *verdienen* [*vɛːdɪnən*]

disinterested *belangeloos* [*bə-  
lɑːpəlɔs*]

desire *verlangen* [*vɛːrlɑːpən*]

despatch *depeche, haast* [*depeʃə,  
hɑːst*]

desperate *wanhopig* [*vɑːnhɔpɪk*]

despotic *despotiek, willekeurig*  
*[despɔtɪk, vɪlɛkɔrɪɪk]*

destitute of *ontbloot van* [*ʊnt-  
blɔt van*]

detail *bijzonderheid* [*bɪzəndər-  
ɦɛit*]

determine (to) *bepalen* [*bɛːpələn*]

devil *duivel* [*dævɪl*]

devote (to) *(toe)wijden* [*turɛidən*]

dialogue *gesprek, samenspraak*  
*[gɛsprɛk, sɑːmsprɑːk]*

diatribe *hekelschrift, schimprede*  
*[hekɛlsɪrɪft, sɪmpredɪ]*

difficult *moeilijk* [*mɪdɪlɪk*]

dinner *middageten* [*mɪdʒetən*],  
 to have dinner with one *met  
 iemand dineeren* [*met imɑːnt  
 dɪnɛrən*]

direct (to) *besturen* [*bɛːstɪrən*]

disagreeable *opaaengenaam* [*ʊn-  
ɑŋɡəːnɑːm*]

disappear (to) *verdwijnen* [*vɛːr-  
drɛɪnən*]

discuss (to) *bespreken* [*bɛːsprɛkən*]

disgraceful *schandelijk* [*sɜːrɑːndə-  
lɪk*]

disguise *vermomming* [*vɛːrmʊ-  
mɪŋ*]

dispatch (to) *met spoed afzenden*  
*[met spɔt afzɛndən]*

disposal *schikking* [*sɪkɪŋ*]

dispose (to) of *beschikken over*  
*[bɛːsrɪkən ɔvər]*

distance *afstand* [*afstɑːnt*]

do *doen* [*dun*], it will do for  
*het kan dienen or is geschikt*

voor [het kan dinen, is gescikt  
vor]  
dog hond [hvent]  
dome dom(kerk) [dvm(kerk)]  
domiciliate (to) vast verblijf kie-  
zen [vast vørbleif kizən]  
door deur [dor], out of doors  
buiten 's huis [bəytən səys]  
dotted bezaaid, bedekt [bəzait,  
bedekt]  
doubtlessly ongetwijfeld [vng-  
tveifəlt]  
draft wissel [visəl]  
drag (to) dreggen, trekken [dreyən,  
trekən]  
draw (to) trekken [trekən]  
dreaded gevreesd [gvrrest]  
dreadful vreeselijk [vreeslək]  
dream droom [drom]  
drive rijplaats [reiplats]  
ducking dompeling, duikeling  
[dɔmpəliŋ, dəykəliŋ]  
due plicht [plɪt], to give every  
one his due ieder het zijne  
geven [idər het zine gvrən]  
duke hertog [hertor]  
dunghill mesthoop [mesthop]  
duplicate afschrift, duplicaat  
[afsxrɪft, dypplɪkət]  
Dutch Hollandsch, Nederlandsch  
[hɔlənts, nedərɔlənts]  
Dutchmen Hollanders, Neder-  
landers [hɔləndərs, nedər-  
ləndərs]  
duty plicht [plɪt]  
dyke dijk, dam [diik, dam].

Eager begeerig, gretig [bəgerəx,  
gretəx]  
eagle arend [arənt]  
Earl graaf [graf]  
early vroeg [vrur]  
earnestly ernstig [ernstər]  
earthly aardisch [arts]  
easy gemakkelijk [gəmakələk]  
east oost(en) [ost(ən)]  
edge rand [rant]  
Edward the Confessor Eduard  
de Belijder [edjart də bələidər]  
effect gevolg, uitwerking [gvrɔlə,  
əytrerkɪŋ]  
Egypt Egypte [egɪptə]

elapse (to) verlopen [vərlopan]  
element element, grondbeginsel  
[ələmənt, grɔndbəɡɪnsəl]  
embark (to) inschepen [ɪnsxepən]  
embrace (to) aangrijpen, om-  
helzen [angrɪpən, ɔmhəlzən]  
emigrant landverhuizer [lant-  
vərhwəzər]  
emperor keizer [keizər]  
empire rijk, keizerrijk [reik,  
keizərəik]  
employment betrekking [betrəkɪŋ]  
enable (to) in staat stellen [ɪn  
stat stələn]  
end doel, einde [dal, eində]  
endeavour (to) beproeven, trachten  
[bəprəvən, traktən]  
enemy vijand [vɛjənt]  
engage (to) onself zich ver-  
binden [z. vərbindən]  
engine stoomwerktuig, machine  
[stomwɛrktuɪg, mʌʃɪnə]  
England Engeland [ɛŋɡələnt]  
English Engelsch [ɛŋɡəls] [sən]  
Englishmen Engelschen [ɛŋɡəl-  
ənjoɪ (to) verheugen, vermaken  
[vərhwəgən, vərma:kən]  
enlarge (to) vergrooten, uitbreiden  
[vərgrotən, ɔytbreidən]  
enlist (to) werven [vɛrvən]  
enter (to) into trade in den handel  
gaan [ɪn den handəl gan]  
entertain (to) onthalen, onder-  
houden [ɔnthələn, ɔndərhwədn]  
entirely gansch, geheel en al  
[gəns, gəhel ən əl]  
entrance ingang [ɪŋɡəŋ]  
era jaartelling [jarteliŋ]  
erect (to) oprichten [ɔprɪxtən]  
err (to) zich vergissen, dwalen  
[z. vɔrɪsən, dvalən]  
escape (to) vluchten, ontkomen or  
ontsnappen aan [vlɪxtən, ɔnt-  
kɔməŋ, ɔntsnəpən ən]  
especially bijzonder [bɪzɔndər]  
essay proef, poging; geschrift  
[pruf, pɔɡɪŋ; gəsxrɪft]  
establish (to) vestigen [vɛstəgən]  
estate staat; goed [stat; gut]  
esteem achting [axtɪŋ], particu-  
lar esteem bijzondere hoog-  
achting [bɪzɔndərə ho:axtɪŋ]

Europe *Europa* [oropa]  
 evening *avond* [avənt]  
 event *gebeurtenis* [gəbɔrtənɪs]  
 eventually *gebeurlijk* [gəbɔrlək]  
 everlasting *eeuwigdurend* [eʊərə-dyrənt]  
 evidence *bewijs* [bɔrɛɪs]  
 evil *kwaad, slecht* [krat, slɛxt]  
 evince (to) *bewijzen* [bɔrɛɪzən]  
 exalted *verheeren, grootsch* [vər-herən, grɔts]  
 example *voorbeeld* [vɔrbɛlt]  
 exchange-list *beurslijst* [bɔrsleɪst]  
 exert (to) *inspannen* [ɪnsɔpən]  
 excite (to) *aansporen, opwekken* [ɑnsɔrən, ɔprekən]  
 exclaim (to) *uitroepen* [æɪtrəpən]  
 exempt (to) *from ontslaan van* [vɔntslan vən]  
 exertion *inspanning* [ɪnsɔpənɪŋ]  
 exhausted *uitgeput* [ʊɪtɔɪpt]  
 exit *af* [af]  
 expand (to) *uitzetten* [æɪtʒetən]  
 expect (to) *verwachten* [vər-ɔktən]  
 expectation *verwachting* [vər-ɔktɪŋ]  
 expel (to) *verbanen* [vərbanən]  
 experience *onderrinding* [ʊndər-rɪndɪŋ]  
 experiment *proef* [pruf]  
 expert *deskundige* [dɛskʊndɪgə]  
 expiration *verluidtijd, afloop* [vər-valteɪt, ɑflɔp]  
 exposed to *blootgesteld aan* [blɔt-gəstelt ɑn]  
 expunge (to) *uitwischen* [æɪt-rɪsən]  
 extant *aanwezig, voorhanden* [ɑnweɪzɪg, vɔrɦɑndən]  
 extensive *uitlegstrekt* [æɪtɔɪstrɛkt]  
 exterminate (to) *verdelgen* [vər-dɛlgən]  
 extraordinary *buitengewoon* [bɔɪ-tɔngəwɔn]  
 eye *oog* [ɔɔ]  
 eye-ball *oogappel* [ɔɔɔpəl].

**Fabric** *weefsel, maaksel* [wefsəl, maksəl]  
 face *gezicht* [gɔzɪt]  
 fact *feit* [feɪt]

factory business *fabriekzaak* [fabrɪksak]  
 fail (to) *mislukken* [mɪslʊkən]  
 fair (subst.) *markt* [markt]  
 fair (price) *laag, redelijk* [laɪ, rɛdɪlək]  
 famous *beroemd* [bɔrʊmt]  
 fancy. to have a fancy *lust hebben* [lʊst hɛbən]  
 farewell, to bid farewell *af-scheid nemen* [ɑfsɛɪt nɛmən]  
 fasten (to) *castmaken, hechten* [kɑstməkən, hɛtən]  
 fatal *noodlottig* [noʊtlɔtɪg]  
 fate, lot *noodlot* [noʊtlɔt]  
 fatigue *vermoeidheid, vermoeienis* [vɔrmuθɪt, vɔrmuɛɪnɪs]  
 fatiguing *vermoeiend* [vɔrmuɛɪnt]  
 fault *fout, gebrek* [fəʊt, gɛbrɛk]  
 favour (to) *begunstigen* [bə-ɡrɪnstəɡən]  
 favourable *gunstig* [ɡrɪnstɪg]  
 favourite *gunsteling, lieveling* [ɡrɪnstɛləɪŋ, lɪvələɪŋ]  
 fear (to) *vreezen* [vri:zən]  
 fears, to entertain fears *betreefd zijn, duchten* [bɛrrɛst zɛɪn, dʊktən]  
 feast *feest* [fest]  
 feed (to) *on leven van* [lɛvən vən]  
 feel (to) *voelen, gevoelen (zich)* [fi: (gɔ)vu:lən]  
 feeling *gevoelen* [gɛvu:lən]  
 fell (to) *vellen* [vɛlən]  
 female *vrouwelijk* [vr.ɪvɔlək]  
 ferocity *wildheid, wreedheid* [vɪlt-ɦɛɪt, vri:ɦɛɪt]  
 fervent *driftig, vurig* [drɪftɪg, vʏrɪg]  
 festivity *feestreugde* [festvrɔ:ɔdɪ]  
 fetch (to) *halen, afhalen, meenemen* [(ɑf)ɦalən, mɛnɛmən]  
 fever *koorts* [kɔrts]  
 fictitious *verdicht* [vɛrdɪkt]  
 field *veld, slagveld* [(slɑ:g)vɛlt]  
 field-marshal *veldmaarschalk* [vɛltmɑ:rsɑ:k]  
 fierce *woedend, wild* [ru:dənt, vɪlt]  
 fill (to) *vullen* [vʏlən], till a place *eene betrekking vervullen* [ɛnə bɛtrɛkɪŋ vɛrvʏlən]  
 fine *mooi, schoon* [mɔɪ, sɔn]

fire *vuur* [vyr]  
 fire-arms *vuurwapenen* [vyr-rapənən]  
 fire waterwork *vuur-waterwerk* [vyrvaterwerk]  
 firm *firma* [firma]  
 firm(ly) *vast, standvastig* [vast, stanvastəx]  
 fish-hook *vischhaak* [vishak]  
 fit (to) *passen* [pasən]  
 fix (to) *bepalen* [bəpalən]  
 flag *vlag* [vlar]  
 flatly *botweg, duidelijk* [bətəx, dəydlək]  
 flattery *vleijerij* [vlei:rei]  
 flatterer *vleijer* [vleir]  
 fleet *snel, vlug* [snel, vlu:x]  
 flight *vlucht* [vlu:xt]  
 float (to) *drijven, dobberen* [drei-vən, dɔbərən]  
 flourish (to) *bloeien* [bluiən]  
 flower *bloem* [blum]  
 flying *vliegend, haastig* [vligənt, hastəx]  
 foe *vijand* [viənt]  
 fog *mist, nevel* [mist, nevəl]  
 food *voedsel, eten* [vutsəl, etən]  
 fool *gek, dwaas* [gək, dvas]  
 foolish *gek, dwaas*  
 foot-light *voetlicht* [vu:tlɪxt]  
 forbear, I could not forbear *ik kon niet nalaten* [ik kən nit nalatən]  
 forbidden *verboden* [vərbodən]  
 forced *gedwongen* [gədvɔŋən]  
 forcible *krachtig, geweldig* [kræ-təx, gəvɛldəx]  
 fore-lock *voorhaar* [vorhar]  
 foreign *vreemd* [vremt]  
 foreigner *vreemdeling* [vremdə-lɪŋ]  
 forerun (to) *voorafgaan, voor-spellen* [vorəfran, vorspelən]  
 forest *bosch, woud* [bʊs, vut]  
 forget (to) *vergeten* [vərgetən]  
 forlorn *verlaten, hulpeloos* [vər-latən, hɪlpləs]  
 formed *gevormd, gebouwd* [gə-vɔrmt, gəbɔut]  
 formidable *geducht* [gədvɪxt]  
 fortnight *veertien dagen* [vertin daŋən]

forward *vooruit, voorwaarts* [vorəyt, vorvarts]  
 forward (to) *afzenden, verzenden* [afsendən, vərzendən]  
 foundation *stichting* [stɪxtɪŋ]  
 fox *vos* [vəs]  
 France *Frankrijk* [fræŋkreik]  
 Francis *Frans* [frans]  
 Frederic the Great *Frederik de Groot* [fredərək dɔ grɔtə]  
 free of charges *vrij van port, franco* [vrei van port, franko]  
 freedom *vrijheid, vrijdom* [vrei-heit, vreiðəm]  
 freighted *berracht, geladen* [bə-vræxt, gəlādən]  
 French *Fransch* [frans]  
 Frenchmen *Franschen* [fransən]  
 frequently *herhaaldelijk* [her-haldələk]  
 fresh *nieuw, vers* [niu, vers]  
 friend  *vriend, bekende* [vrint, bəkəndə]  
 frying-pan *broodpan* [bratpan]  
 frost-covered *met rijm bedekt* [met reim bɔdekt]  
 fruit *vrucht* [vru:xt]  
 fuel *brandstof* [brantstɔf]  
 fun *klucht, pret* [klɪ:xt, prət]  
 future *toekomstig* [tu:kʊmstəx]  
 fund *fonds, grond* [fʊnts, grʊnt].  
 Game-preserve *wildperk* [vɪlt-perk]  
 garb *kleeding* [kleɪɪŋ]  
 garden *tuin* [təyn]  
 gate *poort* [pɔrt]  
 gather (to) *verzamen* [vərzəmə-lən]  
 gay *vrolijk, opgeruimd* [vrolək, ɔpgərɔymt]  
 general *algemeen* [algəməŋ]  
 generally *gewoonlijk* [gəvɔnlək]  
 generous *edelmoedig* [edəlmudəx]  
 gentleman *heer, fatsoenlijk man* [her, fətsʊnlək mən]  
 German *Duitsch* [dɔeɪts]  
 gift *gift, gave* [gift, gavə]  
 glad(ly) *vrolijk, blij* [vrolək, bli:]  
 glitter (to) *blinken* [blɪŋkən]  
 gloomy *duister, zwaarmoedig* [dɔeɪstər, zvərmudəx]

gold goud [gəut]  
 golden gouden [g.ʌndən]  
 Good-Friday goede vrijdag [gudə  
 vrɛɪdər]  
 goodwill klandizie; goedwillig-  
 heid [klandizi; gudvɪləʁheit]  
 goose gans [gans]  
 gosling jonge gans [jʊŋ gans]  
 govern regeeren [rəgərən]  
 government regeering [rəgərɪŋ]  
 grammar taalkunde [tɑlkɪndə]  
 grant (to) toestaan [tustən]  
 grape druif [drœyf]  
 grass gras [gras]  
 gratitude dankbaarheid [dʌŋk-  
 bɑrheit]  
 Greece Griekenland [griekənlənt]  
 Greek Griek [griek]  
 green groen [grun]  
 grief, to come to grief slecht  
 afloopen [slɛkt əflɒpən]  
 grievous griezend, smartelijk  
 [grɪvənt, smɑrtlək]  
 grist koren; winst [kɔrən; vɪnst]  
 gross gros; dik, grof [grɒs; dɪk,  
 grɒf]  
 ground grond [grʌnt], to fall  
 to the ground mislukken, in  
 duigen vallen [mɪslʊkən, ɪn  
 dœyŋən vələn]  
 growl gebrom, geknor [gəbrʊm,  
 gɛknɔr]  
 guarantee waarborg [vɑrbɔrɪŋ]  
 guide gids (person); gids = reis-  
 boek [gɪts, reɪsbʊk]  
 guide (to) leiden, besturen [leɪ-  
 dən, bɛstɪrən]  
 Gunpowder Plot Buskruit-Com-  
 plot [bʊskrœyt-kɒmplɒt]  
 Gustave Gustaaf [grstaf].

Habit kleed, gewaad [klet, gəvɑt]  
 hall gebouw, zaal [gɒbʊ, zɑl]  
 halt (to) hinken [hɪŋkən]  
 hand (to) over overhandigen  
 [ɔvərhandɪŋən]  
 hands, cheap hands goedkooppe  
 werkkrachten (werklieden) [gut-  
 kɒpə vɛrkrɑxtən (vɛrklɪdən)];  
 with all hands on board met  
 man en muis [met mən ən  
 mœys]

handling hanteering [hʌntərɪŋ]  
 hanger-on aanhanger [anhæŋər]  
 hard hard, moeilijk [hɑrt, muɪə-  
 lək]  
 hardware ijzerwaar [aɪzərər]  
 harp (to) op de harp spelen [ɒp  
 də hɑrp spɛlən]  
 hasty haastig; driftig [hæstɪ,  
 drɪftɪ]  
 hastily haastig [hæstɪ]  
 hat hoed [hʌt]  
 hatchet bijl [beɪl]  
 haughty trotsch, hoogmoedig  
 [trɒts, hoʊmudɪk]  
 hawk harik [hɑvɪk]  
 hay hooi [hoɪ]  
 hay-stack hooistapel [hoɪstæpəl]  
 head hoofd, kop [hɛd, kɒp]  
 head (to) aanroeren [aɪnrʊərən]  
 health gezondheid [gəʊntheit]  
 healthy gezond [gəʊnt]  
 hearth haard [hɑrt]  
 heat (to) verhitten [vɛrhɪtən]  
 heaviness zwaarte [zvɑrtə]  
 heavy zwaar [zvɑr]  
 heed, to take heed oppassen,  
 toezien [ʊpɑsən, tuːzɪn]  
 help hulp [hɛlp]  
 helve steel [stɛl]  
 Henry Hendrik [hɛndrɪk]  
 heresy ketterij [kɛtərɪ]  
 hero held [hɛl]  
 heroic heldhaftig [hɛlthɑftɪk]  
 high-spirited fier, koen [fɪr, kʊn]  
 hill heuvel [hɪvəl]  
 billy keuwelachtig [hɒvələktɪk]  
 hinder (to) beletten [bɛlɛtən]  
 hinge hengsel, scharnier [hɛŋsəl,  
 ʃɑrnɪr]  
 history geschiedenis [gəsɪdɪəns]  
 hoar-frost rijm, rijp [reɪm, reɪp]  
 hob haardplaat; lomperd [hɑrt-  
 plɑt; lɒmpɜrt]  
 hole hol, kuil [hɒl, kʊɪl]  
 holiday feestdag, vakantiedag  
 [fɛstɪdər, vɑkənsɪdər]  
 home, to go home naar huis  
 gaan [nɑr hœys gən]  
 homeward huiswaarts [hœys-  
 vɑrts]  
 honest(ly) rechtschapen [rɛkt-  
 ʃəpən]

honour (to) eeren [erən]  
 honour, in honour of ter eere  
 van [ter ers van]  
 hook haak [hak]  
 hooked gebogen, krom [gəbogen,  
 krum]  
 hop (to) springen [sprɪŋən]  
 hopes verwachtingen [vərɛx-  
 tɪŋən]  
 horrible verschrikkelijk [vər-  
 sɪrɪkələk] [sɪrɪk]  
 horror afschuur, schrik [afsɛyɔr,  
 horse paard [part], to ride the  
 high horse den baas spelen  
 [dɔn bas spələn]  
 hosier maker van gebreid goed,  
 verkooper [makər van gəbrɛit  
 gut, vərko:pər]  
 hostess ruardin, gastvrouw [rɑ-  
 dɪn, gɑstvrɑu]  
 hot heet, warm [het, vɑrm]  
 hotel hotel [hotəl]  
 hover (to) fladderen, zweven [fla-  
 dərən, zrevən]  
 howling huilende, gehuil [hɔy-  
 ləndə, gəhweyl]  
 humble nederig [nɛdərɔx]  
 hunger honger [hʊŋgər]  
 hungry hongerig [hʊŋgərɔx]  
 hunting-field jachtveld [ʃɑxtfɛlt]  
 hurtful kwetsend, schadelijk [krɛt-  
 sənt, sɛədələk]  
 husband echtgenoot [ɛrtənəut].

Ice ijs [ɛis]  
 icicle ijskegel [ɛiskegəl]  
 idea denkbeeld, gedachte [dɛŋk-  
 bɛlt, gɛdɑtə]  
 identical identiek [ɪdɛntɪk]  
 idleness luiheid [lɔyheit]  
 ignorance onwetendheid [ʊnɛtənt-  
 heit]  
 ill ziek; slecht, kwaad [zɪk: slɛɔt,  
 kvɑt]  
 ill-assorted slecht gesorteerd [slɛɔt  
 [gəsɔrtɛrt]  
 image beeld [bɛlt]  
 imagine (to) verbeelden (zich)  
 [vərbɛldən] [mɪdələk]  
 immediate onmiddellijk [ʊn-  
 ɪmpɛtus aandrift, geweld [an-  
 drɪft, gɔwɛlt]

importance belangrijkheid [bəlaɪ-  
 rɛɪkheɪt]  
 important belangrijk [bəlaɪgrɛɪk]  
 impression indruk [ɪndrɪk]  
 improvement verbetering, vooruit-  
 gang [vərbɛtərɪŋ, vɔrɔwtgɑŋ]  
 improving verbeterende, aan het  
 beteren [vərbɛtərəndə, an het  
 vərbɛtərən]  
 impudence onbeschaamtheid [ʊn-  
 bɛsɔamtheɪt]  
 impudent onbeschaamd [ʊn-  
 bɛsɔamt]  
 impulse aandrift [andrɪft]  
 incite (to) aansporen [anspɔrən]  
 incline (to) geneigd zijn [gəneɪrt  
 zeɪn]  
 increase (to) toenemen [tu:nemən]  
 indebted verschuldigd [vɛrsɛxl-  
 dɔt], to be indebted for iets  
 te danken hebben aan [ɪts tɔ  
 dɑŋkən hɛbən an]  
 indeed werkelijk, in der daad  
 [vɛrkələk, ɪn dər dɑt]  
 India Indië [ɪndiə]  
 indignant verontwaardigd [vɛr-  
 ʊntvɑrdɔrt]  
 induce (to) bewegen [bəvægən]  
 indulgence toegerendheid [tuge-  
 vɔnthɛɪt]  
 industrious werkzaam, vlijtig  
 [vrɛkzɑm, vli:tɪɔr]  
 infatuated ingebeeld; bedwelmd  
 [ɪŋgɛbɛlt; bɛdvrɛlmt]  
 intorn (to) on aanbrengen, ver-  
 klikken [anbrɛŋən, vɛrklɪkən]  
 inhabitant bewoner [bɛrɔnər]  
 injure (to) benadeelen; kwetsen  
 [bɛnadɛlən; krɛtsən]  
 injury nadeel, schade [nədəl,  
 sɔdɑ]  
 inland binnenland [brɪnəntlɑnt]  
 insert (to) plaatsen [plɑtsən]  
 insist (to) aandringen, aanhouden  
 [andrɪŋən, anhɔndən]  
 instance aandrang, verzoek [an-  
 drɑŋ, vɛrzu:k]  
 instant onmiddellijk [ɪnɪmədələk]  
 instant oogenblik [ɔgənblik], at  
 the very instant op hetzelfde  
 oogenblik [ɔp hetzelfde ɔgən-  
 blik]

instrument *werktuig, instrument*  
[*verktøyg, instrymēt*]

instruction *voorschrift* [*vor-schrift*]

instructive *leerzaam* [*lerzaam*]

insular *eilandbewoner; tot een eiland behoorende* [*eilantbēronar; tōt ən eilant bəhorəndə*]

insurrection *opstand* [*ʊpstənt*]

integrity *oprechtheid; zuiverheid*  
[*ʊprɛxtheit; zuyvərheit*]

intend (to) *beoogen, van plan zijn*  
[*bəoogan, van plan zəin*]

intercourse *omgang, betrekking*  
[*ʊmgay, bətrɛkɪŋ*]

interest (to) *oneself, to take interest in belang stellen in*  
[*bəlaŋ stɛlən ɪn*]

interesting *belangwekkend* [*bə-layrɛkənt*]

interfere (to) *zich mengen in*  
[*z. mɛŋən ɪn*]

interference *bemiddeling* [*bə-middɛlɪŋ*]

interior *binnenste* [*bɪnənstə*]

interrupt (to) *storen, in de rede vallen* [*stɔrən, ɪn də redə vʌlən*]

intrepid *onversaagd* [*ʊnvɛrsəʔt*]

introduce (to) *voorstellen* [*vor-stɛlən*]

invention *uitvinding* [*æytrɪndɪŋ*]

invite (to) *uitnoodigen* [*æytnoʊd-ŋən*]

invoice *factuur* [*faktyr*]

Irish *Iersch* [*ɪrɪʃ*]

iron *ijzer* [*eɪzər*]

irritation *verbittering* [*vɛrbɪtərɪŋ*]

island } *eiland* [*eilant*]

isle }

islander *eilander, eilandbewoner*  
[*eilandər, eilandbēronər*]

Italy *Italië* [*ɪtaliə*].

James Jacob [*jakəp*]

jaw *kaak, kakebeen* [*kak, kak-ben*]

join (to) *zich aansluiten bij* [*z. ənslœytən bɛɪ*]

joke (to) *schertsen* [*ʃɛrtstən*]

journey *reis* [*rɛɪs*]

judge (to) *oordeelen* [*ɔrdɛlən*]

judgment *oordeel* [*ɔrdɛl*]

justify (to) *rechtraardigen* [*rɛt-fardəŋən*].

Keep (to) *houden* [*hʌdən*], keep burning *het vuur onderhouden*  
[*hɛt vʏr ʊndərhʌdən*]

keeper *opzichter, drijver* [*ʊp-sɪxtər, drɛɪvər*]

kettle *ketel* [*kɛtəl*]

kill (to) *dooden* [*dʊdən*]

kind *vriendelijk* [*vrɪndlək*]

kindliness *vriendelijkheid* [*vrɪnd-ləlkheit*]

knee *knie* [*kni*]

knife *mes* [*mɛs*]

knock (to) *kloppen* [*klopən*]

knock *geklop, slag* [*gɛklɔp, slax*]

knowledge *kundigheid, kennis*  
[*kʏndərheit, kɛnɪs*].

Labour *arbeid* [*ərbɛɪt*]; labour lost *vergeefsche moeite* [*vɛr-gefsə mʏtə*]

lamp *lamp* [*lʌmp*]

language *taal* [*tal*]

large *groot, uitgestrekt* [*grɔt, æytgəstrɛkt*]

last (to) *duren* [*dʏrən*]

last *verleden* [*vɛrlɛdən*]

last *leest* [*lɛst*]

laudable *lofwaardig* [*lɔfɔrdər*]

lazy *lui* [*læɪ*]

lead (to) *leiden, voeren* [*lɛɪdən, vʏrən*]

league *mijl; verbond* [*mɛɪl; vɛr-bʊnt*]

leave (to) *verlaten* [*vɛrlatən*]

leave, to get *leave verlof krijgen*  
[*vɛrlɔf krɛɪŋən*], to take *leave afscheid nemen*  
[*əfsɛɪt nəmən*]

leg *been* [*bɛn*]

letter *brief* [*brɪf*], letter of credit *credietbrief* [*krɛdɪtbrɪf*], letter of introduction *aanbevelings-brief* [*ənbəvɛlɪŋsbrɪf*]

light *licht* [*lɪxt*]

light-house *ruurtoren* [*vrʏrtorən*]

like (to) *very much reel van iets houden* [*vɛl van ɪts hʌdən*]

likeness *gelijkenis* [*gɛlɛɪkənɪs*]

lily *lelie* [*lɛli*]

lineage *geslacht* [*gɛslaxt*]



lion *leeuw* [leu]  
 listener *hoorder, luisteraar* [hor-  
 dər, lʷɛstərər] [kʀndə]  
 literature *letterkunde* [lɛtər-  
 load (to) *laden, bevrachten* [ladən,  
 bərraktən]  
 load *lading, cracht* [ladɪŋ, vrɑxt]  
 lofty *verheven, trotsch* [vərhevən,  
 trɪts]  
 log *blok hout* [blɔk hɔut]  
 London *Londen* [lʌndən]  
 long (to) *begeeren, verlangen*  
 [bɔgərən, vərɫəŋən]  
 look (to) *for zoeken (naar)* [zu-  
 kən (nər)]  
 look *blik, gezicht* [blɪk, ɡɛzɪt]  
 loose *los, vrij* [los, vrɛi]  
 Lord *Heer, God* [hɛr, ɡɔt]  
 loss, to be at a loss *verlegen*  
 zijn [vərɛgən zɛin]  
 lot *koop, hoeveelheid* [hɔp, hu-  
 velhɛit]  
 loud *luid* [lɔɪt]  
 love *liefde* [lɪvdə]  
 low *laag* [lɔx]  
 lower (to) *strijken, naar beneden*  
*laten* [strɛɪkən, nər bənɛdən  
 latən]  
 loyalty *getrouweheid* [ɡɔtrɔuhɛit]  
 luck, good luck *geluk* [ɡɔlɪk]  
 lucky *gelukkig* [ɡɔlɪkɔx]  
 lucrative *voordeelig* [vɔrdɛlər]  
 luggage *bagage* [bɑgɑʃə]  
 lunatic *krankzinnig* [krɔŋk-  
 sɪnəs].

**Machine** *manufacturer* *machinen-  
 fabrikant* [mɑʃɪnənfabrɪkənt]  
**Macedon** *Macedonië* [mæsədɔniə]  
**Macedonian** *Macedonier* or *Mace-  
 donisch* [mæsədɔniər — mæsə-  
 dɔnis]  
**magnet** *magneet* [magnet]  
**magnificent** *prachtig, heerlijk*  
 [prɑxtɔx, hɛrlɪk]  
**mail-train** *sneltrain, posttrein*  
 [snɛltrɛɪn, pɔstrɛɪn]  
**man** *man* [mən], **young man**  
*jongeling* [jɔŋɛlɪŋ], **to a man**  
*tot den laatsten man* [tɔt dɛn  
 lat-tən mən] [nɛit]  
**malice** *boosheid, nijd* [boshɛit,

**manage** (to) *behandelen* [bəhan-  
 dələn]  
**mankind** *menschdom* [mɛnʃdɒm]  
**manner of living** *leefwijze* [lɛf-  
 vɛɪzə]  
**manufacturer** *fabrikant* [fabrɪ-  
 kənt]  
**march** (to) *one off iemand doen*  
*marcheeren (vertrekken)* [ɪmɑnt  
 dʌn mɑrʃərən (vɔrtrekən)]  
**maritime power** *zeemacht* [ze-  
 mɑt]  
**mark** (to) *teekenen, aanduiden*  
 [tekənən, andɛɪdən]  
**market** *markt* [mɑrkt]  
**marquis** *markies* [mɑrkɪs]  
**marriage sermon** *trouwpreek*  
 [trɔuprɛk]  
**mass** *massa, hoop* [mɑsə, hɔp]  
**master** *heer, meester* [hɛr, mɛstər]  
**masterpiece** *meesterstuk* [mɛstər-  
 strɪk]  
**match** *huucelijk; partij; wedstrijd*  
 [hyrəlɪk; pɑrtɛi; vɛtstrɛɪt]  
**matter** *zaak* [zɑk]  
**maxim** *stelregel* [stɛlɛgəl]  
**means** *middelen* [mɪdɛlən]  
**measure** *maat; maatregel* [mɑt;  
 mɑtrɛgəl]  
**meat** *vleesch* [vɪlɛs]  
**meet** (to) *ontmoeten, te ontmoet*  
*gaan* [ɪntmʊtən, tɔ ɡɛmʊt ɔn]  
**meeting** *ontmoeting, samenkomst*  
 [ɪntmʊtɪŋ, sɑmənkrɪmst]  
**melting-furnace** *smelt-oven* [smɛlt-  
 ɔvən]  
**member** *lid* [lɪt]  
**memorable** *gedenkwaardig* [ɡə-  
 dɛŋkvrɑdɔx]  
**memory** *geheugen, herinnering*  
 [ɡɪhɔgən, hɛrɪnɔrɪŋ]  
**mention** (to) *vermelden* [vɛr-  
 mɛldən], **worth mentioning**  
*noemenswaardig* [nɔmɛnsrɑrt]  
**merchandise** *koopwaar* [kɔpvrɑ]  
**merchant** *koopman* [kɔpmən]  
**merchantable** *leverbaar* [lɛvər-  
 bɑr]  
**merry** *blij, vrolijk* [blɛi, vrɔlɪk]  
**message** *boodschap* [bɔtsxɑp]  
**messenger** *bode, boodschapper*  
 [bɔdɔ, bɔtsxɑpər]

metal-bindings *metalen beslagen* [*mətələn bəsəgən*]  
 method *wijze, methode* [*veizə, mətədə*]  
 middle *midden* [*mɪdən*]  
 Middle-Ages *middeleeuwen* [*mɪd-  
doleuən*]  
 midwinter *midden (hartje) van  
den winter* [*mɪdən (hartjə) van  
dən vɪntər*]  
 mighty *machtig, sterk* [*mæxtəx,  
stɜrk*]  
 mild *zacht* [*zæxt*]  
 mile *mijl* [*mɛɪl*]  
 milkman *melkboer* [*mɛlkbuɜr*]  
 mill *molen* [*mɒlən*]  
 mind *zin, gevoel* [*zɪn, gəvut*]  
 mind, never mind *het doet er  
niet toe* [*hət dət ɜr nit tu*]  
 minor *kleiner; minderjarige*  
[*kliːnər; mɪndərjəriːʒə*]  
 miscarry (to) *mislukken* [*mis-  
lɜkən*]  
 misfortune *ongeluk* [*ʊŋgəlɜk*]  
 mistake *fout, mislag* [*faut, mis-  
læx*]  
 mix (to) *among (zich) mengen*  
*onder* [*z. mɛɪn ʊndər*]  
 modern *nieuw* [*nju*]  
 moment *oogenblik* [*ogənblik*]  
 money *geld* [*gɛlt*]  
 month *maand* [*maɪnt*] [*stəl*]  
 monster *monster, stuaal* [*mɒnstər,*  
*mɔrɪŋ*]  
 morning *morgen* [*mɔrgən*]  
 most of *het grootste gedeelte van*  
[*hət grɔtstə gedeltə vən*]  
 mountain *berg* [*bɜrx*]  
 mouth *bek, mond* [*bɛk, mʊnt*]  
 mow (to) *maaien* [*maɪn*]  
 Mrs. Meerow *[mɜrrou]*  
 museum *museum* [*myzɜm*]  
 music *muziek* [*myzɪk*]  
 mystery *geheim* [*gəhɛɪm*].

Nail *nagel, spijker* [*nagəl, spei-  
kər*]  
 narrative *verhalend* [*vərhalənt*]  
 nasty *leelijk, ruil* [*lelək, vœyl*]  
 nation *volk* [*vɔlk*]  
 native *inboorling* [*ɪnbɔrlɪŋ*], a  
 native of London *geboren te  
Londen, een Londenaar van*

*geboorte* [*gəbɔrən tɔ lɒndən,*  
*ən lɒndənər vən gəbɔrtə*]  
 native-country *geboorteland* [*gə-  
bɔrtəlænd*]  
 natural *natuurlijk* [*natjrlək*]  
 necessary *noodzakelijk* [*notsəkə-  
lək*]  
 necessity *noodzakelijkheid* [*not-  
səkələkheɪt*]  
 need *nood* [*noʊt*]  
 needle *naald* [*naɪt*]  
 neighbourhood *buurt, nabijheid*  
[*bjurt, nabɛɦeɪt*]  
 neighbouring *naburig* [*nabjɜrɜx*]  
 Neva *Neva* [*nevə*]  
 newspaper *courant, nieuwsblad*  
[*kurənt, njuːsblæt*]  
 nice *mooi, lief* [*moɪ, lif*]  
 night *nacht* [*naɪt*]  
 noble *edel* [*edəl*]  
 nonsensical *gek, ongerijmd* [*gɛk.  
ʊŋgərɛɪmɪt*]  
 Normandy *Normandië* [*nɔr-  
mandiː*] [*manən*]  
 Normans *Noormannen* [*nɔr-  
nɔθ noɔrd*] [*nɔrt*]  
 North-America *Noord Amerika*  
[*nɔrt ɒmərɪkə*]  
 novel *roman* [*rɒmən*]  
 number *getal* [*gətəl*].

Oak *eik* [*ɛɪk*]  
 oats *havert* [*həvər*]  
 object *voorwerp* [*vɔrɜvɜp*]  
 oblige (to) *verplichten* [*vɜrplɪktən*]  
 observation *waarneming* [*və-  
nemɪŋ*]  
 occupy (to) *innemen* [*ɪnemən*]  
 occur (to) *voorkomen* [*vɔrkɒmən*]  
 occurrence *gebeurtenis* [*gəbɔrt-  
ɪnɪs*] [*tɔr*]  
 office *ambt, kantoor* [*æmpt, kən-  
old ɒld*] [*nʊt*]  
 opera-glass *tooneelkijker* [*tɒnel-  
kɛɪkər*]  
 opinion *meening, oordeel* [*mɛnɪŋ,  
ɔrdəl*] [*hɛɪt*]  
 opportunity *gelegenheid* [*gəleɡən-  
ɒpəz*] [*teɡənstələn, teɡən-  
vɜrkən*]  
 opposition *tegenstand* [*teɡənstənt*]

oppression onderdrukking [ʊn-  
dɔrdrʏkɪŋ]  
oration rederoering [redəvurɪŋ]  
orator redenaar [redənər]  
order (to) bestellen [bɔstələn]  
order on trial proefbestelling  
[pruɪvbɔstəlɪŋ]  
ore erts [ɛrts]  
outpost buitenpost [bəʊtənpɔst]  
outward uiterlijk [æwtərɫɔk]  
oven oven [ovən]  
overcoat overjas [ovərʒəs]  
owing (to) verschuldigd aan, toe  
te schrijven aan [vɔrsɔɪldɪkt  
ən, tu te sɔrɛɪvən ən]  
own eigen [eɪɡən].

Pacific Stille Zuidzee [stɪlə  
zæɪtsə]  
pain moeite [maɪtə]  
painful pijnlijk, onaangenaam  
[peɪnlɪk, vʌŋɡənəm]  
paint (to) schilderen [sɪldərən]  
painter schilder [sɪldər]  
painting schilderij [sɪldərɛɪ]  
palace paleis [pəleɪs]  
paper-mill papierfabriek [pəpɪr-  
fəbrɪk]  
parcel pakje, stukje [pʌkʒə,  
strʏkʒə]  
parents ouders, familieleden  
[ʊndərs, fəməliədən]  
parrot papegaai [pəpəɡaɪ]  
Parliament Parlement [pɑrlə-  
mənt]  
part gedeelte [ɡɛdeltə]  
participate (to) deelen [dɛlən]  
partner deelgenoot [dɛlgnoʊt]  
party partij [pɑrtɪ]  
pass (to) voorbijgaan [vɔrbeɪɡən]  
passage overtocht [ɔvərɔɪt]  
passenger passagier, reiziger  
[pəsəʒɪr, reɪzɪɡər]  
passer-by voorbijganger [vɔrbeɪ-  
ɡəŋɡər]  
past verledene [vərledənə]  
patron patroon [pətrɔn]  
pattern model, staal [mɔdəl,  
stal]  
payment betaling [betalɪŋ]  
peaceable vredelievend [vredəli-  
vənt]

peasant boer [bur]  
peep (to) gluren; aanbreken [ɡly-  
rən; ʌnbrekən]  
Pennsylvania Pennsylvanië [pən-  
zɪlvəniə]  
penny stuiver [stœɪvrər]  
people mensen, lieden [mɛnsən,  
liədən]  
perceive (to) bemerken [bəmər-  
kən]  
period periode, tijdperk [pɛrɪədə,  
tɛɪtpɛrk]  
perish (to) omkomen [ʊmkomən]  
personage persoon, personage  
[pɜrsən, pɜrsənəʒ]  
Philip Philips [fɪlɪps]  
philippic scherpe hekeling [sɛrɪpə  
hekəlɪŋ]  
philosopher wijsgeer [veɪsɪfər]  
picture plaat [plæt]  
piece stuk [stri:k]  
pil pil [pɪl]  
pillar pilaar, zuil [pɪlər, zɪyl]  
place plaats, betrekking [plæt,  
bɛtrɛkɪŋ]  
plain eenrondig [ɛnɔvələɪr]  
plan plan [plæn]  
pleasant aangenaam, prettig  
[ʌŋɡənəm, prɛtɪʃ]  
please als het u belieft, wees zoo  
goed? [als het ɪ blyft, vɛs zo  
ɡu:t] [mak]  
pleasure pret, vermaak [prɛt, vər-  
pleəzər]  
pleasure-boat plezierboot [plə-  
zɪrbɔt]  
pleasure-garden lusttuin [lɪs-  
təɪn]  
pleasure-loving behagen (ver-  
maak) scheppend [bəhəɡən  
(vərmak) sɛrɛpənt]  
plenty of in overvloed, volop [ɪn  
ɔvərʃlʊt, vɔləp]  
poet dichter [dɪktər]  
poetical dichtertlijk, poëtisch [dɪk-  
tərɫɔk, poɛtɪʃ]  
point punt, spits [pɔɪnt, spɪts]  
pole pool [pɔl]  
pond vijver, poel [veɪvər, pul]  
popular populair [pɒpjələr]  
poor arm, armzalig [arm, ʌrm-  
zəlɪʒ]  
portrait portret [pɔrtret]

position, to be in a position in  
*eene positie verkeeren* [*in ena  
posisi verkeren*]

possess (to) bezitten [*baziten*]

possible mogelijk [*moglik*], as  
soon as possible zoodra moge-  
lijk [*zodra —*]

post (to) op de post bezorgen,  
naar de post brengen [*op de  
post bezorgen, naar de post  
brengen*]

post ambt, betrekking [*amt,  
betrekking*]

post-chaise postwagen [*postwagen*]

post-paid franco, gefrankeerd  
[*franko, gefrankert*]

pot pot, kan [*pot, kan*]

pottery aardewerk [*aardewerk*]

pounce (to) op neervallen op  
[*neervallen op*]

pound pond [*punt*]

pour (to) gieten, uitstorten [*guten,  
øytstorten*]

poverty armoede [*armoede*]

power macht, kracht [*macht,  
kracht*]

practice oefening [*oefening*]

practise (to) oefenen, uitoefenen  
[*(øyt)ufoenen*]

praise lof [*lof*]

precious kostbaar [*kostbaar*]

predecessor voorganger [*vor-  
ganger*]

prefer (to) verkiezen [*verkiezen*]

prefix voorvoegsel [*voorvoegsel*]

prepare (to) voorbereiden [*vor-  
bereiden*]

prepenze voorbedacht [*voorbedacht*]

presence of mind tegenwoordig-  
heid van geest [*tegenwoordigheid  
van geest*]

Presbyterian Presbyteriaansch  
[*presbyteriaansch*]

present tegenwoordige [*tegen-  
woordige*]

preserve (to) bewaren [*bewaren*]

press (to) presseeren, dringen  
[*preseren, dringen*]

presumption vermoeden [*ver-  
moeden*]

pretty lief, aardig [*aardig*], pretty  
weil goed, vrij goed [*(vrij) goed*]

prevail (to) heerschen [*heerschen*]  
prevent (to) voorkomen [*vor-  
komen*]

previously vooraf [*vooraf*]

price prijs [*preis*] {*kurant*}

price-current prijs-courant [*preis-  
prick* (to) prikken, steken [*prikken,  
steken*]

pride hoogmoed [*hoegmoed*]

priest priester [*priester*]

principle beginsel [*beginsel*]

prisoner gevangene [*gevangene*]

proceeding handelwijze [*handel-  
wijze*]

proceeds, net proceeds netto-  
opbrengst [*netto-opbrengst*]

procure (to) verschaffen [*ver-  
schaffen*]

procurator volmacht, procuratie  
[*volmacht, prokuraasie*]

progress voortgang, vooruitgang  
[*voortgang, vooruitgang*]

promise (to) beloven [*beloven*]

prompt (to) ingeren, voorzeggen  
[*ingeren, vorzeggen*]

promptly vaardig [*vaardig*]

properly behoorlijk [*behoorlijk*],  
properly speaking eigenlijk  
gezegd [*eigenlijk gezegd*]

property eigendom [*eigendom*]

propose (to) voorstellen [*vor-  
stellen*]

propulsion voortdrijving [*fort-  
drijving*]

prosperity welvaart [*welvaart*]

proud trotsch, fier [*trots, fier*]

proverb spreekwoord [*spreekwoord*]

proverbial saying spreekwoord-  
lijk gezegd [*spreekwoordelijk  
gezegd*]

provide (to) verzorgen [*verzorgen*]

province provincie [*provincie*]

prove (to) bewijzen [*bewijzen*]

proxy volmacht [*volmacht*]

Prussia Pruizen [*pruizen*]

Prussian Pruisisch [*pruisisch*]

public publiek, openbaar [*publiek,  
openbaar*]

pull (to) down afbreken, ver-  
woesten [*afbreken, verwoesten*]

pull ruk, stoot [*ruk, stoot*]

purchase koop [*koop*]

pure zuiver [*zæyvr̥*]  
 Puritans Puriteinen [*pyriteinən*]  
 pursue (to) volgen. vervolgen  
 [(*vər*)vɔlgən]  
 put, to put out uitsteken [*œyt-*  
*stekən*], to put off uitstellen  
 [*œytselən*].

Quality hoedanigheid, kwaliteit  
 [hʉdanærheit, kwaliteit]  
 quarrel (to) twisten [*twistən*]  
 queen koningin [*konɪŋɪn*]  
 queer zonderling, raar [*zəndər-*  
*lij, rar*]  
 quest, to be in quest of nasporen  
 [*nasporən*]  
 question vraag [*vraʃ*]  
 quickly vlug [*vlr̥s*]  
 quite geheel, geheel en al [*gheh-*  
*en al*]  
 quote (to) aanhalen [*anhālən*]  
 quotation aanhaling [*anhaliŋ*].

Raft elot [*vlɔt*]  
 railway spoorweg [*spoorvɛr*]  
 rain regen [*regən*]  
 rampart wal [*vəl*]  
 range rij, keten [*rɛi, ketən*]  
 rank rang [*rəŋ*]  
 rapacity roofzucht [*rovzɪt*]  
 rare zelden [*zeldən*]  
 rascal schelm, schurk [*ʃælm,*  
*ʃɛrk*]  
 rate, first rate van den eersten  
 rang, puikbest [*van dən ɛrstən*  
*rəŋ, pœykbɛst*], at the rate of  
 met de snelheid van [*met də*  
*snelheit van*]  
 rather eerder, liever [*ɛrdər, livər*]  
 raw onrijp, rauw [*ɛnrɛip, rɔu*]  
 reach (to) bereiken; zich uitstrek-  
 ken [*z. œytsrekən*] [*rɛjəl*]  
 real wezenlijk, reëel [*veʒənliək,*  
*reəle*]  
 realise (to) verwezenlijken [*vər-*  
*veʒənliəkən*]  
 reason rede; verstand [*redə:*  
*vɛrstant*]  
 reasonable redelijk [*redəliək*]  
 reasoning redeneering [*rednɛrɪŋ*]  
 rebel oproermaker [*ɔprɛrmakər*]  
 receipt quitantie, recept [*kritansi,*  
*rɛsept*]

recently onlangs [*ɛnləŋs*]  
 reception ontfangst [*ɛntrəŋst*]  
 reckless zorgeloos [*zɔrgəloʊs*]  
 recover (to) herstellen [*hɛrstɛlən*]  
 rectification verbetering [*vər-*  
*bɛtəriŋ*]  
 reference verwijzing [*vɛrveʒɪŋ*]  
 refrain (to) zich onthouden [*z.*  
*ɛnthoudən*]  
 refuse (to) weigeren [*veigɛrən*]  
 reign regearing [*rɛigəriŋ*]  
 reimburse (to) reimburseeren  
 [*rəmburserən*]  
 relations betrekkingen, familie-  
 leden [*bɛtrɛkiŋən, familiɛdɛn*]  
 release (to) ontslaan [*ɛntslən*]  
 religion godsdienst [*gɔtsdɪnst*]  
 rely (to) on zich verlaten, ver-  
 trouwen op [*z. vɛrlatən, vər-*  
*trɔurən ɔp*]  
 remain (o) blijven [*bleivən*]  
 remain overblijfsel [*ɔvərbleiʃsəl*]  
 remarkable merkwaardig [*mɛrk-*  
*vɑrdəʃ*]  
 remedy geneesmiddel, hulpmiddel  
 [*ɡenɛsmɪdəl, hʉlpmɪdəl*]  
 remember (to) herinneren [*hɛr-*  
*ɪnərən*]  
 remission of guilt vergiffenis  
 [*vɛrgɪʃnɪs*]  
 remove (to) verplaatsen, ver-  
 planten [*vɛrplɑtsən, vɛrplɑntən*]  
 repair (to) herstellen [*hɛrstɛlən*]  
 repeatedly herhaaldelijk [*hɛr-*  
*hɑldɛliək*]  
 reply, in reply to in antwoord  
 op [*ɪn ɛntvɔrt ɔp*]  
 represent (to) voorstellen; ver-  
 rangen [*vɔrstɛlən, vɔrvəŋən*]  
 representation voorstelling; ver-  
 tegenwoordiging [*vɔrstɛliŋ; vɛr-*  
*tɛgənvɔrdɛŋŋ*]  
 representative vertegenwoordiger  
 [*vɛrtɛgənvɔrdɛŋŋ*]  
 reprint herdruk [*hɛrdrɛk*]  
 republic republiek [*rɛpyblik*],  
 republic of the United Nether-  
 lands Republiek der Vereenigde  
 Nederlanden [*— dər vɛrɛnɛgdɪ*  
*nɛdərlandən*]  
 repulsive terugstootend [*tɛrvɛr-*  
*stɔtənd*]

reputation *achting, goede naam* [*achtig, guds nam*]  
 request (to) *verzoeken* [*verzekən*]  
 residence *verblijf* [*verbleif*], to  
 take up one's residence *zich*  
*vestigen* [*z. vestigən*]  
 resist (to) *weerstand* [*verstan*]  
 resistance *weerstand* [*verstant*],  
 to make resistance *weerstand*  
*bieden* [*— bidən*]  
 resolution *besluit* [*bəsləyt*]  
 resolve (to) *besluiten* [*bəsləytən*]  
 resource *hulp, toelucht* [*hulp,*  
*tuurlicht*]  
 respect *achting; opzicht* [*achtig;*  
*opzigt*]  
 restore (to) *herstellen* [*herstələn*]  
 retain (to) *behouden* [*bəhəudən*]  
 return (to) *terugkomen* [*tərrə-*  
*komən*], by return of post *per*  
*omnedaande, per keerende* [*per*  
*omgānde, per kerānde*]  
 reward *belooning* [*biloniy*]  
 rich *rijk* [*reik*]  
 right *recht* [*reht*], to be right  
*gelijk hebben* [*gəleik hebən*]  
 ripe *rijp* [*reip*]  
 rise, to rise against *opstaan*  
*tegen* [*opstan tegən*], to rise  
 up *verrijzen* [*verreizən*]  
 risk of life *levensgevaar* [*levəns-*  
*gəvār*]  
 rival *mededinger* [*medədiŋər*]  
 river *rivier* [*rivir*]  
 road *weg, straat* [*weg, strat*]  
 roam (to) *about omzwerven* [*om-*  
*zərrvən*]  
 roasted *gebraden* [*gəbradən*]  
 Romans *Romeinen* [*romēinən*]  
 room *plaats; vertrek* [*plats; vər-*  
*trek*]  
 root *wortel* [*wortəl*]  
 rope *koord, touw* [*kort, təu*]  
 rough *wild, woest* [*wilt, rust*]  
 round *rond* [*ront*]  
 rude *ruw* [*rur*]  
 ruin *ruine; ondergang* [*rvinə;*  
*undərgāŋ*]  
 rule *regel; liniaal* [*regəl; liniaal*];  
 as a rule *in den regel* [*in den*  
*regəl*]  
 ruler *heerscher* [*hərsər*]

rumour *gerucht* [*gərurət*]  
 rumoured, it was rumoured *er*  
*liep een gerucht* [*er lip ən —*]  
 Russia *Rusland* [*rʌslənt*]  
 Russian *Russisch* [*rʌsis*].  
 Saardam *Zaandam* [*zandam*]  
 sad *trewig, bedroefd* [*trəwər,*  
*bədruf*]  
 safe *behouden* [*bəhəudən*]  
 safely *veilig* [*veiləx*]  
 said *bedoeld, genoemd* [*bədult,*  
*gənumt*]  
 sail (to) *zeilen* [*zeilən*]  
 sailor *matroos* [*matros*]  
 sale *verkoop, veiling* [*vərkoop,*  
*veiling*]  
 sally *uitval* [*œyftəl*]  
 same *gelijk, zelfde* [*gəleik; zelvde*]  
 sample *monster, staal* [*mənstər,*  
*stal*]  
 satire *schimpschrift* [*ʃrimpskrift*]  
 satisfaction *voldoening* [*vəlduniny*]  
 saucer *schoteltje* [*ʃrotəltjə*]  
 Saxony *Saksen* [*saksən*]  
 scald (to) *branden, schroeien*  
*[branden, srruin]*  
 scarcely  *nauwelijks* [*nəurwəls]*  
 scene *tooneel* [*tonel*], scene of  
 war *oorlogstooneel* [*oortəstonel*]  
 scenery *natuur* [*natyər*], tooneel  
 scent *geur, reuk; spoor* [*gər,*  
*rok; spor*]  
 schnapps *generer* [*ʒenərər*]  
 scientific *wetenschappelijk* [*rəton-*  
*səpələk*]  
 scot-free *vrij van boete* (*schatting*)  
*[vri van butə (ʃətiŋ)]*  
 scrape *moeilijkheid, verlegenheid*  
*[muidləkheit, vərlegənhēit]*  
 scream (to) *gillen* [*gilm*]  
 screen *scherm* [*schrēm*]  
 sea *zee* [*ze*]  
 search *onderzoek* [*undərzuk*]  
 season *jaargetijde, seizoen* [*ʒar-*  
*gətiids, seizun*]  
 seat *zitplaats, zijte* [*zitplats, zitjə*]  
 seclusion *afzondering, uitsluiting*  
*[afzundriny, œytslēytig]*  
 secret *geheim, secret of state*  
*staatsgeheim* [*statsgəheim*]  
 secretary *secretaris* [*ʃekrətəris*]

- secured from *bereiligd tegen* [*bəreilæxt tegan*]  
 seem (to) *lijken, schijnen* [*leikən, sxeinən*]  
 self-denial *zelfverloochening* [*zɛlfərlɔxənɪŋ*]  
 seller *verkooper* [*vɛrkopər*]  
 sense of smell *reukzintuig* [*rɔk-sintuɪx*]  
 senseless *bevcusteloos, gevoelloos* [*bɛvɛstɔlos, ɣəvɔlos*]  
 sentiment *gevoel* [*ɣəvɔl*]  
 serve (to) *dienen* [*dinən*]  
 seriously *ernstig* [*ɛrnstəx*]  
 service *dienst, kerkdienst* [*kɛrk-dinst*]  
 set, old set *vroegere vrienden* [*vruɣrɔ vrɪndən*]  
 settlement *vestiging* [*vɛstəɣɪŋ*]  
 settler *planter, een persoon die zich in een vreemd land vestigt* [*plɑntər, en pɛrson di zɪx in en vrent lɑnt vɛstəxt*] [*də*]  
 several *verschillende* [*vɛrsɛɪlənd*]  
 severe *streng, hard* [*strɛŋ, hɑrt*]  
 shake (to) *schudden* [*sɛxdən*]  
 shame *schaamte* [*sɛɑmtə*]  
 shape *vorm* [*vɔrm*]  
 share *deel, aandeel* [(*an*)*dɛl*]  
 shark *haai* [*hai*]  
 sharp *scherp* [*sɛɛp*], look sharp *maak haast!* [*mɑk hɑst*]  
 sheet of ice *ijsvlakte* [*ɪsflɑktə*]  
 shelter *bescherming, schuilplaats* [*bɛsɛrmiŋ, sɛwɪlplɑts*]  
 shield (to) *from beschermen tegen* [*bɛsɛrmən tɛɡən*]  
 shift *middel; list; uitvlucht* [*mɪdɛl; list; ɔytlɛxt*]  
 shilling *schelling* [*sɛɛlɪŋ*]  
 shine (to) *schijnen* [*sxeinəm*]  
 ship *schip* [*sɛɪp*]  
 shipbuilding *het bouwen van schepen* [*hɛt bəuən vən sɛpən*]  
 shipping *verschepping; vloot* [*vɛr-sɛpiŋ; vlot*]  
 shock *schok, slag* [*sɔk; slɑx*]  
 shopkeeper *winkelier* [*vɪŋkəlɪr*]  
 shore *strand, oever, kust* [*strɑnt, ɔvər, krɛst*]  
 short *kort* [*kɔrt*]
- shortly *onlangs, binnen kort* [*ɔnlɑŋs, bɪnən kɔrt*]  
 shrink (to) *back terugdeinzen* [*tɛrrɣdeɪnzən*]  
 Siberia *Siberië* [*sɪbɛrɪə*]  
 side *zijde* [*zɪdɔ*], side by side *vlak naast elkander, gepaard* [*vɪlɑk nɑst ɛlkɑndər, ɣəpɑrt*]  
 sift (to) *uitpluizen* [*ɔytplɔɪzən*]  
 sight *gezicht; schouwspel* [*ɣɔzɪxt; sɛʊspɛl*]  
 signature *onderteekening* [*ɔndər-tɛkənɪŋ*]  
 silver *zilver* [*zɪlvər*]  
 simple *eenvoudig, enkel* [*ɛnvrɔ-dɔx, ɛnkəl*]  
 single *enkel; zuiver* [*zɔɛɣrɔ*]  
 situated *gelegen* [*ɣɔlɛɣən*]  
 situation *toestand* [*tɪstɑnt*]; a fine situation *een mooie boel* [*ən mɔɪə buɪ*]  
 skill *bedrevenheid, kennis* [*bɛ-drevənheɪt, kɛnɪs*]  
 skin *huid* [*hɔɪt*]  
 skulking *gluiperig* [*ɣlɔɛppɔrɔx*]  
 sky *hemel, uitspansel* [*hɛməl, ɔytspɑnsəl*]  
 slavery *slavernij* [*slɑvrənɪ*]  
 sledge *slede, slee* [*sledə, sle*]  
 sleep *slaap* [*slɑp*]  
 sleep, to go to sleep *gaan slapen* [*ɣɑn slɑpən*]  
 slip, to slip behind *achter (iets) sluipen* [*ɑxtər ɪts slɔɪpən*], to slip by *voorbij sluipen* [*vɔr-bɛi —*], to slip into *glijden in* [*ɣlɛɪdɪn ɪn*]  
 small *klein, gering* [*kleɪn, ɣərɪŋ*]  
 smoking *rookend, het rooken* [*rɔkənt, hɛt rɔkən*]  
 smooth *glad, zacht* [*ɣlɑt, zɑxt*]  
 snatch, to snatch away *weg-grijpen* [*vɛxɛɪpən*]  
 Society, Society Islands *Gezelschaps Eilanden* [*ɣɔzɛlsɛɑps-ɛɪləndəm*], Royal Society *Koninklijke Academie* [*kɔnɪŋklɛkə ɑkɑdɛmɪ*]  
 soft *zacht* [*zɑxt*]  
 soldier *soldaat* [*sɔldɑt*]  
 solicit (to) *verzoeken; dingen naar* [*vɛrɛzɔkən; dɪŋən nɑr*]

- song *gezang*, *lied* [gɪzɑŋ, lit]  
 sorrow *leed*, *verdriet* [let, vər-  
 drit]  
 sort *soort* [sort], all sorts of  
*allerhand*, *allerlei* [alərhaunt,  
 alərlei]  
 soundness *gaufheid*, *gezondheid*  
 [gafheit, gəzʊntheit]  
 south *zuiden* [zæydn]  
 sow (to) *zaaien* [zaian]  
 Spanish *Spaansch* [spans]  
 spar *rondhout*, *spar* [rʊnhtout,  
 spar]  
 specifically *soortelijk* [sortələk]  
 speechify (to) *redekarelen* [redə-  
 karələn]  
 speed *spoed*; *galop* [sput; ga-  
 ləp]  
 spend, to spend one's life *zijn*  
*leven doorbrengen* [zən ləvən  
 dɔrbreŋən]  
 spirit *geest* [gest]  
 spoil (to) *bederen* [bədərən]  
 spoon *lepel* [ləpəl]  
 spot *plaats* [plats]  
 spread (to) *uitbreiden* [æyt-  
 breidən]  
 spring *lente* [ləntə]  
 staff *stok* [stɔk]  
 start (to) *vertrekken* [vərtrekən]  
 state (to) *bepalen*, *berichten* [bə-  
 palən, bərɪhtən]  
 state of affairs *stand van zaken*  
 [stant van zəkən]  
 station *stand* [stant]  
 statue *standbeeld* [standbɛlt]  
 stay (to) *verblijf houden*, *blijven*  
 [vərbleif hʊdnən, blɛivən]  
 steadily *bestendig* [bəstəndɪk]  
 steam-engine *stoomwerktuig*  
 [stomvɛrktɔyɪk]  
 steamer *stoomboot* [stombot]  
 sternly *streng* [strɛŋ]  
 stick, to stick at *aarzelen* [ar-  
 zələn], to stick by *blijven bij*  
 [blɛivən bɛi]  
 stiff *stijf*, *stevig* [steif, stɛvɪk]  
 stock in hand *voorhanden koop-  
 waren in magazijnen* [vor-  
 handən kɔprərən in mɛgəzɛi-  
 nən]  
 stone *steen* [stɛn]
- stop (to) *beletten*, *ophouden*, *ver-  
 hinderen* [bələtən, ɔphʊdnən,  
 vərɦɪndərən]  
 store *magazijn* [magəzɛin]  
 storm *storm*; *aanval* [stɔrm;  
 anval]  
 story *verdieping*; *vertelling* [vər-  
 dɪpɪŋ; vɛrtɛltɪŋ]  
 strange *vreemd*, *wonderlijk*  
 [vrɛmt, vʊndərlək]  
 street *straat* [strat]  
 stretch (to) *out uitstrekken* [æyt-  
 strekən]  
 strict *streng*, *strikt* [strɛŋ, strikt]  
 strike (to) *slaan*, *smeden* [slan,  
 smɛdn]  
 string *koord*, *snoer* [kort, snʊr]  
 strong *sterk* [stɛrk]  
 struggle (to) *strijden*, *worstelen*  
 [streɪdn, vɔrstələn]  
 struggle *strijd*, *worsteling* [streɪt,  
 vɔrstɛlɪŋ]  
 studious *clijtig*, *leergierig* [vleɪ-  
 tɪk, lɛrgɪrɪk]  
 stump *stomp* [stɔmp]  
 subject *onderduan*; *onderwerp*  
 [ʊndərduən, ʊndərɔvɛrp]  
 subjoin (to) *bijvoegen* [bɛɪvʊgən]  
 sublime *verheven* [vərɦevən]  
 subsequently *vervolgens* [vər-  
 vɔlgəns]  
 substantial *zelfstandig* [zɛlf-  
 stəndɪk]  
 succeed (to) *opvolgen*; *gelukken*  
 [ɔpfɔlgən; gəlɪkən]  
 success *geluk*, *voorspoed* [gəlɪk,  
 vɔrspʊt]  
 successfully *voorspoedig* [vor-  
 spudɪk]  
 succession *opvolging* [ɔpfɔlɡɪŋ]  
 successively *achtereenvolgens*  
 [ɑxtərənvɔlgəns]  
 suffer (to) *dulden* [dɪldən]  
 suffered *geleden* [gɛlədn]  
 suffering *lijden* [ləɪdn]  
 sufficient *toereikend* [tʊrɛɪkənt]  
 suit (to) *roegen* [rʊgən], to suit  
 one's turn *gelegen komen* [gɛ-  
 lɛgən kɔmən]  
 sum *som* [sʊm]  
 summer *zomer* [zʊmər]  
 summit *top*, *spits* [tɔp. spɪts]



- sun zon [zʊn]  
 sunset zonsonderyng [zʊnsʊn-  
 deryng]  
 superintendent (to) het toezicht  
 houden oer [het toezicht houdən  
 oer]  
 supper arondeten [arʊndetən]  
 supply (to) with voorzien van  
 [vʊrziŋ van]  
 support ondersteuning [ʊndər-  
 stonɪŋ]  
 support (to) ondersteunen [ʊndər-  
 stonən]  
 suppose (to) veronderstellen [vər-  
 ʊndərstellən]  
 surface oppervlakte [ʊpərflaktə]  
 surprise (to) verrassen [vərassən]  
 survey overzicht [ʊvərziht]  
 survivor langst levende [lʌŋst  
 levəndə]  
 suspected, it is suspected men  
 vermoedt [mən vərmoet]  
 sustain (to) onderhouden [ʊndər-  
 houdən]  
 swallow (to) inswolgen [ɪnswel-  
 ɡən]  
 Sweden Zweden [zvedən]  
 Swedes Zweden  
 sweet zoet [zʊt]  
 swing (to) back terug vliegen  
 [tʊrɪk vliɡən]  
 Swiss Zwiitser(s) [zwiitsər(s)]  
 sword zwaard [zʊart]  
 swordsman schermmeester  
 [sɛrmmestər].  
 Table tafel [tafəl]  
 tail staart [stɑrt]  
 take, to take place plaats grij-  
 pen [plats greipən], to take  
 hold of aanvatten, to take up  
 innemen [ɪnemən]  
 tale vertelling [vɛrtɛlɪŋ]  
 tall groot [ɡrot]  
 tame tam [tam]  
 task taak [tak]  
 taste smaak [smak]  
 tat, tit for tat gelijke munt [ɡə-  
 lcikə mʊnt]  
 taunt hoon, schimp [hon, sɪmp]  
 tax belasting [bəlastɪŋ]  
 tea thee [te]
- tea-pot theepot [tɛp.ɔ]  
 teacher onderwijzer, leeraar [ʊn-  
 dərwiizər, lɛrər]  
 tear traan [traŋ]  
 tender (to) aanbieden [anbidən]  
 term term, termijn [tɛrm, tɛr-  
 meɪn]  
 terms voorwaarden [vʊrwardən]  
 terrible verschrikkelijk [vɛr-  
 skrɪkələk]  
 theatre theater [tɛatɪ]  
 theory theorie [tɛori]  
 thick dik [dɪk]  
 thief dief [dɪf]  
 thing ding [dɪŋ]  
 thorn doorn [dɔrn]  
 threatening dreigend [driɡənt]  
 throne troon [trɔn]  
 tide tij, getij [ɡɛtɛi]  
 tidings tijding [tɛidɪŋ]  
 tile-maker pannenbakker [pa-  
 nən(b)akər]  
 timber timmerhout [tɪmərhuut]  
 time tijd [tɛit]  
 tin tin, blik [tɪn, blɪk]  
 tired vermoeid [vɛrmoet]  
 title titel, eereambt [titl, ɛrəmbt]  
 tobacco tabak [tabak]  
 token teken; aandenken [tekən:  
 andenkən]  
 tone toon, klank [ton, klɪŋk]  
 top top [tɒp], at the very top  
 of its speed in rollen galop  
 [ɪn rɔləŋ galɒp]  
 toss (to) about heen en weer  
 slingeren [hɛn ɔn vɛr slɪŋərən]  
 tower toren [torən]  
 town stad [stat]  
 town-hall stadhuis [stathuys]  
 trace spoor, teken [spor, tekən]  
 trade bedrijf, handel, handwerk  
 [bɛdreɪf, hændəl, hændɛrk]  
 tradition overlevering [ʊvərle-  
 vərɪŋ]  
 traffic verkeer, handelsverkeer  
 [hændəlsvɛrkɛr]  
 transaction onderhandeling [ʊn-  
 dərhandlɪŋ]  
 transfer (to) oerdragen, trans-  
 porteren [ʊvɔrdɾəɡən, trans-  
 portərən]  
 translate (to) vertalen [vɛrtalən]

translation *vertaling* [vɛrtalɪŋ]  
 transmit (to) *overmaken* [ovər-  
 makən]  
 trap *val* [val]  
 traveller *reiziger* [reizəgər]  
 treasure *schat* [sxat]  
 treasurer *schatmeester* [sxat-  
 mestər]  
 tree *boom* [bom]  
 tribunal *rechtbank* [rɛchtbɑŋk]  
 trifle *beuzeling* [boʊzəlɪŋ]  
 trifling *onbeduidend, nietig* [vn-  
 bəʊɔyɔdənt, nɪtəx]  
 trip *uitstapje* [æytsɔpɔjə]  
 troop *troep, bende* [tɹup, bɛndə]  
 Tropics *Keerkringen* [kerkɹɪŋən]  
 trouble *moeite* [muitə]  
 troubled *veelbewogen* [vɛlbəvɔgən]  
 truly *getrouw, oprecht* [gətrəu,  
 ʊpɹɛɪt]  
 trust (to) *vertrouwen* [vɛɪtrəʊvən]  
 truth *waarheid* [vɑrheɪt]  
 turf *zode; turf* [zodə; tɜrf]  
 turn (to) *keeren, wenden* [kɛrən,  
 vɛndən]  
 turn *aanleg* [anlɛx]  
 try (to) *beproeven, probeeren* [bə-  
 pɹu:vən, prəbərən]  
 twilight *schemering* [sɛməɹɪŋ]  
 tyranny *dwingelandy, tirannie*  
 [dɹɪŋələndɛi, tɪrənɪ].

Unalterable *onveranderlijk* [vn-  
 vərɑndərɪlək]  
 unattended *ongeacht* [vngəxt]  
 understand (to) *begrijpen, ver-  
 staan* [bəgrɪpən, vərstɑn]  
 undertaking *onderneming* [vn-  
 dɔrnɛmɪŋ]  
 undeserving *onverdienstelijk* [vn-  
 vɔrdɪnstɛlək]  
 undone *ongedaan* [vngɔdɑn]  
 unequalled *onvergelijkelijk* [vn-  
 vɔrgɛləkɪkələk]  
 unforeseen *onvoorzien* [vnvɔr-  
 zɪn]  
 uninterrupted *onafgebroken* [vn-  
 afzəbrəkən]  
 United States *Vereenigde Staten*  
 [vɔrənəgɔdə stɑtən]  
 universal *algemeen* [algəmən]  
 unparalleled *onvergelijkelijk*

upper *bovenste* [bovənstɔ]  
 urge (to) *aandringen* [andrɪŋən]  
 urgent *dringend* [dɹɪŋənt]  
 useful *nuttig* [nɪtəx]  
 utmost *uiterste* [æytsəstɔ].

Vacant *ledig, openstaande* [ledər,  
 ɔpənstɑndə]  
 valley *dal, vallei* [dal, vəlɛi]  
 valour *dapperheid* [dɑpərheɪt]  
 variety *verscheidenheid* [vər-  
 sɛɪdənhɛɪt]  
 vast *groot, talrijk* [grɔt, tɑlɹɛɪk]  
 vehemence *hevigheid, geweld*  
 [hɛvəcheɪt, gəvɛlt]  
 venerable *eerwaardig* [vɛrvɑrdər]  
 venture (to) *wagen* [vəgən]  
 venture *waagstuk* [vəgstɹɪk], at  
 a venture *op goed geluk* [ʊp  
 gʊt gɔlɪk]  
 vessel *schip, vaartuig* [sɛɪp,  
 vɑrtəyɪx]  
 victim *slachtoffer* [slɑxtɔfər]  
 village *dorp* [dɔrp]  
 violent *hevig* [hɛvɪx]  
 violet *viooltje* [vɪɔltɔjə]  
 violin-player *violspeler* [vɪɔl-  
 spɛlər]  
 virtue *déugd* [dɔxt]  
 visit (to) *bezoeken* [bəzəkən]  
 viz. *namelijk, te weten* [namələk,  
 tə wɛtən]  
 voluminous *dik, uitgebreid* [dɪk,  
 æytrəbreɪt]  
 voyage *zeereis* [zɛrɛɪs].

Wages *loon* [lon]  
 wait (to) *wachten* [vɑxtən]  
 waiter *oppasser, knecht* [ʊpɑsər,  
 knɛɪt]  
 walk *wandeling* [vɑndəlɪŋ], to  
 take a walk *een wandeling*  
 doen [ən vɑndəlɪŋ du:n]  
 wall *muur* [myr]  
 want *gebrek* [gəbrɛk]  
 wanted, I am wanted *men heeft*  
*mij noodig* [mɛn heft mi nɔdəx]  
 war *oorlog* [ɔrlɔx]  
 wash (to) *spoelen, bespoelen* [bə-  
 spulən]  
 waste *verkwisting* [vɛrkvɪstɪŋ]  
 watch (to) *gadeslaan* [gədəslɑn]

water-power *waterkracht* [*vatər-kracht*]  
 wave *golf* [*gɒlf*]  
 way *weg* [*vɛər*], in this way *op deze wijze* [*ɒp dəzə ʔeizə*], to have one's own way *zijn eigen zin volgen* [*zɛn eizən zin vɛl-gən*]  
 wealthy *rijk* [*rɛik*]  
 weapon of defence *verdedigings-wapen* [*vɛrdedigɪŋsɔpən*]  
 weary (to) out *door vermoeienis uitputten* [*dor vɛrmuəiənis ɔɪtpʊtən*]  
 weather *weder, weer* [*vɛdər, vɛr*]  
 wedding *bruiloft* [*brʔɛɪlɒft*]  
 week *week* [*vek*]  
 weigh (to) *wegen* [*vɛgən*]  
 welcome *welkomst* [*vɛlkmɪst*]  
 well *goed, wel* [*gut, vɛl*]  
 well-known *welbekend* [*vɛlbəkɛnt*]  
 west *westen* [*vɛstən*]  
 wet *nat* [*nat*]  
 wheedle (to) *bepraten, pluim-strijken* [*bəprətən, plʔɛɪm-strɪkən*]  
 while *wijl* [*vɛil*], a little while *een poos* [*ən pɒs*]  
 white *wit* [*vit*]  
 whites *blanken* [*blɒkən*]  
 wife *vrouw, echtgenoot* [*vrou, ɛxtʔənɒt*]  
 wild *wild* [*vɪlt*]  
 wilderness *wildernis* [*vɪldərnɪs*]  
 will *wil* [*vɪl*]  
 William *Willem* [*vɪləm*], William the Conqueror *W. de Veroveraar* [*— də vɛrɒvərər*], William of Orange *W. van Oranje* [*— van ɒrənʔə*], William

the Silent W. *de Zwijger* [*— də zveizər*]  
 willingly *gaarne* [*garnə*]  
 window *venster* [*vɛnstər*]  
 windy *winderig* [*vɪndərɪg*]  
 wine trade *wijnhandel* [*vɛin-handəl*]  
 wing *vleugel* [*vlogəl*]  
 wise(ly) *wijs, verstandig* [*vɛis, vɛrstandɪg*]  
 withdraw (to) *terugtrekken* [*tɛr-vɛrtrekən*]  
 wither (to) *verwelken* [*vɛrvɛlkən*]  
 wolf *wolf* [*vʊlf*]  
 wood *bosch; hout* [*bʊs; hɒt*]  
 woodland *boschgrond* [*bʊsgrɒnt*]  
 wool-dealer *wolkooper* [*vʊlkɒpər*]  
 work *werk* [*vɛrk*]  
 workmanship *bekwaamheid* [*bə-kvəməɦɦt*]  
 world *wereld* [*vɛrəlt*]  
 worry (to) *plagen* [*pləgən*]  
 worship (to) *vereeren* [*vɛrɛrən*]  
 worth *waard* [*vɛrt*]  
 worthless *waardeloos* [*vɛrdələs*]  
 worthy, to be worthy of *waard zijn* [*vɛrt zɛɦn*]  
 wretch *ongelukkige* [*ʊngəlɪkɪgə*]  
 writing *geschrift* [*gɛsɛrɪft*]  
 wrong *slecht, verkeerd* [*slɛkt, vɛrkɛrt*].

Yard *el; werf* [*ɛl; vɛrf*]  
 year *jaar* [*jar*]  
 youth *jeugd, jongeling* [*jɒxt, jɒŋəlɪŋ*].

Zeal *ijver* [*ɛɪvər*]  
 zealous *ijverig* [*ɛɪvərɪg*].

## General Index.

Note. The figures refer to the paragraphs.

- A 2, 3, 58  
aa 2, 59  
aai 24, 60  
accent 150  
accentuation 118—138  
accusative 373—377, 511.  
512  
adjectives: accentuation  
123—126, declension 212  
—215, degrees of com-  
parison 216—230, for-  
mation 646—673, govern-  
ment 390—393, place  
386—389, use 378—385,  
with prepositions 579  
adverbs 331, place 595,  
qualifying 332, place  
587; of place 333; of  
quantity, comparison,  
negation 335; of time  
334, place 184, 588, 589;  
formation 691—695 use  
513—542  
ai 14  
alphabet 49  
als (omitted) 601  
apheresis 712  
apocope 714  
apostrophe 151  
article: declension 160—  
166, repetition and place  
355—357, use 349—354  
assimilation 715  
au 20, 61.  
B 25, 26, 62  
bb 26, 63  
brengen (conjugation) 303.  
C 33, 40, 64  
cases: dative and accusa-  
tive 373—377, genitive  
358—372  
cc 40, 65  
ch 35, 40, 45, 55, 66  
circumflex 148  
comma 153  
composition: adjectives  
552—670, nouns 622—  
641, verbs 324—330, 689  
conjugation: strong 170—  
173, 313—323, weak 163,  
171—173, 174—181, 190;  
of auxiliary verbs of  
mood 298, of impersonal  
verbs 235, of mono-  
syllabic verbs 305, of  
impersonal verbs 235  
conjunctions 339, adver-  
bial 341, co-ordinate 340,  
relative 346, subordinate  
343—345, formation 703  
—709, use 543—551  
consonants 54  
construction 183—186, 591  
—604.  
D 31, 32, 67  
dat (omitted) 602—604  
dative 505—510  
dd 32, 68  
declension: adjectives 210  
—213, def. article 162—  
164, indef. article 166,  
nouns 200—209, pro-  
nouns 257—296  
denken (conj.) 303  
diminutives (formation)  
617  
doen conj. 305, use 310  
dunken (conj.) 303  
durren (conj.) 300.  
E 14, 15, 17, 69, e 14  
ee 14, 70  
eu 24, 73  
ei 22, 71  
elision 717  
epenthesis 719  
eu 16, 72  
F 27, 74  
ff 27, 74  
G 36, 45, 46, 75  
gaan (conj.) 305  
ge 36, 76  
genitive 358—372, 503, 504  
geographical names:  
nouns and adjectives 673  
gg 46, 77  
gn 44.  
H 48, 78  
hebben conj. 187, use 311  
hyphen 147.  
I 9, 10, 17, 19, 44, 79  
ie 9, 80, ie 81, ice 82  
ieu 24, 83  
ij 17, 19, 22, 84  
indien (omitted) 601  
infinitive: in English 474  
—479, used as a subst.  
or an adj. 461, 462, with  
te 467—471, with om te  
473, 474, without te 312,  
463—466  
initials, capital initials  
139—145  
interjections 348  
interrogative form 192  
inversion 593—595.  
J 36, 44, 85.  
K 40, 41, 86  
kk 40, 87  
koopen (conj.) 304  
ks 33  
kunnen conj. 208, 368;  
use 455  
kw 88.  
L 37, 89  
laten (use) 460  
leggen (conj.) 301  
lj 44  
ll 37, 44, 90  
loan-words 57, accentua-  
tion 130—136, declension  
211  
M 30, 91  
marks 146  
mm 30, 91  
moeten (conj.) 298, use 307,  
457  
mogen (conj.) 298, use 306,  
456.  
N 33, 92  
: : :  
: : :  
ng 42, 93  
niet (place) 590, 591  
nk 43, 93  
nn 38, 94  
nomiuvative 500, 502  
nouns: declension 200—  
211, gender 184—199,  
formation 605—645  
numerals, cardinal 241—  
245, fractional 253, in-  
definite 254—256, multi-  
plicatives 250, numbers  
of repetition 252 ordinal  
246—249, variative 251,  
formation 690  
O 4, 5, 95  
oa 4  
object (place) 186, 384—  
589, 594, 595

- oe* 7, 8, 96  
*oei* 24, 97  
*oo* 4, 98  
*ooi* 24, 99  
*ou* 7, 8, 21, 100  
*ow* 4  
  
*P* 25, 101  
 paragoge 713  
 participles: place 183, use 480-488  
 particles: accentuation 129; obsolete part 622-632, 656-662  
 parts of speech used substantively 642-645  
*ph* 27, 102  
 plural: of nouns 203-208, of proper nouns and foreign words 209  
*pp* 25, 101  
 prefixes 622-628, 652-662, 674-679; place 592  
 prepositions 167, 336-338; formation 699-702; use: of Dutch prep 552, 573, of Engl. prep. 574-578, Engl. words with prep 580; verbs and adj with prep. 579  
 pronouns: correlative 281, demonstrative 272-280, use 414-417; indefinite 289-296, use 428-433; interrogative 269-271, use 423-427; personal 267-268, use 349-408; possessive 264-268, use 409-413; reciprocal 261; reflexive 260; relative 282-287, use 418-422  
 proper names: accentuation 137, 138; declension 211  
  
 prosthesis 711  
 punctuation 152.  
  
*Qu* 29, 40, 50.  
  
*R* 39, 103  
*rh* 39  
*rr* 39, 103  
*rrh* 39.  
  
*S* 33, 104  
*sch* 33, 85, 56, 105  
 sentences: compound 596-604, principal or simple 582-592  
*sj* 35  
*staan* (conj.) 305  
*ss* 33, 106  
*ssch* 33, 107  
*staan* (conj.) 305  
 subject: place 184, 593-595, 598 599  
 subjunctive mood: use 433-439  
 substantives: accentuation 119-122; see also nouns  
 suffixes 603-621, 629-632, 647-650, 656-662, 680-688  
 syllabification 154-159  
 synalepha 718  
 syncope 716.  
  
*T* 31, 33, 108  
 tenses: use 489-492  
 throat-consonant 47  
 trema 149  
*tt* 31, 109.  
  
*U* 11-13, 18, 110  
*ui* 23, 111  
*uv* 11, 12, 112  
*uy* 23.  
  
*V* 27, 23, 113  
 verbs: accentuation 127, 128; concord 434; conjugation 168-181, 190-193; formation 674-679; government 500-512; passive voice 233, use 442-446; place 185, 593, 598-601; auxiliary; conj. 182-189, use 306-312, 447-460, place 593; causative 687; compound (sep. and insep.) 324-330; frequentative 695; impersonal: conj. 231-237, use 433-439; intensive 686; irregular 168, 297-305, reflexive 239, 240, use 440, 441; strong 313-323; trans. and intr. 435-437; with prep. 579  
 vowels 1, long 52, short 53  
  
*W* 29, 114  
*werken* (conj.) 302  
*weten* (conj.) 298  
*wezen* or *zijn* 182  
*willen* conj. 298; use 309, 458  
*worden* 183.  
  
*X* 33, 50, 113.  
  
*Y* 9, 10, 17, 44, 50, 116.  
  
*Z* 33, 34, 117  
*zeggen* (conj.) 301  
*zien* (conj.) 305  
*zijn* conj. 182, 305; use 311  
*zoeken* (conj.) 304  
*zullen* conj. 188, 298, use 308, 459







CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY  
NEW DELHI

Issue Record

Catalogue No. 439.31 5/Vol

Author— Valette, T.G.G.

Title— Dutch  
Conversation-Grammar

Borrower No.

Date of Issue

Date of Return

*“A book that is shut is but a block”*

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY  
GOVT. OF INDIA  
Department of Archaeology  
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book  
clean and moving.